



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



a39015 01802810 3b

BUHR A



a39015 01802810 3b

DO NOT CIRCULATE



THE  
**ALPHEUS FELCH HISTORICAL LIBRARY**

BEQUEATHED  
TO THE  
**UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN**

BY THE  
**HON. ALPHEUS FELCH.**

1896.

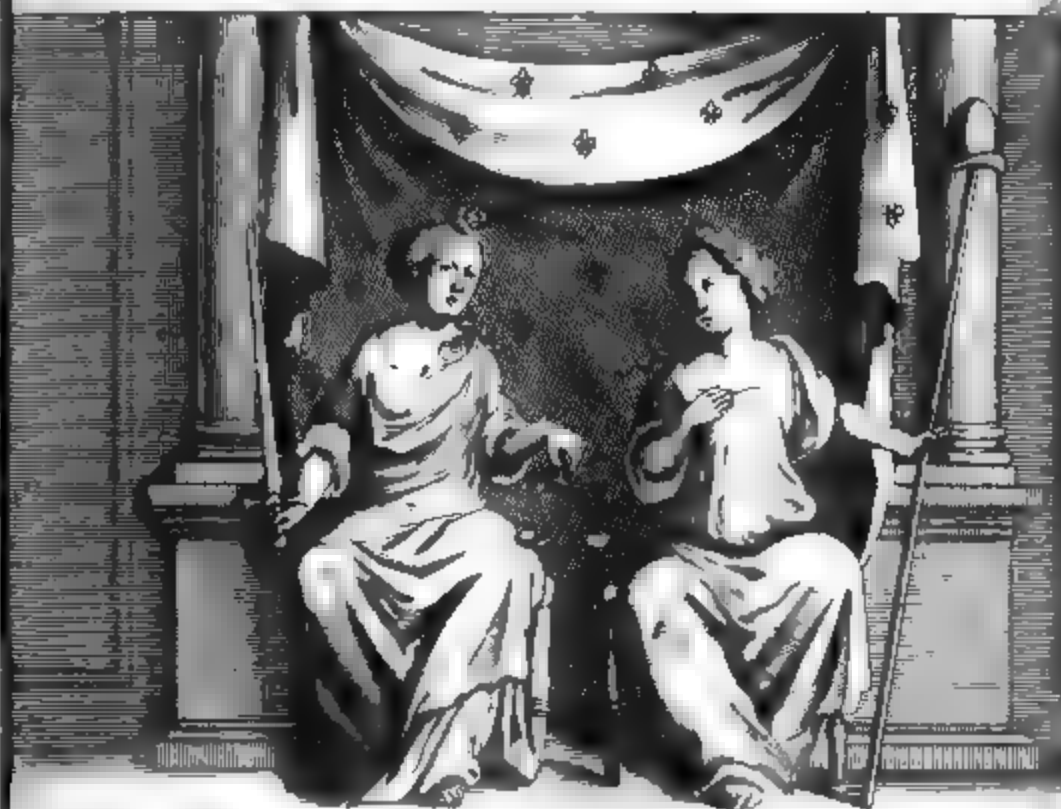












THE  
HISTORY  
OF  
FRANCE

From the Origin of that Nation  
to the Year 1702.

CONTAINING,  
Besides all the Material Transactions in  
PEACE and WAR,  
A Particular Account of the STEPS  
taken by their Late Princes, to subvert  
their CIVIL LIBERTIES, and to ex-  
tirpate the REFORMED RELIGION.  
WITH



100

2 1/2 1/2 1/2 1/2 1/2

1 1/2 1/2 1/2 1/2 1/2

*Compendious History of it from the  
beginning of Things down to the present time;  
properly be esteemed as seasonable, as 'tis  
found useful and instructive. It must  
be a very bold Enterprize, and  
must have a more than ordinary Stock of  
Fidelity and Integrity, that shall write any tolerable  
History of this Country; not only because of the great  
and Multiplicity of intricate Allions  
that have hapned therein, but also  
because of the Partiality of its own Authors.*

see it, they would by no means either know or own it.

If it be expected the Author should in this Place alledge, that he has throughout acted the Part of a good and true Historian; 'tis more than he or any one in that Case dare affirm for themselves, since there are many Passages in History that occur to us, with all the Possibility of Truth and Sincerity imaginable, which yet by the Resolutions of Time, and some accident Turn of Things, come to appear with quite another Face. However he assumes the Freedom to justify his Conduct so far, that he has neither writing nor willingly suffered himself to be defiled with a bare Partiality, but endeavoured all he could to procure the truest Informations, and be furnished with the best Materials for this Undertaking, of which (were the Multitudes that might be produced) we shall exhibit at a few Particulars.

Before you come to the Body of the History, you will find it introduced with a particular Account of the ancient Gauls, in respect to their Origin, Customs, Religion, &c. both before and after their being conquered by the Romans, under the Conduct of Julius Cæsar, whose Commentaries have afforded us some light in this matter; but we are more particularly beholden for this, as well as for the Original Customs, Actions and Religion of the Franks, till their final Settlement in Gaul (since from them named France) and becoming Christians, to Mezeray's excellent History of that Country before the Reign of K. Clovis, whom they repute to be their first Christian King, and the most Orthodox then in the World. Neither may Rotoman's Franco-Gallia be passed over in Silence by us, since we have found him of some use for the better understanding of this Subject.

I must acknowledge the great Assistance I have received from that excellent Historiographer Mezeray in his Chronological History of France, from Pharamond to the end of the Reign of Henry the Fourth, in the

## The Preface.

compiling of this Work. But lest it should be thought that only transcribed or abridged it is True, I am here to assure that I left nothing ripe, which I thought might be proper for my Design, unsurveyed upon this Occasion; more particularly I have consulted Frontinart very much, who has the Reputation of being the best Historian of the Times we write of, which comprehends the Reigns of Philip de Valois, John I. Charles V. and part of Charles VI. with their Contemporary Princes, especially those of England, who make a great Figure at this time in Europe, and set up for no less than Kings of France.

Matthieu's History of the crazy Lewis XI. I have diligently consulted, as well as the Memoirs of the most excellent Philip de Comines, concerning him and his Son Charles VIII. for whose Italian Expeditions we also see the Transactions of Lewis XII. and Francis I. I am I hold a so Guicciardin, but to none much as to the incomparable Thuanus, for his admirable History of France from the Death of Francis I. till near the end of the Reign of Henry IV. The Life of this last Prince has been writ by several Hands, most of which I have inspected; and

## The Preface.

*most solid Judgment, and extraordinary Penetration, and at the same time resided a long while as Ambassador in France from that Serene Republick, had a very near Inspection into things, and relates them many times with so peculiar a Turn and Air (tho unhappily much disguised by an ill Translation) that makes them very agreeable, and hardly to be paralleled in Modern History. I shall say nothing of the great Candor and Sincerity of this Noble Venetian, which are so essential to an Historian, that he must be accounted no other than a Romancer without them.*

*The Minority of the present French King Lewis XIV. and the Regency of his Mother, has been extremely well writ by Rochefocault; and Gualdo Priorato has taken much Pains to write the History of France in Italian, from the Year 1647 to 1654. and the same contains divers uncommon Particularities that are not to be met with any where else. The Life of Cardinal Mazarine, who was Prime Minister, has afforded us some light, as well as other Pieces of those times. But to avoid Partiality as much as in us lay, and the more fully to be informed of the true State of Things, we ever consulted other Contemporary Historians; as Mariana, the History of Flanders, the admirable Life of Frederic William, the Great Marquess of Brandenburg, written by the Learned Puffendorf, and divers others, besides those of our own Nation; that so we might, if possible, by a due and diligent comparing of them together, be able to moderate that Partiality, which is but too frequently to be met with in most of them in favour of their own Cause and Interests, and thereby sift out Truth, and set all things in their proper Light and true Colours.*

*I must own that a late Essay, entituled the History of the Reign of Lewis XIV. till the General Peace concluded at Reswick in 1697 (notwithstanding the manifest Flatteries and unaccountable Turns of the*  
*Author*

... of her Neighbours; has affixed some very  
great Materials. And I must not here forget, that  
some of late Years the Sufferings and Dispersion of  
our Reformed of France into all Quarters of the  
World, have been almost as remarkable as that of the  
Jewish Nation of old; I have continually had Re-  
course to the History of the Edict of Nantes, and  
taken care to insert whatever I thought material rela-  
ting to that distressed People for the better completing  
of this History, which indeed would have been lame  
without it; tho with this Caution, That as there are a  
great many minute things in those Volumes of the  
Edict, that relate to particular Persons, and which  
may be conjectured to have arisen sometimes from pri-  
vate Piques and Animosities, wherein the Court had  
no hand; I have overlooked those as not proper for  
my Design, tho they may fill up their own Places well

When I first entered upon the Writing of this His-  
tory, I designed to have brought it down no farther  
than to the close of the last Century; but several sur-  
prising and remarkable things having since occurred,  
and it having pleased Almighty God to put an end to  
the French War, wherein the whole Course of it had

*end, I have been much beholden to du Haillan's State of the Affairs of France, to Hottoman's Franco-Gallia, to the History of the French Taxes, and to the last Edition of the Present State of France: Since the Publication of which, I have from my own Observations made some Corrections, and added other Improvements to this Work, of which I shall say no more, but desire it may be read with the same innocent and unprejudiced Mind wherewith I have writ it.*

---

*The*

germans, we shall briefly take notice  
were, and what they did before this  
'Tis certain that according to the most  
edg that can be had of them, they  
ed *Celta*; and some will have this Name  
to the Inhabitants of *Britain*, and even  
of *Illyricum* and *Spain*. The Derivation  
and little or no account can be given of  
is at first a Name ascribed to all those  
eral, but afterwards restrained to the  
ned ones, and then to the *Gauls*, and  
the *Britons*, and the *Welsh*.



*Germany.* Tacitus makes the Boundaries of the latter to be the *Rhine* and the *Danube*, all the Northern Ocean, and the Confines of *Sarmatia* and *Dacia*, insomuch that *Denmark*, the great *Peninsula* of *Scandinavia*, *Livonia*, and *Prussia* were comprehended therein: And for the Limits of *Gaul*, 'tis well known they were the two Seas, the *Rhine*, the *Pyrenees*, and the *Alps*.

The antient *Gauls* and *Germans* having no Annals nor written Histories, we have no account of them in the earlier times of the World, but by the Relations given by the *Greeks* and *Romans*, who say very little of them, and especially of the last: And so that Catalogue of two and twenty Kings, which the *Herois* of *Annius Viterbus* presents us with in *Gaul*, before the *Trojan War*, among whom they reckoned *Dis* or *Samothres* to be the first, *Sarron* the fourth that set up Schools there, and from whom the *Sarronides* a kind of *Druids* took their Name; *Bardus* who was the Author or Incourager at least of Musick and Poetry, from whom Poets were called *Bards*; afterwards *Celtas*, *Galates*, *Belgus*, *Lugdus*, *Allobrox*, *Paris*, *Remus* and others, from whom the People and Cities have been denominated - I say, these are things mostly fabulous, and so uncertain that they are indeed hardly worth mentioning. As much must be said of *Francus*, whom the *Minetio* of the same *Annius* supposes to be the Son of *Hector* of *Troy*, and brings him into *Gaul* to be the Son in Law and Successor of King *Remus*; as also of the fourteen or fifteen Kings whom he makes to descend from this Marriage, and to reign after this *Francus* from Father to Son successively.

Authors vary in their Opinion concerning the Word *Gaul*; but to mention the most probable, without taking notice of those who ascribe it to *Galates* the Son of *Hercules*, or to the Queen *Galates*, or to *Gallus* the Son of *Polyphemus* the Giant and the Brother of *Illyrius* and *Britannus*, some deduce it from a *Greek* Word that signifies \* Milk, because of the exceeding Whiteness of the *Gauls*; which does not seem to be very disagreeable to Truth, if we consider that the *Druids* made use of this Language, and that their own Name was *Greek*. It may be derived from a *Hebrew* Word that signifies yellow, because the Hair of the *Gauls*

*Gauls* was usually of that Colour, which may be proved from a great many Passages in ancient Authors. Others have recourse to another *Hebrew* Word that signifies a *Flood*, or *Inundation*, from which according to their Sentiments the Word *Gaul* was deduced, and from thence that of *Gael*. They say that *Noah*, or rather his Son *Gomer*, whom they make to be the Father of the *Gauls*, or *Nash* himself, assumed the Surname in order to preserve the Remembrance of the Deluge. There are those who conjecture with somewhat of Probability, if such may be allowed in matters of this kind, that the *Gauls* were so named from the *Celtick* Word *Walon*, which to this day in the *German* Language signifies *to go*, *pass*, *pass from place*, &c. and that this Name had been imposed upon them, when they first began to go out of their native Country, and extend their Boundaries; for they sent People not only into the neighbouring Countries (as the *Helvetian* did into those Parts that were next them on the other side of the *Rhine*) but also into remoter Parts. Thus *Googri* (who lived remote in *Germany*) the *Turingi*, *Frisii*, *Teutoni*, and *Germans* in *Spain* beyond the *Hibernia*, who mixed with the *Iberi*, and in *Britain* the *Britanni*, *Picti*, and *Alani*, all of them People from that transplanted into those Parts without our know-

*Justin* says, they drew together three hundred thousand Men. The Lot of the Augurs sent *Sigovesus* to the *Hercinian* Forest on the other side of the *Rhine*; but Fortune being more favourable to the other Brother, he passed the *Alps* with his *Gauls*, among whom the *Senones* and *Mancei* were the more considerable and numerous, and seized upon all the Country that lies between the *Alps*, *Appenine* Hills, the River *Tesis*, and that of *Jesi*, which falls into the Sea a little on this side *Ancona*. There they built *Milan*, *Padua*, *Verona*, *Brescia*, *Como*, and several other fine Cities that are in being to this day; and there they grew so formidable, that nothing could have withstood them, had they managed their Affairs well, and been united in a Body under one Commander: Hence it is that in *High Dutch* they do at this day call *Italy Wallichen*, and in *Danish Walland*, that is to say the Country of the *Gauls*.

On the other hand, *Sigovesus* with his Followers, whereof the *Testosagi* and *Boii* were the chief, opened their way through the *Hercinian* Forest by two or three Battels, and made himself Master of divers Countries, particularly of that since called *Bohemia*, tho they were afterwards expelled from thence by *Maroboduus* King of the *Suevi Marcomanni*. But about three hundred years after their Departure from *Gaul*, when their Numbers were extremely multiplied in the Countries they had conquered, they went out from thence in divers great Bodies under their respective Chiefs, the most illustrious of whom were *Belgius* and *Brennus*, who after they had pierced through *Pannonia* and *Illyricum*, and being not able to agree any longer, separated; and *Belgius* fell upon *Macedon*, while *Brennus* invaded *Greece*. The first in a bloody Battel conquered and slew *Ptolomeus Ceraunus* King of *Macedon*, and in another *Softenes* his Successor. *Brennus* succeeded not so well, for after he had been repulsed at the Pass of *Thermophila*, where he lost above a Fourth of his Number, as he went from thence to lay siege to the rich and famous Temple of *Delphos*, he was there cut in pieces with his Army, more by the Indignation of the Gods (as they will have it) who brought Tempests and Thunder upon them, than by the Valour of their Enemies.

Amongst

Amongst the many different Bodies of these *Gauls* that went out to seek their Fortunes, there was one that entered into *Asia*; who having obtained of *Nicomachus* King of *Bithynia*, whom he had invited to give to his Assistance, Part of his Country by way of Reward, there fixed and founded his Kingdom, which in *Greek* was called *Gallia* from the Name of their Nation, and in *Latin* *Gallia Græca*, because of the *Greeks* who were the Inhabitants intermixing with them. So that you find there were now three Nations of the *Gauls*, that of *Asia*, that beyond the *Alps* named by the *Romans* *Cisalpine*, and the great and ancient *Gaul*; without saying any thing of *Celtiberia* beyond the *Pyrenees*, nor of the *Scordisci* in *Pannonia*.

It's not compatible with my Design to give an account of all that the *Gauls* did in the several Countries where they settled; 'tis enough to observe in general, that notwithstanding their Valour and foreign Conquests, they were at length forced to submit to the excellent Discipline and Virtue of the *Romans*. But this was not effected till after so many long and bloody Wars, as *Polybius* observes, as are ever mentioned in History, especially with the *Cisalpine Gauls*, who gave the *Romans* so many hot Alarms, that no Citizen was permitted from lifting himself when they

## The Introduction.

This War was succeeded with fifteen or twenty more, wherein the Gauls having been the first Aggressors, but after divers Losses keeping themselves on the Defensive, they were forced to submit, and accept of Terms of Peace, which they observed for some years till the Arrival of *Hannibal* in Italy, who made them take up Arms again, from which they were so far from making any Advantage, that they completed the Ruin of the Remains of their Forces and Liberty. But *Hannibal* being recalled to Africa, and vanquished, the whole Power of the Romans fell upon them, and brought them to a final Subjection. And having completed this Work, they in process of Time resolved to attack *Grand Gaul* it self, who had sent out Colonies on their side of the Alps, or given the *Cisalpine Gauls* Succour in their Wars against the Romans. And here we are to observe that *Musculis* in Gaul having been possessed and peopled for some Ages before by a Colony of Greeks from *Phoenicia*, a City in *Ionia*, a Province of the lesser Asia; and their having in time grown powerful both by Sea and Land, the neighbouring Greeks grew jealous, and resolved to expel them: And after many, and long Wars between them, wherein the *Musculians* acquired much Glory, they at last found themselves too weak for their Enemies; and therefore imploring the Assistance of the Romans, they laid hold of the Opportunity, and sent several Armies thither one after another, whereof one under *C. Scipio* subdued the *Saly*, and built *Aix*. Having thus got footing, they attacked the *Musculians*, and notwithstanding the Succours sent them by their Allies, vanquished them also: Then extending their Bounds into *Lygonia*, they subdued all these Nations one after another, settled Gallies in the conquered Places, and led a Colony to *Narbonne*.

Indeed their farther Progress into Gaul was a little stopped by the furious Invasion of the *Cimbri* and *Teutones*, a Celtic People; as the French will have it, on the other side of the *Rhine*, who having joined the *Ambones* and *Tigurians*, they won two or three great Victories over the Romans, but at length being totally defeated by *Marinus*, the Romans then wholly subjugated the Gauls in those Countries, which we now

There was no other than a great Body,  
divers States, much of the same nature  
as Germany, without having any Head  
or had their General Assemblies, their  
Reglements, in order to preserve an Union,  
or their common Defence. But this Tie  
was interrupted, and almost entirely dis-  
solved by actual Discords: For as there were divers  
Principles amongst them, but all elective  
almost absolutely upon the People; some  
Princes, whose Subjects called themselves  
vassals, and were governed by a certain number of the bet-

## The Introduction.

Arms of the *Romans*; as well by Stratagem and like Policy, as by Valour. And the only Comfort remain'd to the Vanquished, was to find at last their great Conqueror, after having divested them their Liberty, should also strip *Rome* of hers, that tituled her self the Mistress of the World, and he shewed himself even more unjust towards his Country, than he had been to them.

The *Gauls* having been thus conquered, continued under the *Roman* Empire almost five hundred Years during which time they continually endured the Rule and Dominion of Strangers, often the Calamities of Civil Wars between their Masters, and oftner the Ravages caused by the Incursions of the *Germans*. At first their Yoke was not very heavy: *Cæsar* for they might attempt to shake it off, did not burden them with Taxes, he only imposed a Million of Gold for the whole to pay yearly, which was but the least part of what it cost them before, because of their Intelline Wars and Civil Wars. He left there eight Legions, for the *Belgium*, and as many in the Country of the *Hellens* as believing if he made sure of the *Belgians* who were the most valiant, and the *Hedus* who had most Authority, he could secure all the rest. Besides which he deavoured to keep in the People with his Care the Lords and Nobles, and the most mutinous Romans with Cities. And before he left the Country took particular care to reward those who had been his against the Country, left full Liberty to the rest of the Cities, conferred great Rights and Privileges on others, increased the Territories of some, and diminished at the Expence of others who had no mind to work, or who were already so weak that there was no danger of them; and those who were most brave he carried along with him, and particularly ten thousand Horse, who undoubtedly were the Flower of the Nobility. Moreover, the constant Train of his good Fortune was no small help for to keep them in Subjection, for during the Civil War he had with *Pompey*, *Atranius* his Lieutenant in *Belgium* suppress the *Belgevandus* that had revolted; and he himself in his Return from *Spain*, forced by a memorable Siege the famous City of *Marseilles* to open her Gates to him, and espouse his Cause.

After the Death of *Cæsar*, *Decimus Brutus* who had the Government of *Gallia Comata*, endeavoured to draw them to stand up for the Liberty of *Rome*, but they having not their own shewed little Disposition to *Liberty*; *Anthony* and *Lepidus* having afterwards formed a Triumvirate, *Gaul* fell to the share of *Anthony*, but while he was engaged in the *Parthian War*, *Augustus* took it from him, and they were from then onward governed by him during his Reign for fifty three Years together.

This Prince being well fixed in the Empire, he altered the greatest part of the *Gaulish* Cities to be governed by the *Roman* Laws, leaving the rest to their municipal ones, and a certain Form of general and particular Assemblies, with their publick Revenues; but this was left to their Advantage and Convenience than that of their Sovereigns: Each Province was divided into People, and they into Cantons, and the Cantons into lesser Towns, Castles, Burroughs and Villages. The capital Town or City included the People, that of the first People of a Province was called a *Metropolis*, and every *Metropolis* had a superior Court or Jurisdiction; that of the first Province of the three *Gauls*, viz. *Celtica*, *Aquitania* and *Belgica*, had the Honour of Primacy. The lesser Towns had recourse to the City to the *Metropolis*, and the *Metropolis* to the City to the *Metropolis*, and the *Metropolis* to the City to the *Metropolis*.



were but little fit for War, having no Arms but such as the other furnished them with, and they were forbid to be made any where but in the *Arsenal*.

The *Gauls* in the Reign of *Tiberius* being oppressed with heavy Taxes and Tribute, and withal become burdened with Debts, and the Interest of the same to the Merchants of *Italy*, who were better vers'd in the Mystery of Trade; several Cities rose up in Arms openly, and almost all the rest favoured, or at least wished them good Success. *Lucius Florus* and *Sacrovir* declared themselves the Leaders of these Revolters. *Florus* animated the *Belgians* to it, and particular the People of *Treves*; *Sacrovir* the *Edui*, before whom he set forth in their Assembly, the Continuance of Tribute they paid in a deep Peace, Excess of Usury, the Cruelty and Pride of the Governors; that they had means and opportunity to break their Chain, they did but consider the Discord between the Legion by reason of the Death of *Germanicus*, who had been poisoned by *Piso*, but the *Odium* would fall upon *Tiberius*; that *Gaul* was as flourishing as *Italy* was poor, and the People of *Rome* degenerate; that the *Romans* had no good Soldiers in their Troops but what were raised in *Gaul*, and that in case they ceased only to furnish them with Men and Money, they should quickly find this Tyrannical Power fall of it self. But *Florus* was considerably favoured and assisted, yet he was defeated near *Treves*, and slain; which did not discourage *Sacrovir* and the *Edui*, for there was a great number of young Persons in *Aulun* the capital City of the Country, because it was the chief School, and it were the Academy of *Gallia Celtica*, where Children of all their Nobles were educated. Now *Sacrovir* armed some Troops of this City, and lifted all the young Gentlemen, which were as so many Hostages to retain their Parents in his Interest: So of them he armed in the same manner as the *Roman* Legions, others had only Swords and Iron Staves, and thus having drawn a great Body of Men together, he adventured to give Battel to the *Roman* General *Silius*, by whom he was defeated with the Loss of forty thousand Men.

## The Introduction.

211

is nothing memorable of the *Gauls* in the  
of *Caligula*, but under that of *Claudius* the  
sured the Privilege of being admitted into  
of Senators; they rose up in Arms against  
favour of *Vindex*: They made also divers  
the succeeding Emperors times, yet more  
to the Honour of these *Romans*, and others  
wished to subvert the Empire, than with  
and Prospect of recovering their ancient  
which seemed to be given quite over for lost.  
the Reign of the Emperor *Decius*, about  
251. there were Civil Wars in *Gaul*, the  
whereof, *Eutropius* does not tell us, whether  
the Troops of the Empire, or the oppressed  
The *Alexandrian Chronicle*, which represents  
the other side than the Authors of these times,  
see that this Emperor died as he was going  
War against the *Franks*; and this is the first  
we meet with the Name of that Nation.  
Authors positively affirming that he lost his  
Battle against the *Goths* and *Sythians*; if  
any spark of Truth in this Chronicle, we  
leave the *Franks* to be *Sythians*, and that they  
on that occasion joined to the *Goths*. To this  
we another may be added, that many of their  
Chronicles make the *Franks* to have lived near

and in order to be revenged they went and joined with the *Germans*, who were sworn Enemies to the *Romans*; that having *Genobaud*, *Marcomir* and *Sigebert* for their Leaders, they entered *Thuringia*, where they remained some time, then adventured to pass the *Rhine*; that in going out of *Pannonia*, they left behind them part of their People, who chose one of them to be their King, in honour of whom they assumed the Name of *Turks*. I cannot say all this Narrative is a Fable, tho it looks much like it; but I must observe, that there are but few old Accounts of Franks and Countries, but have some Foundation of Truth in them.

Now to be a little more particular, as to the Opinions entertained concerning the Original of the *Franks* there is no Body I believe will any more entertain that *Cicero* should make mention of the *Franks* in his ninth Epistle to *Atticus*, under the Name of *Franks* than that we should meet with them in the first Book of *Strabo*, where we read that the *Uerenqui* *Gennunians* were Neighbours to the *Vindelician* *Norici*. For as to the first the Criticks have fully shewn it appear, that the Word in that Epistle was not *gones* but *Fringones*, and that it was the proper Name of some *Veterane* Soldiers, and not of any People. And for the other it's manifest enough, that we do not read *Urenqui* or *Brenqui* in *Strabo*, but *Harungi* there being two People of this Name, one at the *Rhine* and the other in *Vindelicia*.

Some there are who have endeavoured to prove that the *Franks* were no other than the *Gauls* themselves returned from the other side of the *Rhine*; and of those, such as *Rodin*, they will have them understood to be those *Gauls* who went into *Germany* before *Julius Caesar's* time. Others alledge that they be those People of *Gaul*, whom *Julius Caesar* and *Augustus* had left free; but who afterwards in order to shun the insupportable Vexations received from the *Romans* and Governors, withdrew to the *Germans* who were generous Assertors of Liberty; and there living as dearly as their Lives their Name of *Free*, is *Frank* in the *High-Dutch*, they had from that time forward very much harassed the Oppressors of the *Co*

try, and made continual Efforts to re-enter it. Another Opinion there is, that these People came out of Germany, now called *Hannover*; and the Germans very much being followed by many from the very beginning of *Tulor*. I know not how they got out; but among Modern Authors, *Lazius* derives them from a Legion of the *Sicambri*, who he says that they had one in *Prætorium*, and that he had seen a Cave there, the Ruins of which were to be seen near *Amst*, and that there was an Inscription found there, that gave Authority hereunto. It is true, that in the fourth Book of *Tacitus's Annals* we find there was in the Reign of *Tiberius* a Legion of *Sicambri* in *Misia*, with *Sabinus Papius* Governor of that Province, that made War upon the *Teutones*, and that undoubtedly they consisted of the *Sicambri* whom *Augustus* had transplanted from *Germany*. But for the Inscription, they who are in the Antique things, suspect it very much to have been made by some Modern Artists.

We meet with two other Parties who are much more numerous than those already mentioned, and who give more Reason on their side. The first are the *Latins*: to have come from *Scythia* and about the *Polar Montes*, while the other insist they were originally *Germans*. To support the

*Scythian* Tradition of *Herodotus*.

one nor the other, and the last of the two is still  
 vogue amongst the *Tartars*, who breed almost all  
 of Birds, and carry them upon their Fists. Lastly  
 Passage in *Sidonius Apollinaris*, which seems to favour  
 this Opinion, is not to be omitted; for that Poet  
 celebrating the Victory which *Minorianus* won from  
*Clodion* in *Arrois*, says that the *Franks* or *French*  
 brated a Wedding there *with Scythian Dances*.

As for those who maintain that *Germany* was  
 Native Country of the *Franks*, they cannot agree  
 among themselves from what part of it they came,  
 some alledg they were originally of the lower part  
*Germany*, while others endeavour to shew they were  
 Strangers, and that they came originally from the  
 other side of the *Elbe* as well as the *Saxons*, who  
 in the Country of *Holstein*, and the higher part  
 the Dutchy of *Sleswick*. Those Authors say, that  
*Franks* were Neighbours to the *Saxons*, and in order  
 to prove the same, alledg these two People began  
 the same time to shew themselves on the South side  
 the *Elbe*; but this they are so far from being able  
 to prove, that on the contrary the *Saxons* were not  
 in a long time after, tho their Name be really  
 antient, and is to be found in *Ptolomy*. But to en-  
 tire it farther, they insist that Piracy was common to  
 the Nations: Moreover that in a Panegyrick on  
*Constantine*, it is particularly exprest, that that Em-  
 peror rooted out the *Franks*, not only from the Places  
 they had invaded, but even the last Ravages of  
 barbarity; and lastly, that in *Claudian* we read,  
*Stilico* reduced them in such a manner, that the King  
 of the *Gauls* might pass the *Elbe*, and go and  
 freely on the Mountains of the *Franks*.

————— *Medium ingressa per Albin,*  
*Gallica Francorum Montes Armenta pererrant*

But if you should read *Amnem* or *Alveum*, for  
 as some Criticks do, the Argument is van-  
 However because the Author says of this. in c  
 in all these Countries find any People  
 comes near that of the *Franks*; they conclude  
 they came out of the Isles of *Denn*

well as those upon the Coast of *Friesland* had been dis-joined from the Continent by that Inundation of the Sea, which drove the *Cimbri* several Ages before out of their Country. Some there are who would search for their Original as far as *Scandinavia*, that great Peninsula that contains the Kingdoms of *Norway* and *Sweden*, which has been termed the Hive of Mankind; and from whence in effect came several Bodies of *Normans*, and some will have the *Goths*, *Huns*, and *Vandals* to proceed from this Country also.

Some there are who think it more probable to affirm they were Natives of the lower *Germany*, where they were first found, and that they were not a single People, but a Confederacy of divers People; and that under the Name of *Franks*, were comprehended the *Ausuarii*, *Sali*, *Bructeri*, *Camavi*, *Catti*, *Canci*, or *Cayci*, *Sicambri*, *Frisii*, and many others; all which they say united and engaged to stand by one another, either in resisting the *Romans*, who by their Presents and Bribes had much embarrassed the *German Liberty*, or in opposing the *Allemaings*, who being extremely fierce and potent, at the same time threatened the lower *Germany*, as well as the Provinces of the *Empire*. But there is very little Probability that the *Franks* should be engaged in such a Confederacy, because it appears in all the Authors of those times, to have been an entire Nation; and it was so far from being a Confederacy between the People aforementioned, that on the contrary, they acted so little in concert, that they rarely set great Armies on Foot, but usually made their Incursions with small Bodies only, and part of them many times were in the *Roman Pay*, and made War upon their Countrymen.

But if notwithstanding these Objections, we still may believe it a Confederacy; we conjecture that it was formed only after the Incursions made by the *German*, mentioned first in History in the Reign of *Caracalla*, as much as if any such had been made before; for it is probable they would not have suffered themselves to take away the Territories of the *Allemaings*, who were on the French side of the *Main*, and very well situated. Every one may, however, form his own Opinion he please, and seek for Authorities

rities to maintain it ; but 'tis certain that the antient *Franks* had very near the same Bounds, as the Country lying between the *Ocean*, the *Rhine*, *Main*, and *Elbe* : That most of the Historians of that Age call it *Germany*, by reason of which some Authors have styled the *French* absolutely *Germans* ; but afterwards their Limits were straitned by the *Saxons* passing on this side the *Rhine*, where they became almost as Potent as the other ; insomuch that *St. Jerom* was not mistaken, when he placed the *French* Nation between the *Saxons* and the *Germans*, and said, that they were not so large as powerful. As to the Name of *Frank*, whether they assumed the same to themselves, or it was conferred upon them by others, 'tis derived according to the most received Opinion from a *Dutch* Word, that signifies *Free*, and indicates the Love they had of Liberty. Some others derive it from two other Words in that Language, which being joined together, signify as much as *Free Heroes*. The last have taken notice, from the 7th Book of *Procopius's* History, that the *Goths* having on a time signified their Valour by some Gallant Military Achievement gave to their Chiefs the Glorious Titles of *Heroes* : that in short, if there be any thing that can elevate Men above a Human State, it's Military Virtue employed for the Service of ones Country. I know there are some others who deduce the Word *Frank* from a Greek One, that signifies *very much environed*, because they dwelt in a Country that was naturally strong and inaccessible ; and that others seek after the Etymology of it in a Word that signifies *Fierce*, not in the *Attick* or *Greek* Tongue, as some read it in *Sigebert* but in the *Antique* or *Articque*, that is Northern Language, or rather the *Attuatique*, which was that the Country of *T*

But to dwell on  
Word *Frank* ;  
troublesom to *Gaul*,  
repulsed by *Galer*

Irruption even into *Spain*,  
self Emperor in *Britain* ;  
Nations out of a desire of Plunder  
allowed some Troops of the *Fr*

Etymology of the  
word became n

h

a

...time expelled out of their  
were fixed on the Continues of the *Sixons*,  
that part of his Army should go down  
he had fine Christian Bands among his  
most considerable Commanders of which  
*Vittor*, *Cassius*, and *Proterius*. The Em-  
perour at this time to oblige the Army  
to Idols, as he had done upon his first En-  
counter, and his Guards being informed that  
*Proterius* were of the *Thracian* Legion, they  
to force them to it; but the other persisting  
in Christian Faith, they cut off their Heads  
the *Persecutors* and *News* of this *Ma-*



About this time *Galerius* and *Constantius* were *Cæsars*, and the Administration of *Gaul* being assigned to the latter, he passed over thither from *Brit* and having taken *Bologn*, he proceeded to chastise those *German* Nations that had assisted *Carausius* Rebellion. And first of all he expelled the *xx* from the Isles of the *Rhine* and *Scheld*, and notwithstanding their Ambuscades, Marshes and Woods, penetrated into their Country, killed a vast Number of them, put others to flight, and taking away a great many of them with their Wives and Children transplanted them into the Country of the *Nervi* and *Treves*, that so they might be forced to cultivate those Lands which their Ravages had made waste. In the mean time *Carausius* having been slain in Britain by his Companion *Alectus*, who set up the Tyranny there, *Maximian* sent *Asclepiodotus* against him; there were a great many Bands of the *Franks* in *Alectus* his Army, who being defeated and his Battel by his Adversary, the *Franks* thereupon after great Slaughter made of them fled to *London*; thinking to escape from thence by the *Thames* to the Continent, but being intercepted by some Ships that came opportunely thither from *Constantius*, they were much slaughtered a second time, and some of the *Constantius* upon his Arrival transplanted into the Territories of *Amiens* and *Beauvais*, while he planted others in the Country of *Langres* and *Autun*. These People thus transplanted by him were obliged to furnish a certain Number of Recruits; and some have been of opinion that these Soldiers were called *Lati* which in High *Dutch* signified a Servant. When *Constantine* became Emperor, he passing from *Britain* to *Gaul*, the *Germans* were no sooner informed of his Arrival, but they came at the Head of their Troops to oppose him; but he finding the *Franks* so laden with Booty, and not dreaming of his approach, fell upon them, and took a great many of them Prisoners, of which Number were their Kings *Alfarius* and *Ragaisus*, whom he afterwards exposed to the wild Beasts at the Amphitheatre of *Treves*.

Now the Emperor *Constantine* in process of Time leaving the Empire between his three Sons *Constantine*, *Constantius*, and *Constans*; and the first having been slain by the last in *Gaul*, and Discord hereupon increasing between the two surviving Brothers, the *Franks* failed not to take advantage of it. They passed the *Rhine*, and had divers Rencounters with *Constans*, who every where made head against them: However he could not hinder them to winter-quarter in *Gaul*, but his Money effected that which his Sword could not, for he bribed them with it to repass the *Rhine*, and withal to become his Friends and Confederates; which they the more readily agreed to, out of a Jealousy they had of the Neighbourhood of the *Germans*, who made it their business to divide them among themselves. It was indeed a great Master-piece of State to bring this Nation, says *Libanius* the Panegyrist, no longer to breath Fire and Blood, who by their Irruptions continually fatigued the Emperors, and could never be diverted either by Arms or Negotiations; who reputed a Cessation of War to be a kind of Poverty, and of Incursions to be a manifest Detriment to them, but now preferred an unaccustomed Repose before the sweet Liberty of *Masruces*. However the same Author will have their Compliance to have proceeded in the main out of fear of *Constans*; who also perishing by the Sword, and *Constantius* being now become sole Emperor, the *Franks* besieged and took *Cologne*; against whom *Julian* was sent into *Gaul*, who having recovered that City again out of their hands, he returned to winter at *Sens*, and was there in his turn besieged by the *Franks*, but made such a gallant Defence, that they were forced to quit the Place: And after having performed many other successful Expeditions against them and the *Germans*, he returned to *Paris*, and there applied himself to get Store of Provision together, that he might dislodge the *Franks* out of the Isles of *Coxandria* or *Zealand*, and some others which they had upon the Banks of the *Rhine* and *Waal*, the Navigation of which Rivers were interrupted by them; and soon after he brought the *Saxons* under Subjection; while the *Franks* being now suddenly invaded by the *Saxons* were chased out of the Isle of *Borow*.

We meet with little that is particularly remarkable concerning the *Franks* in the succeeding Reigns of *Valentinian*, *Valens*, *Gratian*, and *Valentinian II.* during the Empire of which last Prince, we find that as soon as *Maximus* the Tyrant was gone far from the *Rhine*, the *Franks* being headed by their Princes *Genobaud*, *Marcomir*, and *Sumnon*, resumed their Arms, and forcing the Frontiers ravaged the best Parts of *Belgium*; but they were defeated in the Forest of *Charbonnerie* by *Quintinus*: Yet having engaged himself too in marshy grounds, he was in his turn defeated them also. If we proceed to the Reigns of *Th* *us I.* *Arcadius* and *Honorius*, then to *Theodosius* Younger, we find little of them, only that the famous *Stilico* brought the *Franks* to submit to *Honorius*, and punished *Marcomir* and *Sumnon* two of their Kings instead of whom he constituted others. After which the *Britons* having set up one *Constantine* for Emperor, and he going over into *Gaul*, the *Franks* took his part with no good Success.

*Gaul* was now reduced to a very miserable State, thro Famine, the Incurſions of *Barbarians*, and otherwise. And indeed the fatal Ruin of the Western *Roman* Empire came on apace; and divers Provinces began to shake off the Yoke of the *Roman* Government, in the very Reigns of *Honorius* and *Theodosius II.* and it was about the year 409. that all *Armorica*, as *Zozimus* has it, and some other Provinces of *Gaul*, imitated those of *Britain* in shaking off the Yoke, and setting themselves at Liberty; having expelled the *Roman* Governors, and their Garisons without doubt also, in order to set up a kind of particular Republick. They are the very Words of that Author, whereby it appears this Defection was begun in *Armorica*, and thence spread it self through all *Gaul*; and that all the Cities and Provinces stood up for Liberty, but those Places which *Constantine* and the *Barbarians* held still in Fetters. As to the Word *Armorick*, it may for the better Illustration of the Country and Rise of this Defection, merit a more particular *Examen* in this place. It's well known that in the old *Gaulish* Tongue it signified *Maritime*, and that according to the Difference of Times and Authors, it comprehended more

or less of the Country. *Cæsar* in his *Commentaries* says, the *Gauls* generally called those Cities that bordered upon the Ocean by that Name, inasmuch that it was common to all of them from *Bayonne* to the Point of lower *Bretagne*, and from thence to the Mouth of the *Rhine*. *Hertius* in his 2d Book calls by this Name all the Cities that are upon the Coast in the farthest part of *Gaul*, that is, I suppose in the lower *Normandy* and *Bretagne*. This last Province has more particularly been named *Armorica*, because 'tis situate almost entirely upon the Sea. *Pliny* assures us that *Aquitain* was likewise so called; and perhaps the *Romans* apprehending the Signification of the Word, rendred it into *Latin*, and made *Aquitania* of it. Now if the *Notitia Imperii* extends the *Tractus Armoricanus* thro the first and second *Aquitain*, *Senonica*, and the second and third *Lyonnais*, 'tis not that it would have to us understand, that all these five Provinces were Maritime, for *Senonica* does not at all come near the Sea, but this long Chain of *Castells* was so called, because they consisted of Troops that had been raised in *Armorica*. However 'tis probable that the *Secunda Belgica* and *Germania Secunda* that bordered upon the Ocean, were also comprehended under the Name of *Armorica*, and 'tis the more to be believed, for otherwise the *Franks*, according to *Zozimus*, could not have joined with the *Armoricans* but with a great deal of difficulty, and by crossing those two great Provinces.

But *Procopius* in his sixth Book of the *Gothick War*, calls the People who formed this League *Arboriques*; these being his Words: "About the Place where the *Rhine* falls into the Ocean, there are a great many Marishes, near which those *Germans* formerly dwelt, whom we now call *Franks*, and who at first were a People of no great Reputation. Near unto them were the *Arboricks*, who before were subject to the *Romans* as well as the rest of *Gaul* and *Spain*; to the East of the *Arboriques* are the *Poringes*, who are originally *Barbarians*, but who formerly settled there by the leave of *Augustus*. Next to the *Poringes*, towards the South, are the *Burgundians*, then the *Sueves* and *Almans*. But to see more particularly what he says of the situation of the *Arboriques*,  
and

and their making a League with the *Franks*, he adds  
 " The *Aborigines* then carried Arms for the *Romans*  
 " the *Aborigines* had a mind to conquer them, as being  
 " their Neighbours, and because they had all of a  
 " sudden charged them with *Manus* (which  
 " suppose was their Government) continually ravaged  
 " their Territories, and attacked them with a great  
 " Force: But the *Aborigines* being Courageous, and  
 " being all well inclined towards the *Romans*, I owed  
 " themselves in this War to be valiant Men, insomuch  
 " much that the *Franks* being not able to force them,  
 " required they should confederate, and intermarry  
 " with them, to which the other readily consented  
 " inasmuch as these two Nations were Christians.  
 " Now if *Procyon* was mistaken, it must be chiefly in  
 " this last Sentence, since the *Aborigines* had not yet em-  
 " braced Christianity, before they being incorporated  
 " together, made a very considerable Power. But to  
 " proceed with our Author: " In the meantime, says he,  
 " the other *Roman* Soldiers, who were in Garrison in  
 " the latter part of Gaul, could neither return home  
 " thence into Italy, nor give themselves up to their  
 " Enemies the *Aborigines* (they meant the *Franks*):  
 " they marched towards the Enemy, or the *Franks*  
 " and *Aborigines*, and also to the Place they held  
 " from them. but the *Aborigines* retained the Manners  
 " of their Country, and transmitted the same to their  
 " Posterity, insomuch that at this time (which was  
 " about a hundred and fifty Years after) they were  
 " not ashamed to use their ancient Habits; for  
 " when they went to War (in the Service of the  
 " *French*, to whom they were subject in the time of  
 " this Author) it was with the same Number of Men  
 " that they were wont to supply the *Romans* with:  
 " they made use of the Laws of their Country, and  
 " followed the manner of the *Romans* in their Hunt-  
 " ing, and every thing else.

These Words are full of Obscurities; and to il-  
 lustrate the same we are to take notice, that *Hind-  
 linus* a Modern Author, in his Treatise of the *Saxons*  
 Law, would shew that these *Aborigines* were the  
 People of *Britann*, they being so named as a People  
 that dwelt among Trees; seeing there is much Wood  
 there.

the People as the *Riparoles* or *Ripuarii*,  
their own Laws, and for a long time re-  
tained the Manners and Customs of the *Romans*.  
It must be confest, that the second Re-  
vival of the *Armorians*, which hapned some Years  
after, cannot be attributed to these People, but  
to those between the *Loire* and the *Seine*.  
These, the *Franks* and *Armorians* being  
united together, found themselves in a Con-  
flict with the Fury of the *Barbarians*; the *Franks*,  
being roughly handled by the *Vandals*, when  
they at last resumed Courage, and

upon him, which cost him his Life five Years after  
 when the *Romans* put him to Death as a rebellious  
 Iect. However it were, 'tis certain the foresaid League  
 between the *Armorians* and *Frank* remained so  
 and advantageous, that it proved in a great measure  
 the Ruin of the *Roman* Empire in those Parts.  
*Treves* being once more fallen into their Hands  
 certain, tho we cannot tell whether it hapned in  
 War with the *Romans* or no, that they demolish'd  
 all the strong Places which the Empire held upon  
*Rhine*, from *Cologne* even to the Sea; and among  
 others they ruined *Cologne*, *Santen*, *Ausburg*, and  
*Isenel* near *Leyden*, which place is still called *Romb*  
 i.e. the Bourg of the *Romans*, the Fortress of *Ca-*  
*teopzic*, and divers others: and whether they fixed them-  
 selves by way of Accommodation with the *Romans*, or  
 otherwise, in the Countries they possess'd, they were  
 about 415. (*Honorius* and *Theodosius II.* being still  
 perors) settled in *Germania Secunda*; and they kept  
 twelve years after, till the year 428. since 'tis record-  
 ed in the Chronicle of *Prosser*, that *Attilus* drove  
 them out from thence that very year. In short, 'tis impos-  
 sible to give an exact account of the Actions of these  
 like People in these times, neither can we precisely  
 assign the Limits of the Countries they master'd  
 settled in, but 'tis highly probable, that they took  
 that Extent of Ground which lies between the *Rhine*  
*Alze*, and *Alofelle*, all the Bishopricks of *Cologne*,  
*Liege*, and even some part of *Treves*; from whence  
 in process of Time they spread themselves over  
*Gaul*, since from them called *France*, of which I  
 particularly in the Body of the History, and  
 which we shall make no farther Excursion, but before  
 we close this Introduction, observe a few things  
 concerning the Religion of the antient *Gauls* and *Frisians*  
 which we have not yet touch'd upon.

When the *Romans* made a Conquest of the Pro-  
 ces of the *Gauls*, they were like the rest of  
 the World involved in the Abyss of Idolatry; and among  
 other false Deities, the *Gauls* worshipp'd *Tentamus*  
*Mercury*, who it's likely was the same as the *Tar-*  
*Taricon* of the *Germanis*; *Diu*, from whom they  
 believ'd themselves to be descended, but perhaps he was

common Ennoble as Monks do. They  
Worship of God to all the *Gauls*, and  
nobles Children in Theology, Astrono-  
my, natural Magick. They consisted  
King, but taught them by Word of  
their Schools in Caves and Forests;  
aided Silence and Secresy to them, and  
taught to them the Belief of the Immor-  
tal, and their Transmigration into other  
Doctrines, and their using of *Greek* Char-  
acters, cause to conjecture that they had it  
of *Pythagoras*, who hapned



and had the Power of Excommunication; they were entirely exempted from all Charges and Services, and neither obliged to carry Arms, nor to pay any Tax; they chose a Head from out of their own Number, or, as I may say, a Sovereign Pontiff, who was continued so all his Life time; they attributed a wonderful Virtue to the *Maftrae*, which they feared for and gathered with many Ceremonies, as also *peas Eggs*, which they heaped together at certain times of the Moon. They met every year in the County of *Charres*, and all those who had Controversies to decide went thither; they themselves did not kill Victims, but left that to the Sacrificers, who depended upon their Orders.

We also meet with their Women *Druids*; and *ponius Mela* observes, that there were certain Priestesses in the Isle of *Senæ*, which was upon the Coast of *Cornwallia* at the farther part of Lower Britain, who attended the Oracle of a Deity whom he does not name; they were nine in all, who continued all their Lives Virgins. The Gauls called them the *Senæ*, either from the Island where they dwelt, or from the Hebrew *Shen*, which signifies a Priestess. It was believed they were endued with a peculiar Spirit, that they could by the Power of their Charms stir up the Winds, transform themselves into any sort of Animals they pleased, cure otherwise incurable diseases, penetrate into Futurity, and prophesy; that they made Responses to none but Sailors; only to such as went on purpose to that Island to consult with them.

The Gauls had also Deities whom they called *Magi*; they were looked upon to be very well skilled in the Art of foretelling what was to come, by inspecting the Entrails of Victims, particularly human ones; when they were about to consult the Gods upon an important Affair, they sacrificed a Man either to *Janes*, *Hesus*, or *Tarans*, and made their Predictions according to the manner whereby the Victim when slain, to the way the Blood ran, and Disposition of the Members. It's thought they were these *Magi* and not the *Druids* that brought in this most barbarous and superstitious Sacrifice; and that

arts of People intermixing in time, the *Druids* applied themselves thereto also. We read in *Suetonius*, that the Emperor *Claudius* forbade the *Gauls* to human Sacrifices, *Augustus* having done so before the *Romans*. *Pliny* goes farther, and affirms that they put down the *Druids*; but if he made any exception for that purpose, it's to be believed it was not noted, since the same Author speaks of them else-where as a People yet in being. We find in *Tacitus* they took upon them to prognosticate things during the War of *Civilis*; and in *Vespasian*, that a *Druid* predicted to *Dioclesian* that he should be Emperor.

We may also enumerate among the Persons of a learned Character, the Poets or Bards, who were much valued amongst the *Gauls*, as well as *Grecians*; they sung in Verse the greatest Secrets of the Divine Science, the Praises of the Gods, and the Glorious Feats of their Heroes.

They served as Trumpeters to animate those who went to Battel, by reciting the famed Actions of their Predecessors, and consigning to Posterity those of their own times by their Poems; nevertheless they did not commit them to Writing, only they learnt them by heart, and left them to descend by Tradition to those that came after.

It would be too tedious for me to enter upon a Description of the manner of receiving and propagating the Christian Religion among the *Gauls*; it's sufficient to say that the Rays of the glorious Gospel were diffused very early in this Country, and that the *Gauls* owing to St. *Epiphanius* were enlightened therewith by the Presence and Preaching of St. *Luke* the Evangelist, according to St. *Isidorus*, by those of the Apostle *Philip*. They said *Epiphanius* and *Theodoret* say the same thing of *Crescent*, the Disciple of St. *Paul*, whose use they believed, as well as *Eusebius*, that the Apostle had *Galatia*, which is in the second Epistle to *Timotheus* signified *Gaul*. The Church of *Vienne* own him for their first Pastor, and some are of Opinion that St. *Luke* himself preached the Faith in this Country as he went to *Spain*; for which we have the Authority of *Theodoretus*, *Athanasius*, *Epiphanius*, *Ierom* and *Chrysostom*. But however this were in reality, the Christian Religion was planted and propagated here, as in the other

other Provinces of the *Roman* Empire, by the faithful preaching of it, and the frequent Martyrdom of Professors, wherein we cannot be particular.

Wherefore it remaining only now, that we shew a little account for the Religion of the *Franks* before they became Christians, we are here to observe that they like other Heathen Nations had Multiplicity of Gods; but we do not find that they erected Temples for them, whether it were that being all a wandering People, and traversing from one Country to another, they would not by such Edifices be tied to one Place, or that they believed the Divinity to be Infinite, Sovereign and Free, and so not to be confined within the Compass of a Place. But they fancied there was something Divine in the Obscurity of thick Forests, in the frightful Horrour of Subterranean Caves, in the Depth of the most hidden Pits, in the height of tall Trees and sharp Rocks, the Birds whose Flights approached the Heavens, the Serpents that shunned the Sight of Men, and hid themselves under the Earth. They made their Places of Worship in Copses and Bushes, at the Foot of Rocks, upon the Brink of a Fountain or a Pool. It is thought that such great Lovers of Falconry, as they were observed to be, they were easily induced to believe, that there was something of Divinity in those Birds that were proper for it; for since the Corruption of Human Nature by Original Sin, Men have been apt to acknowledge no Deity more sensible than their own Fancy and Pleasure.

*Sua cuiq; Deus sit dira Cupido.*

We have no Authority that they had any other than those things, tho' *Chiflet* supposes, that the Head which was found in *Childeric's* Tomb, was the King's Idol: That which was the more to be observed in their Impiety, was that they offered no Human sacrifices, as the *Saxons* and other Northern Nations did, but only brute Animals. We understand some Passages in the *Salick Law* that they sacrificed Pigs, of which there was a great Number in *Francia*; and we find by other antient Monuments

they consecrated their Meats and Drinks to their Gods. We read in the Life of *St. Gal*, that *Thierry I.* ruined a Temple near *Colagn*, that was very famous for the pretended Cure of several Diseases, by the Priests cutting upon the Wood the Shape of the sick Person, which was a kind of a *Talisman*. It's asserted in Honour of the *Franks*, that they never had that cruel Aversion to Christianity, that other Barbarians shewed, by doing Violence to their Religion, ruining their Churches, or persecuting their Ministers. They were so far from using them after that manner, that King *Childeric* is said to have a very great esteem of *St. Genevieve*. Whether *Clovis* was the first Christian King of the *Franks* (as the succeeding History informs us) cannot positively be affirmed, since we find mention made of *Carac* and his Sons being of that Faith, and that they became Monks: However 'tis certain, that divers of that Nation embraced Christianity before *Clovis*, the Names of any of whom we shall not here particularize; and therefore conclude with one Observation only, It was the misfortune of the *Franks*, as well as of the *Saxons* here in *Britain*, to become Christians when the Church was declining apace from the antient Purity of Doctrine and Discipline, into that fatal Antichristianism that has since overspread the Face of *Europe*, by reason whereof they could not have a due Relish and just Ideas of the true Faith, till the Glorious Light of the Reformation brake out amongst them; of which, as well as of the other matters belonging to the History of this Country, in due Time and Place.

# The Contents of the First VOLUME.

## BOOK I.

CHAP. 1.	<i>The Reign of Pharamond.</i>	Pag. 1.
2.	<i>The Reign of Clodion the Hairy.</i>	2.
3.	<i>The Reign of Meroveus.</i>	3.
4.	<i>The Reign of Childerick.</i>	4.
5.	<i>The Reign of Clovis, or Lewis.</i>	1.
6.	<i>The Reign of Childebert.</i>	
7.	<i>The Reign of Clotair I.</i>	14.
8.	<i>The Reign of Chetebert.</i>	15.

## BOOK II.

CHAP. 1.	<i>The Reign of Chilperic.</i>	17.
2.	<i>The Reign of Clotair II.</i>	22.
3.	<i>The Reign of Dagobert I.</i>	31.
4.	<i>The Reign of Clovis II.</i>	34.
5.	<i>The Reign of Clotair III.</i>	3.
6.	<i>The Reign of Childeric II.</i>	3.
7.	<i>The Reign of Thierry I.</i>	42.
8.	<i>The Reign of Clovis III.</i>	45.

## BOOK III.

CHAP. 1.	<i>The Reign of Childebert II.</i>	47.
2.	<i>The Reign of Dagobert II.</i>	48.
3.	<i>The Reign of Chilperic II.</i>	50.
4.	<i>The Reign of Thierry II.</i>	52.
5.	<i>The Reign of Childeric III.</i>	57.
6.	<i>The Reign of Pepin the Little.</i>	59.
7.	<i>The Reign of Charlemain, or Charles I.</i>	63.
8.	<i>The Reign of Lewis I. the Debonnaire.</i>	79.

## BOOK IV.

CHAP. 1.	<i>The Reign of Charles II. surnamed the Bald.</i>	88.
2.	<i>The Reign of Lewis II. the Stammerer.</i>	101.
3.	<i>The Reign of Lewis III.</i>	102.
4.	<i>The Reign of Charles III. the Fat.</i>	105.
5.	<i>The</i>	

## The Contents.

- |    |                                      |      |
|----|--------------------------------------|------|
| 3. | The Reign of Eudes                   | 107. |
| 6. | The Reign of Charles IV. the Simple. | 108. |
| 7. | The Reign of Rodolph.                | 112. |
| 8. | The Reign of Lewis IV. Transmarine.  | 115. |

## BOOK V.

- |    |                                      |      |
|----|--------------------------------------|------|
| 1. | The Reign of Lothair.                | 121. |
| 2. | The Reign of Lewis II. the Starkful. | 125. |
| 3. | The Reign of Hugh Capet.             | 127. |
| 4. | The Reign of Robert.                 | 131. |
| 5. | The Reign of Henry I.                | 136. |
| 6. | The Reign of Philip I.               | 140. |
| 7. | The Reign of Lewis VI. the Gross.    | 146. |
| 8. | The Reign of Lewis VII. the Young.   | 152. |

## BOOK VI.

- |    |  |      |
|----|--|------|
| 1. | The Reign of Philip II. the Conqueror. | 161. |
| 2. | The Reign of Lewis VIII.               | 170. |
| 3. | The Reign of Saint Lewis.              | 179. |
| 4. | The Reign of Philip III. the Hardy.    | 192. |
| 5. | The Reign of Philip IV. the Fair.      | 200. |
| 6. | The Reign of Lewis X. named Hutin.     | 217. |
| 7. | The Reign of Philip V. the Long.       | 220. |
| 8. | The Reign of Charles IV. the Fair.     | 224. |

# The Contents of the Second V O L U M

## B O O K IX.

C	HAP. 1. <i>The Reign of Henry III.</i>	1
	2. <i>The Reign of Henry IV.</i>	63
	3. <i>The Reign of Lewis XIII.</i>	71
	4. <i>The Reign of Lewis XIV.</i>	{

### The Antient and Present State of *France.*

C	HAP. 1. <i>Of the King and Royal Family.</i>	120
	2. <i>Of the Princes of the Blood, n Children of France, and Foreign Pr settled in that Kingdom.</i>	12
	3. <i>Of the Dukes and Peers of France.</i>	120
	4. <i>Of the Origin of the antient Peers France, and their Functions at t King's Coronation.</i>	121
	5. <i>Of the French King's several Orders Knighthood.</i>	121
	6. <i>Of the Constable, Mareschals, Colon General of France, Master of the Or nance, Admiral, &amp;c.</i>	121
	7. <i>Of the Government of the Provinces France.</i>	122
	8. <i>Of the Archbishopricks, Bishopricks, &amp; of France.</i>	122
	9. <i>Of the States of France, as also of t Justice and Institution of their Parli ments.</i>	123
	10. <i>Of the Chamber of Accounts at Par</i>	123
	11. <i>Of the Court of Aids.</i>	124
	12. <i>Of the Taille, Taillon, &amp;c. and t manner of raising them.</i>	124
	13. <i>Of the Imposition called Entries.</i>	124
	14. <i>Of the Tax called the Gabelle.</i>	124
	15. <i>Of the Demesnes and Customs of t Crown.</i>	125
	16. <i>Of several other Taxes and Creat of Offices.</i>	125
	17. <i>Of the Generalities, Intendancies, Re al Treasury, &amp;c. of France.</i>	125







---

---

A COMPLEAT  
HISTORY  
OF  
FRANCE.

---

The First, or Merovignian Race.

---

BOOK I.

---

CHAP. I.

*The Reign of PHARAMOND,*  
*first King of France.*

**T**H O we find by the Historians of those Phara-  
Antient Times, that the *French* had *seve-*mond's  
ral Kings before *Pharamond*, which is an *Reign.*  
ambiguous Word, and uncertain whether  
it be a proper Name, or an Epithet, signi-  
fying, that he was as it were the Stock of the *French*  
Nation, since *Pharamond* in the *German* Tongue, im- *Emp. The-*  
ports the *Mouth of Generations*; yet the common *odosius 2.*  
*Opinion* has ever begun to reckon the Kings of *France* and *Valen-*  
from him, whom they make to commence his *Reign* *cinian 3.*  
B in

## 2      *The Reigns of Pharamond and Clodion: B*

in 418. (a Year very remarkable for a great Eclipse of the Sun) and the manner of whose Inauguration was, to set him upon a great Shield, on which they carried him into the Field, where the People were assembled, and confirmed the Choice with Acclamations and Applause.

It's not to be doubted but his Design was to make Conquest, at least of some part of *Gaul*, wherein, probable, he did not much succeed, since we find

428. *Romans* drove the *French* beyond the *Rhine* in 428.  
*His Death.* about which time 'tis thought *Pharamond* died, after having reigned about ten years, and in his Lifetime was reputed to have been the Author of the *Sali Law*, of which more hereafter.

---

## C H A P. II.

### *The Reign of CLODION the Hairy, or Long-locks.*

*Clodion's Reign.*      **T**HE Reasons being uncertain why this Prince wore such long Hair, we pass that over, and observe that *Clodion* certainly in the beginning of his Reign dwelt beyond the *Rhine*, over which he was beaten by that ever famous *Roman* General *Actius*, in 431. when he would have made an Irruption into *Gaul*; being ever upon the watch for a favourable Con-  
*His Con-quests in Gaul.*      sture, he from his Castle of *Disparg* in *Thuringia* brake in privately through the Forest *Charbonn.* into *Picardy*, where he made himself Master of *Bar* *Cambray*, and some other adjacent Places; from whence pursuing his Conquests, during the extreme Confusion of the *Roman* Empire, he received a Check from *Actius* in *Artois*, which Country however he at length made himself not only Master of, but enlarged  
*About 444.*      Dominion as far as the *Soame*, and took *Amiens*, where he chose to be the Place of his Royal Residence.

*His Death.*      A modern Author says, he died of Grief for the loss of his eldest Son at the Siege of *Soissons*, after he reigned 20 years, leaving two Sons behind him,  
447.      *M.*

seem to be their Protector, tho we find nothing concerning his Wife and Children.

# C H A P. III.

## Reign of MEROVEUS, or Merovee.

**MEROVEUS**, who was a near Relation of *Meroveus Clodion*, assumed the Regal Dignity, in pre- *begins his*  
 ject to his Predecessor's Children; or rather the People *Reign.*  
 him the preference upon the account of his fitness 448.  
 to govern: but for the fabulous Story of his Mother's  
 saving him by a certain Sea-Divinity, it had no  
 ground than the Similitude of his Name to the  
*Mer-veich*, which signified a Sea-Calf.

He proved to be a warlike and brave Prince, and  
 engaged his Forces with *Actius* the Roman General, and  
*Corick* King of the *Visigoths*, they charged *Attila*  
 of the *Huns*, who had laid siege to *Orleans*; with  
 such Fury, that they made him quit it with a  
 Slaughter. They also not long after engaged  
 on the Plains of *Chaalons* in *Champagne*, tho some will  
 say it to be in *Soulogne* near *Orleans*; and *Attila* lost  
 200000 men, for all which he had still men e-  
 nough to retreat into his own Country. *Actius* hav-  
 ing discharged the *Visigoths* and the *French*, lest he  
 should be obliged to pursue and make an end of them;  
 the youngest of *Clodion's* Sons had cast himself into the  
 arms of that Prince, who adopted him for his Son,  
 he other under the protection of *Attila*; but what  
 Fortune was is uncertain, tho some will have *Chil-*  
*rick* to have been the Adopted of *Actius*, which  
 the Roman was some time after massacred by the Em- 454.  
 peror *Valentinian III.* from whence ensued the utter  
 ruination of the Western Empire: So that *Meroveus*,  
 his Son *Childerick* after him, had a proper time to  
 extend their Limits, the first of whom took the Terri- *His Con-*  
 tories of *Mentz*, one way, and on the other *Picardy*, a *quests and*  
 part of *Normandy*, and almost all the Isle of *Death*,  
 &c; and after having reigned almost 21 years,

458.

paid his last Debt to Nature *Anno* 458. and so leave him.

## C H A P. IV.

## The Reign of CHILDERICK.

THIS Prince being young and debauched, People dethroned him, and advanced *Aegor Gillon*, Master of the *Roman* Militia, a Person of high reputation, in his room, while he himself, for of his Life, retired into *Thuringia*, but left the *Childerick* full *Gyemans* in *France* to manage his Restoration. *Gillon*, and perswaded him to burden the People with Taxes; when they grumbled about it, he encouraged them to cut off the principal Men among them, who were the same that had deposed *Childerick*; he gave secret Incouragement to the Complaints of the People, whom he perswaded to re-call their natural Prince. *Childerick* hereupon making use of the Force of his Subjects against *Gillon*, forced him to a flight, took *Treves* by Assault, and burnt it, together with *Lorain*; and having crossed *Champaigne*, that remained firm to the *Romans*, he made himself Master of *Beauvais*, *Paris*, and many other Towns up to the *Orise* and the *Seine*, the People, who were weary of the *Roman* Exactions, every where readily submitted to him: Nay, so charmed was Queen *Basina* with his Vertues, that soon after he came from *Thuringia* she forsook her Husband, and came to him; who took her to Wife, and within a year had *Glovis* by her. It seems *Gillon* had called in some *Auxiliary Saxons* under their King *Odoacre*; but *Gillon* Count *Pal* took the Command, and with his fidelity would secure *Angiers*, and fortify the *Loire*; but *Childerick* having vanquished him near *Orleans*, pursued him to *Angiers*, where he was killed, and there slew him. This done, he

His Con-  
quests.

460.

468.





Saxons of their Islands, and by agreement sent them expel the Germans, who at that time had made an option into Gaul. Childerick upon his Return from Expedition against the Germans, fell sick of a Fever, and dyed, aged 45 years, whereof he had reigned 22 or 23, leaving one Son named Clovis, and three daughters behind him. It's conjectured he had his Royal Residence at Tournay, because that in 1654. they discover'd a Tomb there in digging, and found a Ring, whereon his Effigies and Name were engraven. *His Death.*

## C H A P. V.

### *The Reign of CLOVIS, or Lewis.*

LOVIS, or Lewis (for 'tis the same Name) was a brave handsome Person, and early began a War against Siagrus the Son of Gillon, who had been set up Clovis de- head of Childerick; and having defeated him near *feats Si-* *iffens*, forced him by Threats out of the hands of Siagrus. *aric King of the Visigoths*, put him to death, and zed on all that the Romans had in Gaul. He also sub- ed part of the Thuringians, and imposed a Tribute on them; and his Conquests made him so famous, at Gondchaud King of the Burgundians seemed to be more than his Vassal, whose Niece Clotilda he mar- *Married* *481.* *rd,* by the interposition of Aurelian, a French *rd,* who had the County of Melun for his Reward. Now the Almaines out of Germany entering in an Ho- le manner into the Territories of Sigebert King of *lagn*, Clovis his Kinsman engaging in his Quarrel at *alg*, his men gave ground in the Action, and fell into order: The greatness of the Danger made the King ay to the God of his Wife, and make a Vow, if he and Deliverance he would be baptized; upon which e Scene immediately changed, and the Day became his, with the Slaughter of a multitude of his Enemies; a pursuing his Victory, he exterminated all those at were on that side of the Rhine. Being returned on this Expedition, and instructed in the Mysteries



Baptized.  
496.

of Christianity, he was baptized at *Rheims* on Christmas-day, Anno 496. whose Example 3000 of his Subjects followed; and the *French* boast he was at time the only Orthodox King in the World, there being none but himself that did not either live in Error or Idolatry.

But the Zeal of Christianity not allaying his warlike Heat, he assisted *Gondefigilus* against his Brother *Gondebaud* the *Burgundian*, upon condition of sharing Spoil between them; and when they came to Battle near *Dijon*, *Gondefigilus* went over to the *French*, which made *Gondebaud*, now sensible of the Treachery, to flee to *Avignon*, where he was besieged by *Clovis*, but by the wise Management of his Counsellor *Arian*, who pretended to desert him, he brought about a agreement between them, and *Gondebaud* became Tributary, tho it held not long: For scorning to pay Tribute, he watched his opportunity, and besieged *Gondefigilus* in *Vienne*, and by the means of one *Armenien*, finding a Passage through an Aqueduct into the City, he there slew him, with the *Arian* Bishop *Placidus*, and so remained sole King of all *Burgundy*, *Clovis*, and *Theodorick* King of the *Ostrogoths*, a League to conquer it.

He defeats  
and kills  
Alaric.

After this, some peaceable Days ensuing, *Clovis* applied himself (as they said) to reform the *Salique* Law from the Dross of *Paganism*; but he and *Alaric* being able to continue long Friends, and a Rumour being somented between them by the Bishops of *Arles*, out of the hatred they bore to the *Arian* Principles of *Alaric*, the Kings had an Interview at *Amboise*, and all that *Theodorick* King of the *Ostrogoths* could do, being not able to restrain the Ambition of *Clovis*, he made war upon *Alaric* under the pretence of Religion, took *Tours*, and in the Month of *Vouglay*, not far from *Poitiers*, defeated *Alaric's* Army, and slew him with his own Hand: After which he became Master of *Albigensis*, *Rouergne*, *Quercy*, *Auvergne*, while himself, with another part of his Army, took *Poitiers*, *Saintonge*, all *Bourdeaux*, *Thoulouse* fell to his share, then he wintered. In the Spring the Walls fell down before him; and he

His Con-  
quests.  
508.

the *Arians*, which were t freed from the  
 or *Arians*, while *Gondet* l, pursuant to  
 treaty th him, conquered the *Narbonnois*,  
 wi : City of *Narbonne*. All these Successes put  
 t extended the Fame of *Clovis*, even to the East,  
 from whence *Anastafius* the Emperor sent him honoura-  
 ry Letters, and Imperial Ornaments; so that he was  
 ever after accosted with the Titles of Consul and August,  
 which were not all together useless to him towards the  
 more entire Subjection of the *Gauls*, who had still some  
 Veneration for those Titles.

*Theodorick*, King of the *Ostrogoths*, jealous of *Clovis's* French de-  
 Success, sent a great Army against him under Count *feated by*  
*Ibba*, who in a bloody Battle defeated and slew 30000 *the Goths*.  
*French* and *Burgundians*, and afterwards took from 510.  
 them all they had conquered in *Provence* and *Lingue-*  
*doc*, except *Tholouse* and *Uzer*.

*Clovis* fretted at these Losses, lays snares for the o-  
 ther petty Kings of *France*, and rid himself of them  
 by such Methods of Cruelty and Treachery as no way  
 became a Christian, and Orthodox King; and at length  
 died at *Paris*, November 26. Anno 511. aged 45. *Clovis's*  
 having reigned 30 years. He had four Sons living, *Death*.  
*Thierry*, *Clodomir*, *Childebert*, and *Clotaire*, the first  
 by a Concubine, the other three by *Clotilda*; as also  
 a Daughter of the same Name, afterwards married to  
*Amalaric* King of the *Visigoths* in *Spain*.

The *French* under *Clovis* his Reign wholly freed *themselves*  
 themselves from the *Roman* Empire, and became their *and Cu-*  
 Allies upon equal terms, till which time 'tis thought *stoms*.  
 they had been Stipendiaries, or tributary to them.  
 That part of *Gaul* which reaches from the *Rhine* to the  
*Loire*, was called *France*, and the *French* measured  
 those Lands, and took the third or fourth part, which  
 they shared among themselves. The People consisted  
 of Freemen and Slaves, the first of whom all bore  
 Arms. The *Gauls* paid Tribute to the *French*, but the  
 natural *French* paid hardly any thing besides their per-  
 sonal Service: They were bred up to the exercise of  
 Arms from their Youth, were of a good Shape and Sta-  
 ture, enured to Labours, strong and exceeding nimble:  
 They had left off the use of Arrows, and in lieu of them  
 for offensive Weapons, they us'd the Sword and the *Angon*  
 which

which was a Dart of a moderate length, with an iron bearded Head, and Cheeks of Iron, and the iron-edged Ax, which they called *Francisque*, that it darted, as well as the *Angon*, tho nearer at hand for defensive Arms, unless it were their Comma they had only the Buckler, which they managed with dexterously to shelter, and, Tortoise like, to cover themselves in Onsets. Their whole Army were Infantry, or if there were a few Horse, they only served to attend the General, and carry his Orders. They retained a good part of the Establishment made by the *Romans*, as the manner of raising Imposts, but less; also of providing Magazines for the Subsistence of their Troops, maintaining Horses and Carriages for Travellers on the great Roads, publick Sports, Horseracing, and Combats of wild Beasts; and their Princes believed themselves as absolute as Emperors, cardinals, Dukes, Counts, and great Masters of their Military, even Patricians, and perhaps the Mayors of the Palace held the Office of *Præfecti Pretorii*.

## C H A P. VI.

## The Reign of CHILDEBERT.

511. Thierry King of Metz. } Childebert of Paris.

Clodomir of Orleans. } Clotaire of Soissons.

THESE four Brothers divided the Kingdom between them, tho the Succession be accounted the Kings of *Paris*, because that City has since been the Capital of all *France*. *France* then began to be divided into *Ostereich*, or the Eastern part, corruptly called *Austrasia*, and into *Westrich* or *Neustria*, the first comprehending all between the *Meuse* and the *Rhine*, as even *Rheims*, *Chaalons*, *Cambray* and *Laon* on this side the *Meuse*, besides antient *France*; and all the People subdued beyond the *Rhine*, as the *Bavarians*,

and part of the *Thuringians* depended upon it, where-  
*Neustria* extended from the *Meuse* to the *Loire* :  
 But *Aquitain* was not comprised under the Name of  
*France* nor *Burgundy* ; nor the lower *Bretagne* at least,  
 because it was an independent State.

In the mean time *Gondebaud* King of *Burgundy* 316.  
 dying, and being succeeded by his Son *Sigismund*,  
 who in prejudice to his Queen *Ostrogotha*, took one  
 of his Servants into his Bed, by whose wicked Instiga-  
 tion he put his own Son *Sigeric* to death in his Sleep ;  
 Divine Justice stirred up the *French* Kings to chastise  
 him, who in a few days made themselves Masters of  
 a great part of *Burgundy* ; so that *Sigismund* was quick-  
 ly betrayed into the Hands of the Enemy, and with  
 his Wife and Children, shut up by *Clodomir* in a Castle,  
 not far from *Orleans*. But *Gondemar* *Sigismund's* Brother  
 having saved himself by flight, and gathering up the Re-  
 mains of his Brother's Army, put himself in possession of  
 the Throne. *Clodomir* not brooking this, made a League  
 with *Thierry* his Brother, to compleat his Overthrow ;  
 and having notwithstanding all the pious Arguments of  
*St. A.* cruelly massacred *Sigismund* with his Wife and  
 Children, this wrought so just a Resentment in *Thierry*  
 for the death of *Sigismund* his Father in Law, that  
 he forsook *Clodomir* in Battel, and suffered him to  
 perish: However the *French* were so far from being *Clodomir*  
 slain.

*Radegonda*, *Bertier's* Children; the first of which put to death, and married the other: While *Thie* being returned home, and having allured *Hei* froy to his Court, under the security of the Faith, he was one day barbarously thrust down the Walls of *Tolbiac*, and so miserably perit *Childebert* about the same time making War on *Amalaric* King of the *Visigoths*, the last was overt in Battel near *Narbonne*, the place of his Royal residence, and slain in his Flight, tho *Clotaire* got more than Plunder; for *Septimania* still remained the Hands of the *Visigoths*, whose timorous Kings transferred their Royal Seat to *Toledo* for their great security, and so we leave them.

534. But now for the utter extinguishing of the King-  
 Burgundy of *Burgundy*, *Childebert* and *Clotaire* confeder-  
 conquered. and having quickly expelled *Gondemar*, put a  
 period to it, after it had subsisted 90 Years, and  
 nited it to *France*, tho it retained still its Na-  
 Laws, and particular Magistrates: And because *Thi*  
 erry of *Metz* refused to accompany his two Brot-  
 against *Gondemar*, his Subjects threatened to do  
 him, because they had no share in the Plunder  
*Burgundy*; and he had no other way to appease them  
 than to conduct them into *Auvergne*, who were  
 volted from him to give themselves up to *Childel*  
 Thierry in his Return besieged the Lord *Mun*  
 slain. in the Castle of *Vitri*, by whom he was slain  
 with a Dart, after he had reigned a little above  
 Years, and lived about 55, leaving only one  
 named *Theodebert*, who during the Wars of *B*  
 and *Thuringia*, had Orders to oppose the  
 of the *Visigoths* in *Septimania*, from whom  
 some Castles in the Country of *Beziers*, but just  
 himself to be also taken by the Beauty of the su-  
*Deateria*, who received him into her Castle and  
 From *Septimania* he carried the War to *Provence*  
 against the *Ostrogoths*, where he made a consider-  
 Progress, when the News of his Father's Sick-  
 made him hasten to *Metz*, where he arrived some  
 days before he died. Now *Childebert* and *Clot*  
 the Uncles of *Theodebert*, were preparing  
 vade his Father's Kingdom, but his diligence

their measures; and when he had bought a Peace of them, and apparently tied a knot of Friendship with *Childebert*, who promised him the Succession, as having no Children of his own, he publicly married *Deateria*, in prejudice to *Wisgard*, the Daughter of *Theode- Wacon* King of the *Lombards*, whom he had betrothed in his Father's Life time. bert's Aff-  
airs.

In the mean time *Arthalaric* King of *Italy* dying in his Youth, and his Mother marrying *Theodad*, Son of *Amalafrede*, Sister to King *Theodoric*, and advancing him to the Throne, he ungratefully makes away with her, which indeed caused the ruin of the *Ostro-goths*; what with the Conduct of *Belisarius* the Emperor *Justinian's* General, and the Advancement of *Vitiges* to the Throne, who put *Theodad* to death: But this was not all, for *Theodad* in his Life time offering *Provence* to the *French*, and 8000 l. of Gold, to take his part, *Vitiges* by way of Prevention actually does it; and *Theodebert* to make his Advantage of both, first sent 10000 *Burgundians* into *Italy*, who joining with *Oraia*, one of *Vitiges* his Captains, helped him to recover *Milan*; and when he believed both Parties were pretty well weakned, he entred the *M. l. anese* with 200000 Men. The *Roman* Army, and that of the *Ostro-goths* were encamped over against the other Army, near *Pavia*; and each of them thought *Theodebert* was come to their Assistance, but he first assaulted and defeated the *Ostro-goths*, then came on thundering against the Emperor's Army, and cut them all in pieces; but a Plague and Famine made him soon repuls the Mountains, for fear *Belisarius* out of *Tus- cany* should fall upon him.

539.

But this was not all, for *Theodebert* about this time was also tormented with the Plagues of his own Family; for Queen *Deateria* growing jealous of her own Daughter, caused wild Bulls to be harnessed, to draw her Chariot, who precipitated her from off the Bridg of *Verdon* into the *Meuse*: At which unnatural Fact the *French* were so offended, that they obliged their King to repudiate *Deateria*, and take *Wisgard* to Wife, to whom he was before contracted. The following Year his Uncle *Childebert* and he fell un- awares upon *Clotaire*, who only had time to fortify himself

540.

541.

himself on the Banks of the *Seine*, by laying great Trees cross the Avenues; but when they were ready to force him in this Post, the Heavens, as they said, the Prayers of Queen *Clotilda*, without hurting of, poured such a Tempest upon the Enemies, that they desired a Peace of him. But to return to the Imperialists and *Ostro-goths*, still engaged against one another, *Theodebert* already Master of *Rhetia*, *Vindelicia* and *Svevia*, took that opportunity by his Lieutenant *Haminge*, to make himself Master of the lesser *Italy*, since called *Lombardy*; but *Justinian's* Forces having gained some advantage over his Troops, and the Emperor thereupon among the taking upon himself the Title of *Francica*, *Theodebert* being not able to endure it, would needs cross the *Pyrennia* and *Mesia*, and bring all his Power into *Thrace*, to let him see the *French* were not vanquished. But as he was preparing for his Expedition, a mortal Accident took away his Life; for being one day hunting a wild Bull, he happened to break down the Branch of a Tree, that hit him so rudely on the Head, as to throw him into a Fever, where he died in the 14th Year of his Reign, and about 40 his Age, leaving one Son *Theodebaldus* behind him and a Daughter called *Bertoaire*, who afterwards came a Nun. As *Theodebert* had been a Prince of great Undertakings, he mightily burdened his Subjects with Taxes; for which his chief Minister *Partenius*, a notorious Glutton, was stoned to death at *Triers*.

Theode-  
bert's  
Death and  
Character.

Theode-  
baldus suc-  
ceeds.

551.

*Theodebaldus* succeeding his Father *Theodebert* could by no Solicitations of *Justinian* be brought to abandon the Defence of the *Ostro-goths*, or make a League with the Empire; however he sent an Embassador to *Constantinople*, to treat of some differences concerning the Cities he held in *Italy*, wherein the *Justinian* gave him all the satisfaction he could desire, yet he could by no means be induced to restore to their Pope *Vigilius*, and *Datus* Bishop of *Milan*, who were detained and treated very ill.

552.

It was not long before the Kingdom of the *Ostro-goths* came to be extinguished in *Italy* (where it subsisted but 58 Years) by the Successes of *Justinian's* Lieutenants, and the remainder of those People implor-

the Assistance of the *French*, *Leutarius* and *Bucelinus* two *German* Lords, by the Permission of *Theodebaldus*, made a descent into *Italy* with 75000 Men, both of *Germans* and *French*, and ravaged it on the right and left, even to the farther extent of the Country. *Leutaire's* Army having pierced as far as *Otranto*, were beaten back near *Fano* in the Province of *Aimilia*; and retreating from thence with much difficulty into *Venetia*, which then belonged to *Theodebaldus*, they were all destroyed by a *Pestilence*, while the other Army under *Bucelin* were all cut off by *Narses*, the Emperor's General, only five Men escaping. And the Year following another Army of *Theodebaldus* having run the like Fate with *Bucelin*, there remained nothing to the *French* in *Italy* but the Passage of the *Alps*; so that after such bloody Losses, *Theodebaldus* ended his languishing Life, in the 20th Year of his Age, and 7th of his Reign; and having no Children, his Succession returned to his two Uncles, but *Clotaire* being the strongest seized all, and married his Wife, tho thro the Remonstrances of the Bishops, he afterwards put her off, and gave her in Marriage to *Garibald* Duke of *Bavaria*.

554

555

Theode-  
baldus's  
Death.

The *Saxons*, who at this time were Tributaries to the *French*, even from the time of *Thierry* of *Metz*, conjointly with the *Thuringians* took occasion now to revolt, but *Clotaire* soon beat and plundered them: Yet the *French* refusing them Mercy, the next Year upon a fresh Revolt, they were beaten with a horrible Slaughter, and the King gladly proffered the *Saxons* that Peace which had been denied them. His Brother *Childebert*, who was of the same Age, incites his own Son *Merovech* of *Aquitaine* to rebel against him, and to be managed by his two other Sons, he marched himself with several Deputies, upon the

upon the

the

the

the

the

the

the

the

the

the

the

the

the

the



Childebert's  
Death and  
Character.  
558.

long the Benefit of it, for returning from *Châlons* he was struck with a troublesome Disease, which ended in his Death. Among his other Virtues he is reckoned to be a Prince eminent for his Care to the Poor, and his Zeal for Religion according to the Mode of those times : As for his Wife *Ultron*, and his two Daughters *Chrotberg* and *Chrotelinda*, were detained in Prison by their Uncle *Clotair*, he had secured the Kingdom to himself ; and took the first Example of the Salique Law in favour of Males Succession to the Crown, which yet seems to be rather compulsive than lawful ; and so he rejoyined in his own Person the entire Succession of the Grand *Merovingians*.

## C H A P. VII.

### The Reign of CLOTAIRE I.

Clotaire  
sole King  
of France.  
560.

His Death.  
561.

**P**RINCE *Chramne*, now destitute of *Childebert's* Protection, reconciled himself to his Mother ; but soon after retires to *Conober*, one of the Princes of *Bretagne*, whither he was hotly pursued by his Father, who fought him near the *Saône*, where the *Bretons*, killed *Conober*, and took *Chramne* prisoner ; whom with his Wife and Children he put to death after a most cruel manner caused to be burnt : So barbarous an Action wrought a severe Repentance in him, in which he likewise endeavoured to appease by Acts of Piety, and large Donations to the Church ; but coming back from hunting in the Forest of *Chaise*, he was seized with a burning Fever, whereof he died at *Combray* in the 61<sup>st</sup> year of his Age, and about the middle of his Reign : His four Sons buried his Corps with great Pomp at *Soissons*. He had four Wives, of whom he kept two Sisters at once, namely *Ingonde* and *Chilperic's* Mother, by the first of whom he left three Sons, *viz.* *Childebert*, *Gontran*, and *Sigebert*, and one Daughter married to *Alboinus* King of the *Lombards* : By his second Wife he had *Chilperic*, and by *Ghislaine* the third

*Chr.* : Some Authors give him a Daughter named *Blit*, married to the Senator *Ausbert*, paternal Grandfather to St. *Arnold*.

## C H A P. VIII.

*The Reign of* C H E R E B E R T.

Cherebert King of Pa- } *Sigebert of Austrasia.*  
*ris.* }  
 Gontran of Orleans and } *Chilperic of Soissons.*  
*Burgundy.* }

THE Kingdom being a second time divided into four parts for *Clotaire's* four Sons, occasioned great Calamities; for before the shares were settled, *Chilperic* the youngest seized upon all the Father's Treasure at *Bresne*, and then at *Paris*; but he being driven thence by the other three, they drew Lots, which fell upon each according to the Divisions in this Title; besides which each of them had a share in *Aquitain* and *Provence*, because they might be altogether obliged to maintain them with their joint Forces. These Brothers had not had long to settle themselves in their respective Partitions, when the *Avars* flying from the Tyranny of the *Turks*, into the Emperor *Justinian's* Service, and being after his Death slighted by *Justin*, in quest of their Fortune penetrated into the Heart of *Germany*, and ravaged *Thuringia*, which belonged to *Sigebert*; who nothing terrified with the approach of these *Barbarians*, encountered them on the Banks of the *Elbe*, and sent them back with shame to the *Danube* from whence they came. In the mean time *Chilperic* falling upon his Territories, ruined all the Country of *Rheims*; but he was so vigorously repulsed by *Sigebert*, that he not only took the City of *Soissons*, but also his Son *Theodebert* Prisoner; but a Reconciliation ensued the same year, and the young Prince obtained his Liberty.

*The Kingdom divided into 4 Parts.*

*Avars beaten.*

567.

The

The Kingdom of the *Lombards* being erected in *Italy* about this time, the Neighbourhood soon set them together by the Ears with the *French*; and being puffed up with their Successes in *Italy*, they made frequent Incursions into *Rhetia* and *Provence*, and in 571 marched into the Kingdom of *Burgundy*, where at first in a bloody Battel they defeated King *Gontran's* Army, and slew his General *Amat*, the Patrician of *Arles*; but his Successor *Mummole*, having afterwards hemmed them in about *Ambrun*, destroyed almost their whole Army, or made them Prisoners.

King Cherebert  
dies.

*Cherebert* being gone into *Xantogne*, which was his Lot, died in the Castle of *Blay* upon the *Garonne*, at about 49 years of Age, having reigned nine; he had only three Daughters, viz. by Queen *Ingoberge*, *Berte*, who was married to *Ethelbert* King of *Canterbury* in *England*, and proved an Instrument to convert him to Christianity; and the other two by some Mistress, who proved dissolute Nuns. This Prince indeed changed his Wives often, for he put off the first and married a Nun, and last of all a Shepherd's Daughter. Neither were his Brothers better than he upon this account, for *Gontran* chose a Servant for his Mistress, then espoused and quickly rejected *Marcetrude*: *Chilperic* repudiated Queen *Andovere*, tho he had three Sons by her, for the Love of *Fredegonda*, one of her Maids; tho he afterwards quitted his Amours with her, and married another Wife. *Sigebert* alone of them was he that desired a lawful Marriage, and one suitable to his Quality, and therefore espoused *Brunchild* Daughter of *Almagildus* King of the *Visigoths*. But of this enough.



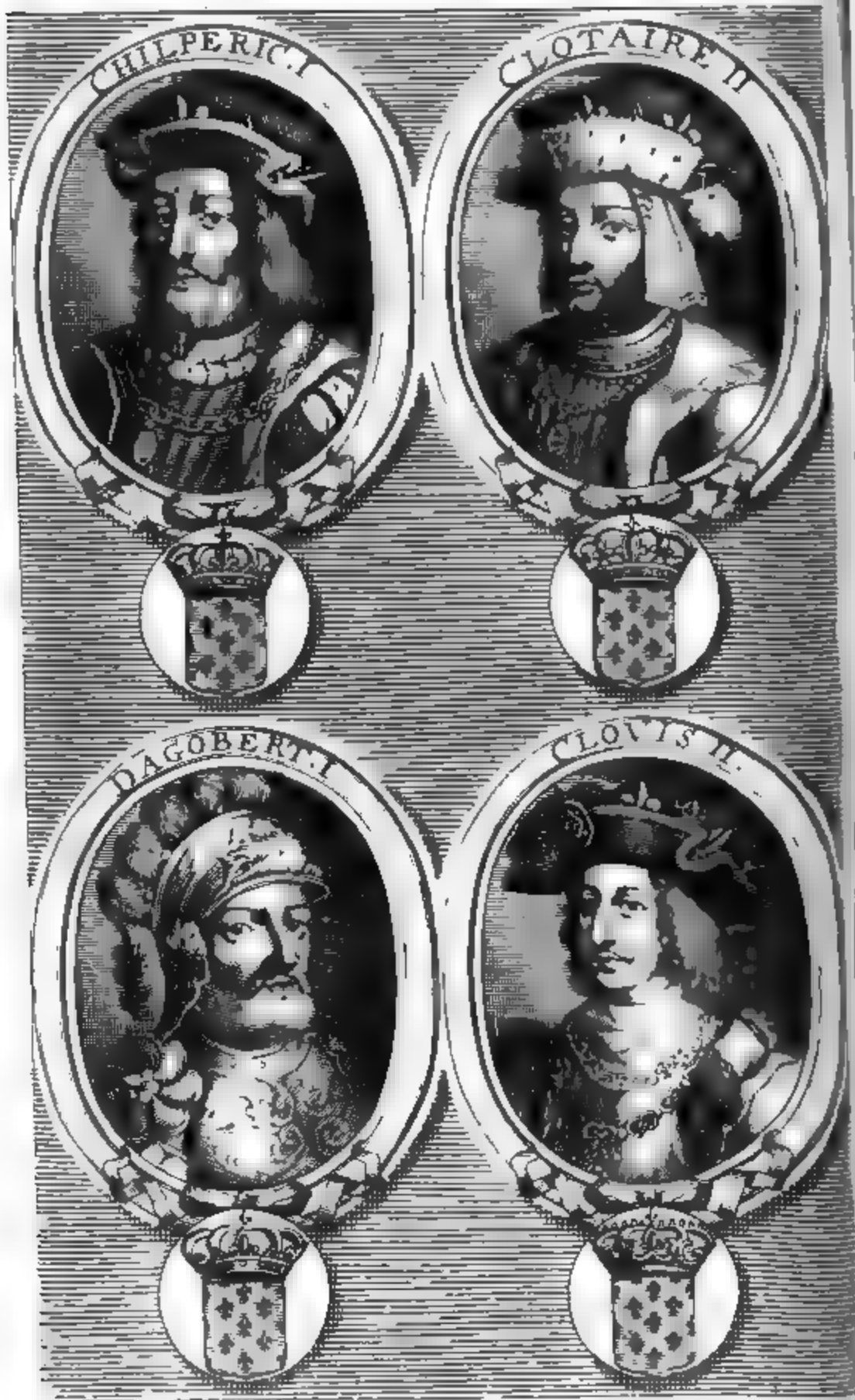
570.

The Kingdom of the *Lombards* being erected by about this time, the Neighbourhood soon set together by the Ears with the *French*; and being with their Successes in *Italy*, they madeursions into *Rhetia* and *Provence*, and in 5711 the Kingdom of *Burgundy*, where at first a Battel they defeated King *Gontran's* Army, his General *Amat*, the Patrician of *Arles*; Successor *Mummole*, having afterwards been in about *Ambrun*, destroyed almost their Army, or made them Prisoners.

King Cherebert dies.

*Cherebert* being gone into *Xantogne*, which *Lot*, died in the Castle of *Blay* upon the 6 about 49 years of Age, having reigned nine; only three Daughters, viz. by Queen *Ingoberge*, who was married to *Ethelbert* King of *Ca* in *England*, and proved an Instrument to come to Christianity; and the other two by some who proved dissolute Nuns. This Prince indeed seduced his Wives often, for he put off the first married a Nun, and last of all a Shepherd's Daughter. Neither were his Brothers better than he was on account, for *Gontran* chose a Servant for his Wife, then espoused and quickly rejected *Marcatrude*: *peric* repudiated Queen *Andovere*, tho he had Sons by her, for the Love of *Fredegonda*, one of his Maids; tho he afterwards quitted his first Wife, and married another Wife. So it is evident that there was he that desired a lawful Marriage, suitable to his Quality, and therefore espoused a child Daughter of *Mmagildus* King of the *But* of this enough.





# BOOK II.

## CHAP. I.

### *The Reign of* CHILPERIC.

*Gontran in Neustria* } *Sigebert in Austrasia.*  
*and Burgundy.* } *Chilperic in Neustria.*

HEREBERT's three Brothers immediately redivided his Kingdom between them, and even the City of *Paris* also; into which neither of the three was to enter without the Consent of the rest, upon the Forfeiture of his Share not only therein, but in the Kingdom that was *Cherebert's*: However *Chilperic* resuming his Mistress *Fragondanda*, for whose sake he caused his lawful Wife to be strangled in her Bed; his Brothers, more particularly *Sigebert*, made War upon him, and forced the Countries of *Bourdelois*, *Limosin*, *Quercy*, *Bearn* and *Biscay* from him. About which time the *Avars* made a second Irruption into *Thuringia*, they made use of the Onset of Diabolical Enchantments against *Sigebert* and his Frenchmen; tho't is likely, they had nothing but ugly Vizards on, or had blacked their Faces: However it were, the *French* were so hemmed in on all sides, that *Sigebert* had no way to get out of this Extremity, but by the Power of Money, and furnishing them with Provisions, of which they stood in great need.

571.

*Sigebert* impatient of rest, soon after made War upon *Gontran*, in order to take the City of *Arles* from him; but failing in that Design, he was now to expect Adventures, and indeed the Division of *Cherebert's* Kingdoms afforded the Brothers sufficient Occasions to quarrel; and more particularly *Tourain* and *Poitiers* falling to *Sigebert's* share, *Chilperic* had an itching

574.





he went to *Tours*, and thence to *Rean*, where he married *Bruneband* by the Advice of *Pretextat* Arch-Bishop of that Place ; but the Father hasting thither, and asking the new Couple out of the Church, to which they had retired for refuge, he set a Guard upon *Bruneband*, and carried his Son away with him, whom some time after he confined also by the advice of *Fredegonde*, and forced him to turn Priest. At the same time the *Austrasians* demanded their Queen *Bruneband* with so much earnestness, that he sent her to them, yet swore not to invade the Territories of *Childebert*: His son *Clovis* took *Saintes*, but Duke *Didier* laying Siege to *Limoges*, the *Patrician Mummole*, King *Gontran's* General, engaged him in a most obstinate fight, wherein 30000 Men were slain, of which three Parts were *Didier's*, who had much ado to save himself.

576.

And now the Fate of poor *Meroveus* comes on apace, for having made his escape out of the Monastery to *St. Martins of Tours*, and finding not himself safe there from his Step-mother *Fredegonde*; he with the traitorous *Boson* (who had been the Cause of his Brother *Theodebert's* Death) fled into *Champagne*; after which, *Boson* and the Bishop of *Rheims*, under pretence of delivering *Town* to him, took him Prisoner, and giving *Chilperic* immediate notice of it, he made all the haste he could thither, but found his unfortunate Son stabbed to death by the order of *Fredegonde*.

Now Death having snatched away *Gontran's* two Sons by his second Wife *Austrigilda*, he adopted his Nephew *Childebert*, and placed him in his Royal Seat, and then sent to *Chilperic* to demand their Part of the Kingdom of *Paris*, or declare War against him; but *Chilperic* laughed at the Proposal, which made no Interruption in his Chariot-Races, wherein he much delighted: Neither was he afraid of over-burdening his Subjects with Imposts; he having taxed an Amphore of Wine upon every half Acre of Vineyard, laid a Tribute upon every Slaves Head, and Poll-Money upon every Freeman. But now his Calamities began to come upon him, for this year *Sampson* his eldest Son by *Fredegonde* died; and himself the next was tormented with a long Fever, and two of his other Sons afflicted with a Dysentery: All which making *Frede-*

597.  
The Practices of  
*Fredegonde*

*gonda* believe it was the effect of Divine Vengeance for the sufferings of the oppressed People; she took the Lists of the Tax-gatherers into the Fire, and called all the Collectors. But this forced Repentance was but short-liv'd, for seeing now that Prince *Childebert* must necessarily succeed his Father, and her own safety, if that once hapned, she wickedly accuses her his Father of having poisoned her two Sons, thereupon delivering him up to her resentment caused his Throat to be cut, and his Mother *Andovera* to be strangled.

The Kingdom of *Austrasia*, and *Childebert's* Father being under the Government of Queen *Brunhilda* the Lords of the Country grew very licentious that she had much ado to keep the publick Tranquillity and had no other way to secure the faithful Duke of *Champagne* from the Resentments of the Bishop of *Rheims* and others, than by sending him out of the Kingdom to King *Gontran*, while the Bishop of *Autun* who was in *Chilperic's* Interest, brought the other Lords, in prejudice to the Alliance their King had made with his Uncle *Gontran*, to oblige him to make a League with *Chilperic* against him. The League made, *Childebert* sent to demand half of the Kingdom of his Uncle, who was so far from restoring it, that he made himself Master of the other, by the Treachery of *Dynamias* Governour of *Provence* for *Chilperic* who thereupon goes over to *Gontran*, as the Duke of *Mummo* forsook him to be of *Childebert's* Side fortified himself in *Avignon*. The Business of *Seilles* caused an open Rupture between the two Kings and *Chilperic* who was desirous of it, immediately falls upon *Gontran's* Countries, having at the same time ordered *Didier* to invade *Perigord* and *Aquitaine* which he did with good Success, while Duke *Chilperic's* Troops were hemmed in and cut in pieces in *Gascoigns*. But a more dangerous design was contrived against *Gontran*, than the open War of *Chilperic* for by the Contrivance of *Mummo* and the other Lords, one *Gondebaud*, who pretended to be *Clotaire's* Son, and perhaps might have been so, being able to get his Brothers the Kings to acknowledge him, retired to the *Constantinopolitan* Emperor.

Til

where *Gontran-Boson* hapning also to take ar-  
e, he persuaded him to go for *France*; and be-  
fied with Money by *Tiberius*, he arrived at  
his, was received by the Bishop, and after-  
entertained by *Mummole* at *Avignon*: But the  
son, who had persuaded him to return, falling  
in the Bishop, the other wisely withdrew to the  
at the Mouth of the *Rhone*; while the false Bo-  
ed all his Money, and took a Commission from  
*Gontran*, to besiege *Mummole* in *Avignon*.  
ort being informed of it, sent one of his Dukes, *Miseries of*  
ashed that design: However the Provinces suf- *France.*  
xtremely by these Discords of the Kings, the Sol-  
few very insolent; and an Epidemical Distem-  
illed *Lues inquinaria*, swept away abundance of  
especially about *Paris*, who mostly died how-  
d shrieking most horribly.

peric at this time having besieged *Melun*, and  
aded three of his Dukes to attack *Bourges*, his  
were so defeated by *Gontran*, that he was glad  
Accommodation; which the other being of a  
disposition easily gave way to; and all the In-  
of *Chilperic* was now, to get his Brother to  
oppress *Childebert*; but *Gontran* and his Nephew  
better understanding than he was aware of,  
ade a League to recover, at a joint Charge, those

583.

mane, malicious, dissembling and a great Pretence for Imposts, but crafty, patient, magnificent, and avaricious. In the year 1643. a couple of Tom found at the entrance into the Church of St. Gerdes Prez, upon one of which the Name of Clotair was written. He had only one Son but four Mo old, that survived him, who had yet no Name, a Daughter by *Fredegonda*, whose Name was *Rigobert* and was then on her Journey to Spain to meet King *Carde* to whom she was betrothed, when the News came of her Father's Death: But Duke *Didier* with all her Equipage, she returned to her Mother, and her a great deal of Trouble, being of the like ill-luck with her self.

## C H A P. II.

*The Reign of CLOTAIR II.*

<i>Gontran</i> in <i>Burgundy</i>	}	{	<i>Childebert</i> in <i>Aust</i>
and Part of <i>Neustria</i> .			<i>Clotair II.</i> in <i>N</i>

584. **G**ONTRAN being informed of his Brother's Death, made all the hast he could for *Paris*, *Fredegonda* was gone to take Sanctuary; and *Childebert* who intended the same thing, finding the Church possessed, retired to *Meaux*; from whence he sent Ambassadors to *Gontran*, to demand part of the Kingdom of *Paris*, as also *Fredegonda* to be punished for murder of her Husband, and of *Meroveus* and *Chilperic*. To the first of which he replied, that all the Kingdom of *Paris* belonged to him, because *Sigebert* and *Chilperic* had forfeited their Shares by violating the Treaty of Agreement made between them three; and for the other, he would refer it to the Assembly of the Nobles for which a day was appointed. He staid two Months at *Paris*, in which time *Fredegonda* did so insinuate to his Favour, that her Son by *Chilperic*, whom she named *Clotair*, was acknowledged King by him, to the

appropriation

granted the greatest part of the Kingdom to himself, leaving *Paris* only to the Child; and in short, by himself to be Master of all *France* during the Minority of his Nephews, he took possession of Lands in *Neustria* at his Pleasure, but in *Austrasia* Power was not owned.

Not to be for ever entertained with a Scene of Story, the forementioned *Gyndebaud* from *Constantinople*, at the Instigation of some of *Goutran's* Enemies, persuaded him to take the Title of King upon *Brice la Gaillard*, wherein he was favoured by Lords of *Childebert's* Court, Bishops of *Aquile* and *Brachaud* herself, who desired him for her d. Now *Goutran*, who feared *Childebert* might find this Conspiracy, desired he would come to him, confirmed the Adoption before made, putting him into his Hand; and at the same time he sent his Army to march into *Aquitain*, which *Besiegebaud* in *Lyons de Cominges*, where after many days, he was delivered up by the ever-treacherous *Mummole* and others to the Besiegers, who slew him on the place; neither did *Mummole*, and the others fare any better, and the City was de-

stroyed being satisfied by *Fredegonde*: as to the Point of Legitimacy of little *Clotair*, was soon after in-

four Attempts *Fredegonda* had made against him; yet, for what reason we know not, he did not do much as he ought to have done to secure his Life the Punishment of this *Megera*.

*Childebert* being now about fifteen, began to himself to be dreaded by some Examples of Sever having caused Duke *Magnoald* to be killed, and *Gontran-Boson* to be punished according to the Judgment of K. *Gontran*, who very well knew his Treachery, and indeed did not pardon him. But to by other Examples he made of such as conspired against *Fredegonda* against him, the Emperor *Mauritius* ing for some time solicited him upon very advantageous terms to make a Descent into *Italy* to drive out *Lombards*, he at length marched thither with a powerful Army; nevertheless he was well beaten by brave *Antaris* at the entrance of the *Alps*, and forced to retire. Neither had the second Army, which *Childebert* sent into *Italy* against the *Lombards*, any better Success, most of them having perished by Sickness or Famine: However *Antaris* thought it best to propose to the *French* some annual Presents to leave him in peace.

Now *Childebert* having discovered another of his Assassins, whom *Fredegonda* had sent to murder him, it gave him occasion to inquire into the old Conspiracy whereby the Bishop of *Rheims* was detected, convicted by his own and others Confessions, deposed and banished to *Strasburg*, the King, upon the petition of other Bishops, having spared his Life.

In the mean time some Princes of *Bretagne*, contrary to their Oaths, having ravaged the Bishopricks of *Rheims* and *Nants*, which belonged to K. *Gontran*, he dispatched *Ebracair* and *Boubelene* with an Army against them; but the second being deserted by the first upon the point of the business, the other on the third day of fight was at length destroyed with all his Men; whereupon the King awarded his Heirs the Estate of *Ebracair*, and made them some amends for their Loss.

K. *Gontran*'s Death and Character. 593. But now to close with the Actions of this Prince, whom we find nothing else that is very remarkable: 593. or, as some will have it, two years after, he was sick at *Chaalons*, and died the 28th of *March*, in the 32d or 33d year of his Reign, and the 68th of his Age.

all his Children, only one Daughter called *Clotilda*, a Nun, survived him, so that he left all his Dominions to *Childebert*, and little or nothing to *Clotair*, tho he was his Godfather. He was undoubtedly the best of the four Brothers, pious, charitable, a Lover of Justice and the Publick Good, respectful to the Churches and Prelates; but inconstant, timorous, suspicious, and easy to be flattered, and transported with Choler, which but too frequently gave him cause to repent.

*Childebert* now grown very potent by the Death of his Uncle, thought to have made an easy Prey of young *Clotair*, and his Mother *Fredegonde*, who was hated by all the *French*; but this subtil and courageous Woman sparing no Cost nor Artifice, regained the most alienated Minds, and engaged them to her Service: She appeared every where, carried her Son along with her, and holding him up, sometimes in her Arms, shewed him to the Soldiers and People, which animated them with Compassion for his Innocence. Thus with their faithful Assistance, and the Conduct of *Landry*, Mavor of the Palace, she not only obstructed the Progress of *Childebert's* Army, but defeated them in *Soissonois*, with the loss of 3000 men; tho *Clotair* however could not prevent *Childebert* from tearing away some Towns in the farthest part of his Kingdom. And now *Childebert* having extirpated the *Warnes* or *Garnes*, some-  
time since settled in *Friesland* and *Holland*, who rebelled against him; he and his Wife the following year were both snatched out of the World near the same time, in the 25th year of his Age, and 20th of his Reign, being succeeded by his two Sons, *Theodebert* in *Austrasia*, and *Thierry* in *Burgundy* and the Kingdom of *Orleans*.

394.

*Childebert's Death.*

395.

All the Kingdoms of *France* being now in the hands of three minor Kings, under the tutelage of two Women, viz. *Brunehaud* and *Fredegonde*, the last more active and fortunate than the other, took the Field to regain *Paris*, and other Places taken by *Childebert*, which was happily effected; but she died not long after at the Age of 50 or 55. leaving her Son's Affairs in a condition to defend themselves alone. And now for the other Virago *Brunehaud*, after she had removed the *Huns* by the force of Money out of *Thuringia*, she proved



Wars be-  
tween the  
Kings.

ed extreme covetous, and her Revenge tending  
wards the filling of her Coffers, she laid  
the Lives of the wealthiest Subjects, and, amo  
thers, Duke *Wintrion* suffered; but her Con  
last grew so unsupportable to the *Austrasians*, t  
haled her by force to the Frontiers of the *Ka*  
clothed only in Rags, and there leaving her,  
man that knew her, conducted her to her Son *Tn*  
*Chaalons*, who received her both with Joy and In  
tion together, and bestowed the Bishoprick of *A*  
upon her Conductor. The two young Brothers  
while could not forget the loss of *Paris*, and  
Places upon the *Seine*, which *Clotair* had forced  
them, and therefore they resolved to attack him  
*Clotair* bravely meeting them upon the Banks  
*Arouane*, gave them battel, but unhappily lost t  
and almost 30000 men, and fled to *Paris*, the  
the Forest of *Arelaune*. In short, he was force  
fear of losing all, to yield to them the greatest  
his Kingdom; all that lay between the *Loire* an  
*Seine*, as far as the Sea, being given to *Thierry*,  
*Theodebert* the Dutchy of *Dentelen*. However,  
these Controversies the *Gascoigns* planted themse  
that part of *France*, since called according to  
Name.

Brunc-  
haud's In-  
trigues.

*Brunehand* had all the Power in young *Th*  
Court, and not only made him taste of all sorts of  
sure, whereby to preserve her Authority, but  
Great Grandmother her self, yet would taste  
the Pleasures of Love with a young Lord name  
*tades*, of *Roman*, i. e. of *Gaulish* Extract, wh  
must needs raise to the high Office of Mayor  
Palace, and therefore got *Bertoald*, the then  
to be sent to gather the Imposts in *Neustria*, ne  
taken from *Clotair*; where being opposed, and p  
by *Landry* as far as *Orleans*, *Thierry* himself ca  
support him, and engaging in a Battel at the Pal  
the *Estampes*, tho *Landry* was there utterly r  
yet *Bertoald* being killed, *Brunehand* had her desir  
she confer'd his Employment upon *Protades*.

*Theodebert* had at the same time taken the F  
gainst *Clotair*, to whom he grants a Peace, desir  
preserve him for a time of need against his Br  
Thu

Thierry, who likewise, and perhaps upon the same consideration, did sometime after make his Accommodation with *Clotair*. Old *Brunehand* being all this while uneasy for the Outrage she received by *Theodebert*, or his Lords, excited *Thierry*, under pretence he was not his Brother, but a Gardiner's Son, to take up arms to deprive him both of his Crown and Life: As the Armies were encamped near each other, the King's Vassals desirous of an Accommodation, slew *Theodebert* in his Tent for opposing it. His Death *Brunehand* revenged so severely upon the Authors of it, that the Bishop of *Lyons* thought himself obliged by his Episcopal Office to make some publick Remonstrance of it to her, the effect of which was, that this second *Theodebert* caused him first to be degraded and banished, and two years after he was stoned to death by her Guards. Not content with this, she opposed the King's marrying with the Daughter of *Bertric* King of the *Frisians*, and because the Abbot *Colomban*, from a Principle of Conscience, would have promoted it, she procured his Banishment, as she did the Death of *Bilichis*, the Wife of King *Theodebert*, and the War that was now kindled between the two Brothers. *Theodebert* was indeed a Prince more stupid and cruel than *Clotair*, and began it to his own Misfortune; for having taken *Alasia* and *Sungow* from *Tergow* and *Thi-*

*Wars be-*  
*tween the*  
*two Bro-*  
*thers.*

Thierry  
poisoned,  
&c.

612.

must expect to be forced to it. But *Clotair* ha-  
scuffed at his Threats, he made all his Forces in  
that way, when a sudden Death put a period to all  
Designs, and made his Army retire home again.  
must know he having a design to marry his Brother's  
Daughter *Bertoaire*, and *Brunehaud* taking upon her  
disswade him from it, he severely reproached her  
all the wicked Actions she had put him upon,  
would then, had he not been held, have run  
thro; but she cunningly dissembling her Resentment  
took a fit time to poison him, whereby he died,  
he had reigned 17 years, and lived 26. He had  
Bastard Sons, of whom *Sigebert* had the Kingdom of  
*Austrasia* left him, and *Childebert* that of *Burgundy*.  
*Brunehaud*, for the preservation of her Authority  
was forward to have this Distribution continued;  
some *Austrasian* and *Burgundian* Lords assuring Clotair  
of their Suffrages, he marching thitherward accom-  
panied by his Godson, she sent to warn him out of *Austrasia*, her God-  
son's Territories. But he answered, the Succession  
after *Thierry's* Death, belonged to him, to the exclu-  
sion of Bastards, and protested to stand to the Judgment  
of the Lords of those Kingdoms; but she  
willing to trust to that, sent *Sigebert* with an Army  
far as the Plains of *Chalons* to oppose him; and when  
they were ready to engage, *Sigebert's* men, upon  
Signal given, instead of a Charge sounded a Retreat,  
and when they were got to the Banks of the *Saône*,  
they delivered him up, with his Brothers *Corby* and  
*Meroveus*, to *Clotair*, while *Childebert* saved himself  
by the Swiftness of his Horse, tho it was never known  
what became of him. *Brunehaud* was also soon  
in the Castle of *D'Urbe*, and the same moment  
*Childebert* and *Corby* had their Throats cut; but *Meroveus*,  
who was *Clotair's* Godson, had his Life spared,  
he was made a Monk. That done, *Brunehaud*, at a  
Military Assembly being cried out against, as deserving  
Death, and the most exquisite Torments, she was  
tormented for three days, then led thro the whole Camp upon  
a Camel, and afterwards fastened to the Tail of an  
unbacked Mare, who beat out her Brains, and dragged  
her over Stones and Briers, tore her in pieces; others  
say she was tore in pieces by four wild Horses.

The ter-  
rible Death  
of Brune-  
haud.

613.

Thus for the second time were all the parts of *France* Clotair  
 joined to one hand, tho' *Austrasia* and *Burgundy* King a-  
 lone. would still retain the title of Kingdoms and distinct

Officers. Clotair therefore, after having quieted some  
 domestic Jars, and having no more Enemies, made it  
 his whole business to regulate his Kingdom, and esta- His good  
 blish Law and Justice: Such as had been unjustly dis- Actions.  
 possessed, he restored to their Estates; he abolished Im- 614, &c.  
 positions laid without the Peoples Consent by *Brunchand*  
 and *Thierry*, recalled all exorbitant Grants, resumed  
 all that had been usurp'd or alienated from the Demesnes  
 of the Crown: Likewise, that he might keep peace  
 abroad, he discharged the *Lombards* of the 12000  
 Crowns of Gold owing him for Tribute, provided  
 they paid down only what was due for three years.

Queen *Bertrude*, an excellent Princess, dying Anno  
 610. and the King having married *Sichilda*, he grew  
 so jealous of her, that he caused the Lord *Boson* to be  
 put to death upon that account. However, he neglect-  
 ed not to take care of the Education of his Son *Dago-*  
*bert*, whom he committed to the Tuition of *Arnold*  
*Bishop of Metz*. But as *Austrasia* was more exposed  
 to barbarous Nations than the other parts of *France*, *Dagobert*  
*Clotair* gave this Kingdom to *Dagobert* under the Guar- made King.  
 antship of *Pepin* the old, who was Mayor of the Pa-  
 lace, and *Arnold Bishop of Metz*; but reserved to

628.

The Saxons by this time were grown a  
 ple, bearing different Names, and having Du  
 Country ; and those of them that owed Tri  
*French*, this year revolted : So that *L*  
 ing war upon them, was wounded with a  
 which cut off part of his Helmet, and a  
 of the Skin of his Head, with some of  
 insomuch that 'tis laid, when he sent these  
 bloody to his Father, who was hunting near  
 the King moved by his good nature, drew wh  
 he could together, and having passed the  
 tacked the Saxons incamped on the other si  
*Wefer*, where he slew *Bertold* their Duke with  
 Hand, and then scouring all the Country,  
 any one of them alive that was taller th  
 It happened about this time in the Assembly  
 of *Neustria* and *Burgundy* held at *Clichy*, there  
 a great Quarrel : *Eginairus* Intendant of *Ariben*  
*lace*, K. *Clotair's* second Son, having been slain  
*na's* People, the Favourite of this King, the  
 Prince and his Uncle *Brunulph* would revenge his  
 so that *Egina* and his Friends incamping at  
*Martre*, the King commanded the *Burgundians*  
 upon the first that began to stir, which brough  
 Parties to a better temper.

And now we come to close the last Scene of  
*tair's* Life, who died in one of his Houses near  
 in the year 628. and was buried at *St. Vincent*  
 called *St. Germain des Prez* ; the time of his R  
*Neustria*, within four months of the time of  
 being about five and forty years, and his Re  
*France*, after *Thierry's* Death, fourteen. He  
 Sons behind him, *Dagobert* and *Aribert*, of w  
 thers we cannot certainly tell, but only that  
 not both of one and the same Bed. He was  
 Prince, very different from the cruel and brutun  
 ty of his Predecessors, pious, just, of good Lite  
 and liberal, especially towards the Church, and  
 professed a Monastick Life.

Clotair's  
 Death and  
 Character.

CHAP. III.

The Reign of DAGOBERT I.

Dagobert in Neustria, ) Aribert in part of A-  
 Austrasia, &c. } Aquitaine.

PRINCE Aribert being with Clotair at his Death, it might have been thought that in his Brother's absence in *Austrasia*, he should with his Father's Treasure have raised Men and Friends enough to have seized the Kingdom, but he was young, and his Mother's Brother *Brunolph* endeavoured in vain to engage the *Neustrians* in his Quarrel; and he and Aribert had no better way left than to go and meet, and submit themselves to Dagobert, who however out of pity, and according to the Advice of the French Lords, gave him *Santonge*, *Perigord*, *Agenois*, *Tholonsain*, and all the third *Aquitain*; and Aribert made *Tholouse* the place of his Royal Residence.

629.

Now as soon as Dagobert had been acknowledged in *Neustria*, he went to visit *Burgundy*; and being at *St. John de Laone* he heard the Complaints of the People, administred Justice to all his Subjects, and took care to compose their differences; all which it seems were but to cover a villanous Murder, for which perhaps he had undertaken this Journey, for going one Morning to the Bath, he commanded three Lords to kill *Brunolph*, that had attended him thither: And a little time after the young King, at the Instigation of some *Neustrian* Lords, repudiated his Queen *Gormetrude* that was an *Austrasian*, under pretence of barrenness, to marry *Nantilda*, one that served him; by which means *Ega* Mayor of the *Neustrian* Palace, got the Preference in his favour: But *Nantilda* did not long enjoy her Husband's Affections, for the King going to *Austrasia*, and delighting to shew himself with great Pomp in those Provinces, he took the beautiful Virgin *Ragnetrude* in her room; and not long after he married two Women more, called *Wlfegunde* and *Butechilde*, and took as many Mistresses as him-  
 self

Dagobert's  
 Cruelty.

*Covetous.*

self had a mind to. Indeed it was natural Prince of six and twenty amorous, but a Nature that at that Age he should have such a Heart as nothing can satisfy: However upon monstres of St. *Amand*, he somewhat r the heat of his Avarice, and took *Nantila* with whom he lived the rest of his days. mean time having a Son by *Ragetrude* the he married her, the Child was baptized at being held at the Font by *Aribert*, who died at *Tholouse*; and his Son *Chilperic* survived him but a few days, it being suspected *Dagobert* had contributed to his Death, and resume *Aquitain*.

631.

It happening about this time that some Franchs who traded with the *Sclavonians* were and having no Redress, *Dagobert* with the King *Lombards* and Duke of the *Almains*, attacked jointly on the one hand, whilst the *Austrasians* assaulted them on the other; but these latter dissatisfied with *Dagobert*, for removing his Residence to *Neustria*, failed so in their Duty, that the *Austrasians* were emboldened to make Incursions into *Neustria*, and other Countries belonging to the King. But what seemed yet to be a worse action in the war, that about 9000 *Bulgarians*, which were left by the *Avars*, their Enemies in having by *Dagobert's* leave settled in *Bavaria* Estates of the Kingdom considered how to do them; the best Expedient they could find was the Throats of them in one Night, which was but too punctually done, only 700 of them shift to escape into *Sclavonia*.

*A base Massacre by the French.*

But more particularly to King *Dagobert's* Actions; as he was raising great Forces to repel Incursions which King *Samon* with his *Saxons* made into *Thuringia*, the *Saxons* offered to repeat on their own Peril and Charge, if *France* would forgive the 500 Bees Tribute, and the same was accepted; but they wanted either Strength or Faith to performance, and so the Country continued exposed to the Insolency of the *Barbarians*, and having assembled the Prelates and Lords of

the like disorders for the future,  
f and his Kingdom to the

Sal.

n was in Peace, both within and 636.  
; but *Dagobert* did not enjoy this  
the second Year he was taken  
at *Espinay*, one of his Royal Seats  
the below *St. Denis*; and his Sick-  
him, he made them carry him  
e he died on the 17th of *July*, *Dagobert's*  
very near 38 Years of Age, *Death and*  
all but 16 Years; that is by *Character*.  
in his Father's Life ne. and 10 628.



Character in the gross favours of too much Adu  
Indeed the Chronology begins to be very co  
and uncertain in this Reign, for some will ha  
that *Dagobert* died in 639, others in 643; som  
pute the 16 Years of his Reign from his Father's  
others from the Year he was made King of *A*  
and the best Historians are of the Opinion  
latter. Gold and Silver had been very sca  
*France* in the Reign of *Clovis* and his Childre  
after that, the Expeditions made by the *Frei*  
*Italy*, the Pensions they drew from the Em  
the *East*, and 'tis thought the Commerce they  
with the Nations in the *Levant* brought great  
tities thereof, as well as Jewels and the like.  
*France*, insomuch that the bravery and lustre  
Court was not inferior to that of the Emperors

---

## C H A P. IV.

*The Reign of CLOVIS the Seci*

<i>Pepin</i> , and then <i>Gri-</i>	}	<i>Sigebert</i> King in
<i>moald</i> Mayors.		<i>strasia</i> .
<i>Ega</i> , then <i>Erchinoald</i>	}	<i>Clovis</i> 2. in <i>Nei</i>
Mayors.		

638.

**WE** being from hence forward to beh  
Regal Power in the Hands of the Ma  
the Palace; I have for that reason noted t  
well as the Kings. Now *Pepin* who had bee  
Mayor, being delivered by the Death of  
*bert*, who had always kept him near himself,  
some honourable Pretence, got again into that  
in *Austrasia*, the same being surrendred to l  
Duke *Aldagaise*: And *Pepin* presently gave  
thereof to Bishop *Cunibert* his old Friend, wh  
Governour to *Sigebert*; and it was perhaps for  
that he transferred the Court and Royal Seat  
*strasia* from *Metz* to *Cologne*; but he held not his  
now long, for in about a Year after his Re

he fell sick and died. He was indeed a  
 eminent both for his Honesty and Policy; he  
 his Wife *Itra*, or *Inberge* 3 Children, a Son  
*Grimoald*, and two Daughters. Now *Grimoald*  
 Assistance of *Cambert* got himself into pos-  
 the Office of Mayor of the Palace. *Otho*  
 who was Fosterer of the young King, disputed  
 him for 3 Years together; but *Grimoald* at last *Mayoralty*  
 it quietly, caused him to be slain by *Lentair* of the Pa-  
 the *Almans*. This is the first time that the *Lace be-*  
 descended from Father to Son, but hereafter *comes here-*  
 into the same hereditary.

At this discord and minority of *Sigebert*, *Raoul*  
*Thuringia* sets up for Sovereign, against whom  
*Gascon* Lords, together with the King himself,  
 with their Forces thither to chastise him.  
*Earl* in League with *Raoul*, and at the Head  
*Slavonians*, having dared to come and meet  
 was defeated and slain with most of his Men:  
 hereupon retreating with his Forces, was be-  
 in a wooden Castle, upon a Hill nigh the  
*Angstrud*; but a difference hapning between the  
 Commanders, some went upon the attack,  
 the rest remained about the King's Person in  
 All which being observed by *Radulph*, he

After Queen *Nantila's* decease, the most remarkable thing we meet with in King *Clovis* his Reign, is a great Famine, which afflicted *Neustria*, obliged the King to take the great Silver Plates, which covered the Tabernacle or Chappel of St. *Denis* Shrine, to buy Bread for the Poor; a pious Act, and yet the Monks would have it, that verely punished him, by weakening and stupid Spirits: Indeed he had a weak Brain, and all his Descendants were tainted with that defect, but not then above 14 or 15 years old at most.

The Indigency of Authors in those times is such, and the stile of such as are handed down so confused, that we can hardly relate any thing faintly, either as to their Actions, or the time of them. Some place the death of *Sigebert* King of *Austria* on the 1st of Feb. 650. after he had lived little above 21 years: His merciful Disposition, and ten or twelve Abbies which he built, required him a Place in the Roll of the Saints: He was buried in the Abby-Church of St. *Martin* the Suburbs of *Metz*, and thence transferred to *Paris*, when the *French* demolished it to make way for a Siege against the Emperor *Charles V.* in 1552. but one Son, an Infant named *Dagobert*. And *Grimoald* his Mayor of the Palace, gave out, that he had that Child, the King had adopted his name, which is not at all likely, but the rather *Grimoald* did this, that he might have some excuse to usurp the Kingdom, as he really did, when he had disposed things, so as he might under the name of the King for about two years, in which time I find nothing memorable.

650.

But towards the year 653, *Grimoald* imagining 'tis probable, that he had now fully concerted Measures, caused him to be shaven by the *Monks*, banished and transported into *Ireland* under the Guard of some People, who we may suppose had all imaginable Care to keep him concealed, and sent to some remote Monastery; so that it was not till some time before any News was heard of him: In that time his Mother Queen *Jamechild*, betook her

*Dagobert*  
deposed.

653.

the Protection of King *Clovis*, with whom, as also with his Son *Childeric II.* she had a great Interest. This done, *Grimoald* confidently sets up his own Son *Grimoald* on the Throne, and there are Proofs of some Regal, <sup>makes his</sup> as he did; but this Attempt lost him all the esteem <sup>Son King</sup> which the *Austrasians* had for the Memory of *Pepin*, <sup>of Austria</sup> and they abhorred the Mayor and his Son to that degree, that having taken them in some Ambuscades laid <sup>Success.</sup> them, they carried *Grimoald* to *Paris* to *K. Clovis*, who caused him to be put to death; tho others will have it, that he was only confined to a perpetual Imprisonment: However there was no more heard of him, neither is it known what became of his Son, or whether the *Austrasians* chose another Mayor; tho perhaps *Ermold* executed that Office in all the Kingdoms, for since the decease of *Floachut* the *Burgundians* had created none.

Now *Clovis* reigns alone in all the *French* Kingdoms, tho and ed the Regal Power was but very faint; for during these Minorities there being no Authority great enough to curb the Nobility, they audaciously undertook to do what they pleased, and commonly deciding their Quarrels by the Sword, they put the whole Kingdom into a Combustion. And here the Authors of those times accuse *Clovis* of giving himself up to a dissolute Life, as to Wine and Women, and make a

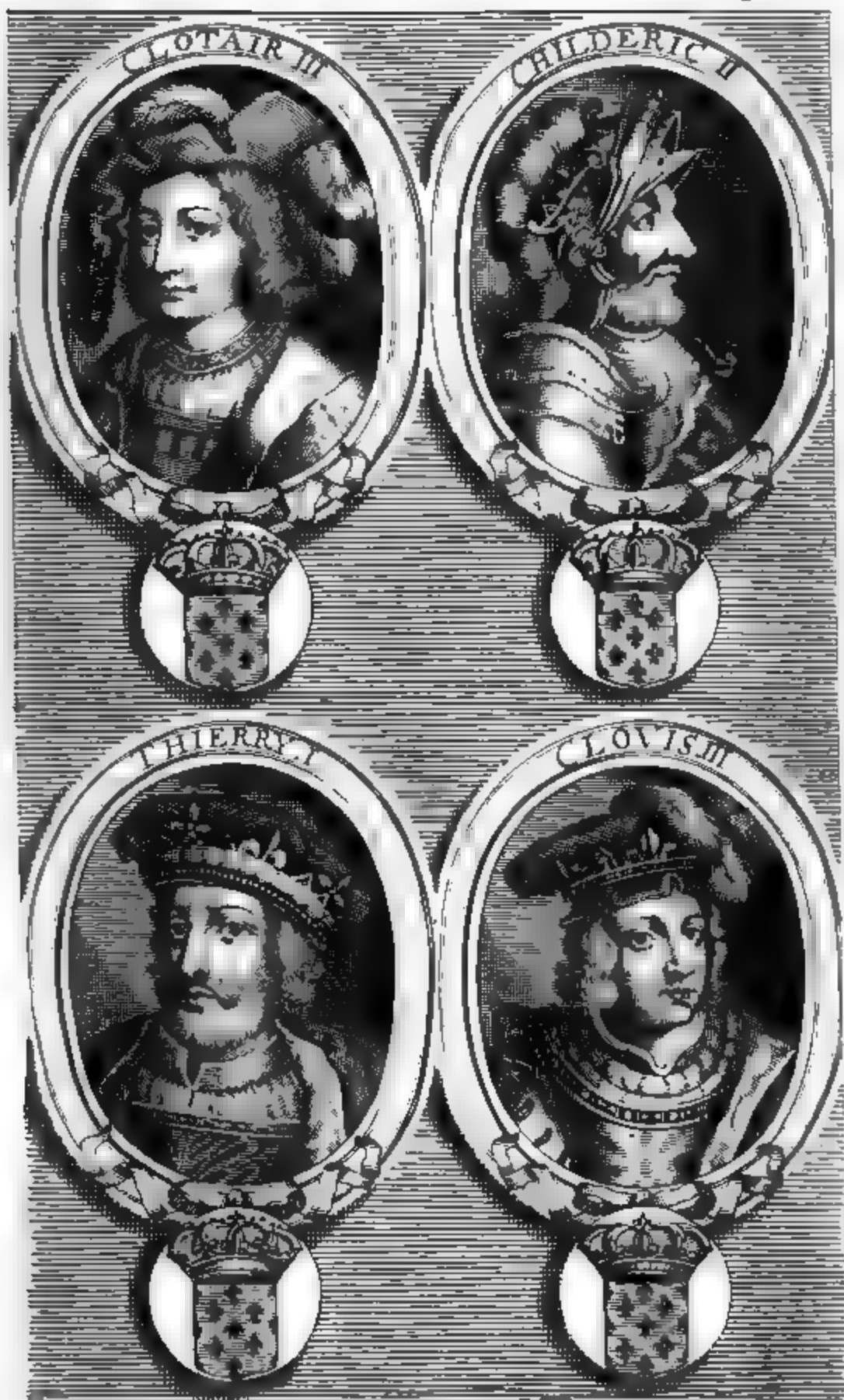
*English Saxon Kings* : By this *Batilda*, *Clovis* 1  
Sons, *Clotair*, *Childeric*, and *Thierry* ; the  
whom had the Kingdoms of *Neustria* and  
and the second that of *Austrasia*, but *Thierry*  
share assigned him.

## C H A P. V.

## The Reign of CLOTAIR II

*Ebroin* Mayor. { *Clotaire* 3. in } { *Chil-*  
                          { *Neustria* and } { *straf-*  
                          { *Burgundy.* } }

655. **T**HE Government of *Erchinoald* Mayor  
Palace ending with his Life, a short time  
before or after that of *Clovis* ; he was succeeded  
*Ebroin*, an active and valiant Person, and for  
loyalty to the Church accounted a good Man ;  
that Reputation he lived for many years. In  
time Queen *Batilda* governed the Kingdom with  
Goodness, Prudence and Justice ; so that for ten  
together there hapned no Trouble in her Son's  
Now before her time the *Gauls*, as well the  
that lay in their Cradles, as their Fathers, paid  
Tribute by way of Poll, which restrained men  
marrying, or caused them to expose their Children  
which the good Queen discharged them, and  
the *Jews* to buy and export such innocent Children  
way of Traffick into Foreign Parts ; nay she  
perceiv'd that those Infidels had already purchas'd  
there was she less careful for the Affairs of the  
for the Princes for some time past having  
money for Ecclesiastical Preferments, and  
selling by retail what they bought by the whole  
forbad such sacrilegious Traffick, founded  
pious Houses, and endowed divers Churches ;  
for all she did in reality give too much Account  
Bishops either for the good of the Church or her  
Reputation.





Among the rest there were two in great esteem, viz. *Deposed,*  
*and why.*  
 the Bishop of *Aurum*, and *Sigebrand*, which last was  
 the Cause of so much ill Report concerning the Queen,  
 that the Grandees got him put to death, without form  
 of Law; the Consequence of which was the deposing  
 the Queen herself from her Authority, wherein those  
 whom she had most gratified with her Favours, became  
 a Party; so that she was conducted to the Nunnery of  
*Quilly*, of which she was the Foundress, wherein of  
 the Queen, she became a simple Nun, and yet was more  
 notorious in her Humility, than she had been in all  
 her exalted Grandeur, and there she lived till 686,  
 'Tis thought *Ebroin* was at the bottom of the whole  
 Conspiracy, who now set the Reins loose to his Avarice  
 and Cruelty, and above all hated the Bishop of *Clotaire*  
*III. dies.*  
*Aurum* the Queen's Creature, and him that was best a-  
 ble to oppose his Designs. K. *Clotaire* having been a-  
 bout three years in the Power of this wicked Mini-  
 ster, died in the 14th of his Reign, Ann. 668. with-  
 out any Children, tho he was then 17 or 18 years  
 old.

## CHAP. VI.

*The Reign of CHILDERIC II.*



Thierry  
deposed.  
669.

Childeric  
dissolute.

ary but the Horns of the Altar, from which he took him, and confined him only to a Monastery, and at the same time shaved King Thierry, him Prisoner to the Monastery of St. Dennis, had reigned near a year in *Neustria*. And on the fifth time, the whole Monarchy of *France* united under one Head in the Person of *Charlemagne*, while *Wlfoad* remained Mayor in *Austrasia*, and bore, if not the Title, at least the Office in *Northern* and *Burgundy*. The good Laws of former Kings, by this time been much corrupted, it was that the Judges, Counts and Dukes should observe ancient Customs of the Country, and those Employments should not be perpetual, lest they should become tyrannical: But some wicked Favourites brought the young King, by plunging him into the Debauchery of Wine and Women, on to violate them, without Knowledge and against the Opinion of *Leger*; his Enemies for all that imputing the same to him, were obliged in his own Justification, to use the King's Freedom, and threaten him with Divine Vengeance for the Enormities he was guilty of; but the Favourites having still the Ascendency, this did but heighten the displeasure of his Prince against him. Inasmuch as *Childeric* being at *Autun* to celebrate the Feast of the Assumption, and his Sycophants persuading him that the Bishop of *Autun* and one *Hector* Patrician of *Marseilles* had conspired against him, he furiously ran into the Baptistery to kill him: Upon this, they endeavouring to save themselves by flight, *Hector* was killed by the way, and the Bishop taken and confined to *Luxen*, where he was reconciled to *Ebroin*; the Wolf and the Lamb living together under the same Roof, for fear of a terrible Power, and because they had nothing to decide betwixt them.

But the good Bishop had not been there long, before the King sent two Dukes to drag him out, and hurry him to Court to be sacrificed to his Revenge; and about the same time having caused the Lord *Bodillon* to be tied to a Post and whipped, the Nobility resented this outrage as if done to themselves; and therefore conspired to waylay him in his return from hunting in the Forest of *Lochonia*, *Bodillon* the most furious of all the rest, was

own hand massacred him with his Queen *Bilechild*, Childeric was big with child, as also a Son of theirs that *slain*.  
 very young. However *Wlfoad*, Mayor of the *673*  
*Franks*, made his escape strangely into *Austrasia*. The  
 time of this King's Reign is not certain, tho the  
 probable opinion is, that it was fifteen years in  
*Austrasia*, and three in *Neustria* and *Burgundy*. Not  
 many years since, as they were repairing the Church of  
*German des Prez*, they found two Tomb-stones by  
 another, in one the Body of a Man, and in the  
 other a Woman's with a little Child, and the Inscripti-  
 on bearing *Childeric's* Name. This, with some Regal  
 Ornaments therein, discovered them to be the Tombs  
 of this King and Queen.

This tragical Death was followed by an *Interregnum*, *An Inter-*  
 and Confusion in the three Kingdoms. The Nobles *regnum*.  
 conducted Bishop *Leger* to *Autun*, where the Citizens  
 and Lords of *Burgundy* made a League to defend him,  
 in case any Attempt should be made upon his Life during  
 this *Interregnum*. It's indeed now likely that most of  
 the *Austrasians*, by the perswasion of *Immichilda*, *Sige-*  
*bert* the Second's Wife, recalled her Son *Dagobert* be-  
 fore-mentioned out of *Ireland*, and acknowledged him  
 King of *Austrasia* many years; whereas the Lords of  
*Neustria* and *Burgundy*, that they might not fall into  
 an Anarchy, took *Thierry* out of the Monastery of  
*S. Denis*, set him on the Throne, and for Mayor of

## C H A P. VII.

## The Reign of THIERRY I.

<i>Leudesia</i> , then	{	<i>Thierry</i> in <i>Neu-</i>	{	<i>Dagobert</i> in
<i>Ebroin</i> May- ors.		<i>stria</i> and <i>Bur-</i> <i>gundy</i> .		<i>strasia</i> .

*Ebroin's*  
*ill Proceed-*  
*ings.*

**E***broin* having left *Luxen*, threw off his Religious Habit, a thing in those days look'd upon to be very hainous, tho a man took it up by Compulsion; and having formed a design to seize upon the Government again, he drew together as many of *Leger's* Enemies as he could, and making a League with *Willi* Mayor of *Austrasia*, who was a mortal Hater of *Bishop*, he took the Field, and suddenly fell into *Nestor* to surprise *Thierry* and *Leudesia*; but failing the Enterprize, he applied himself to Policy, and under colour of an Accommodation, having engaged *Leudesia* to come to a Conference, he laid an Ambush for him on the way, where he was assassinated; but for all his failing of getting himself restored to his Office, when he was returned to *Austrasia*, he, by the advice of the two deposed Bishops of *Chalons* and *Valence*, spread a Report that *Thierry* was dead; in order to impose upon the Nation; and with this Statue he proceeded to force the People to swear Fealty to him, and ruin all those Countries that refused. He more particularly by the Duke of *Campaigne* attacked *Leger* in *Autun*, and when the Bishop could by no means be brought to betray his Trust by a Surrendry, he was at last necessitated to go out and surrender himself to the Duke, who caused his eyes to be put out, and confin'd him in a Monastery. The Grandees of *Neustria* and *Burgundy*, as it were losing all Courage, hereupon accepted *Ebroin* for Mayor of *Thierry's* Palace, when having no more need of his false *Clovis*, he took off his Vizard and returned him to a private condition. *Ebroin* be-

th

in Power, his Tyranny had no bounds; and by other Methods, he, under a specious pretence of his Cruelty as far as he pleased, applied to detect all that had a hand in *Childeric's* tho none rejoiced more at it than himself; among others, *Leger*, and his Brother Count *Gue* brought in, he caused the last to be stoned to a Stake, and the other to have the Soles of his feet torn out, and his Lips cut, and then he was kept for two years under one of his Guards to the very of *Feschamp*. Not content herewith, he afterwards called an Assembly of Bishops (many of whom were but too ready to flatter and counsel him in his Tyranny) and besides the Punishments inflicted upon some other Prelates, against whom he had a particular Peak, he procured them to condemn him to have his Garment tore from top to bottom, which was the manner of Degradation, and afterwards delivered him over to be put to death, which was executed by *Crudebert* Count of the Palace, in the year of *Iveline*.

679.

At this time died *Dagobert* King of one part of *King Dagobert*, after an ill Reign, as some will have it; tho *Dagobert's* authors make him to live many years longer, and *Death*. to him a Son and Daughter, without any proofs 680. fainty: And a little before his Decease, *Wilfoad* terminated his Days after he had enjoyed his

Ebroin  
lain.  
682.

less taken the Reliques; but when they had got there, *Ebroin's* Soldiers surrounded him and his Men and cut them all to pieces: So that now the whole Government of *Austrasia* remained in *Pepin*. However *Ebroin* did not long survive to enjoy the benefit of Victory; for having unjustly and tyrannically dispossessed the Lord *Hermenfroy* of his Estate, armed for Revenge, the said Lord watched him one morning before break of day, at his going from home to Church and cleaving his Head with a Sword, afterwards his escape into *Austrasia*. He was succeeded by *Varaton*, a wise old Man, who associating his Son *Remer*, a crafty, bold, rough and choleric Person, to the Administration, he presently breaks the Treaty on foot by his Father with *Pepin*, and marches as far as *Namur*, and at his return was seized with a Distemper whereof he died; which made way for the restoring of the old Man to his Office again, tho' *Dagobert* dispossessed him also in about a year after, being succeeded by *Berthier*, his Wife's Son-in-law, a little ill-shaped, hair-brain'd, unjust, proud, covetous Fellow that had neither Wit nor Judgment, which made the *Neustrians* forsake him the very next year, and enter into an Alliance with *Pepin*.

Pepin  
Mayor, and  
his great  
Alliance.

This Lord advised the exiled Persons to send to the King to implore a Pardon for what was past, in a very submissive manner; and when the same was rejected, he brought them back to their own Country with an Army, and fought *Thierry* and his Mayor at *Torcy* between *St. Quentin* and *Peronne*, wherein he was favoured with a compleat Victory, seized the King's Treasure, and then *Paris* and *Thierry* himself in upon which *Berthier*, on whom all the *Odium* justly fell, was knocked on the head. Some put an end to the Reign of the *Merovignians* here, since all but the Title of King fell into the power of *Pepin* and his Children. He was owned Mayor of the Palace thro' all *France* and took upon himself the Title of Duke or Commander of the *French*, according to the antient usage of the *Germans*, and he commanded and acted all under the King's Name. The *French* found no prejudice by this Change, the Interest of a new Prince, who desired to establish himself, being to gain the Affections of the People.

And indeed he repaired the Breaches made in  
 Reigns all he could, restored what had been  
 in the Church, the Bishops to their Sees, the  
 to their Lands and Dignities, resolved upon  
 without the advice of the Lords and Bishops,  
 in the Cause of the Oppressed, Widows and  
 and applied himself to give vigour to the  
 which are the only Shields for the Weak against  
 any. The second year of his Command he  
 the Militia together, and by the advice of the  
 he made War in *Friesland*, where he compelled  
 the or *K. Rarod*, who had revolted, to submit  
 to Tribute; and at his return he called a Coun-  
 sider of means for redressing the Abuses of  
 Government. But to close this Reign, poor *Thi-*  
*erry* stripp'd of the exercise of all Regal Power,  
 reduced to be content with a moderate Revenue  
 he ended his days in 690, or 91. having lived  
 40 years, and reigned 17. He left two Sons  
 and him, *Clovis* and *Childbert*, who succeeded

*Thierry's*  
*Death.*  
 690.

---

## C H A P. VIII.

free, while on the other hand, the *Aquitani* and *Gascogners*, created each a Sovereign Duke of their own, and the *Bretons* enlarged their narrow Limits. *Clovis*, according to some, reigned but two years, tho others, with more probability, assign him four compleat, he dying about the end of 694, or beginning of 695. at the Age of about 15, and neither had seen or done any thing that was memorable in his Reign.

---

BOOK

---







---


B O O K III.

---

## C H A P. I.

## Reign of CHILDEBERT II.

LOVIS was succeeded by his Brother *Childebert*, called the Young, and who because of his Minority, was yet reduced to a lesser scantling of Allowance than his Brother had. The Great Officers, as the Count of the Palace, the Chancellor, Intendant of the Royal Houses, with the Mayor, the King having only a small number of Domesticks, who served rather as Spies and than Officers: Nay, these Kings were usually shut up to a House of Pleasure, from whence they came forth once a year to shew themselves to the people in the Assembly of the Estates held the first of May. There happening very little remarkable for the first part of this King's Reign, besides



*Willehair*, who was beaten in two Expeditions thither by *Pepin*: But not being able to subdue the Country, he found it necessary to send a third Army thither; but when they were on march, he was obliged to recall them, because of *Childebert's* Death, which happened April 15, the Age of 28, when he had reigned 16 or 17 years. Some attribute two Sons to him, viz. *Dagobert* and *Childeric*; the first succeeded him, and the second was bred up to Learning, and surnamed *Daniel*.

Childe-  
bert's  
Death.  
711.

## CHAP. II.

### The Reign of DAGOBERT

UPON the Decease of *Childebert*, *Pepin* was chosen by the choice of *Dagobert* his eldest Son to succeed him by the Counsel and Approbation of the States. after he had caused him to preside, and that he received the Presents of the *French*, recommended of the Rights of the Church, of Widows and renewed the Law against Rapine, and commanded his Army to hold themselves in a readiness to go on any occasion required, he sent him back to one of the Royal Palaces, to be bred and entertained in all appearance with great respect, tho in reality he had no Power nor Function.

712. *Pepin*, the first year of his Reign, undertook an Expedition against the *Germans*, whom he found at this time, that they remained quiet many years. but not being able after many Wars wholly to subdue *Ratbod* Duke of *Friesland*, he not only carried no agreement, but likewise allied himself to him by marrying his Son *Grimoald* to that Prince's Daughter. while *Pepin* remained at *Fupile*, he fell into a troublesome Distemper, and his Son *Grimoald* visited him, and passing by *Liege* to make some journey for him on St. *Lambert's* Tomb, he was assassinated by a Rascally *Frieslander* named *Rangaire*, which on some occasion to attribute the Fact to *R*

Father-in-law, without any authority for it: But *Pepin* being recovered, severely revenged his Son's Death upon all the Accomplices he could lay hold on, and the rather, because he loved him the best of any of his Sons, tho he had also a great regard for his natural Son *Theodoald*, and obliged the *Neustrian* Nobility to chuse him for their Mayor. However, *Pepin*, some months after, fell into a most grievous Relapse, inso much that he departed this Life Decemb. 16. hav- *Pepin's*  
ing governed all *France*, from the Battel of *Terry* in *Death and*  
687. to his dying Day, with great Success, but with *Character*  
much greater Vertue, of which the most eminent was 714  
his Zeal for the propagation of the Faith, wherein he spared no means to plant it in the Countries beyond the *Rhine*, whose Inhabitants were at this time Heathens and Idolaters. Besides *Drogon* and *Grimoald*, he had two Sons more, who were *Charles Martel* and *Childerbrand*; but the Mother of the last is not known; tho a very exact Historian has proved that *Robert* the strong, who was the paternal Great Great-Grandfather of King *Hugh Capet*, was descended from him by the Masculine Line.

Now whether *Pepin* left the Mayoralty of *Austrasia* to *Arnold* the Son of *Drogon*, as that of *Neustria* to *Theodoald*, or that changing his mind a little before his Death, he bestowed the Office upon *Charles* for all the three Kingdoms, or perhaps only the Name of Prince of the *French*, which seems to be above that of Mayor, his Widow *Plectrude* seiz'd upon the whole Government, and by a Stratagem getting *Charles* into her hands, she kept him prisoner at *Cologne*, where she usually resided. But the *Neustrians* already weary of the Dominion of the *Austrasians*, were yet more impatient of being governed by a Woman; and therefore taking up Arms, they put their King *Dagobert* at the head of their Troops, to prevent her coming in the name of *Theodobald* to usurp the Government of their Country. Now the Army that conducted *Theodobald* being near *Compeign*, the *Neustrians* fell upon and routed them, all the *Austrasians* could do being only to save *Theodobald*, while the other after their Victory chose *Rainfroy* for their Mayor, a Man of the most considerable Quality and Valour amongst them, and who the  
more

more to perplex the *Austrasians*, made a League w<sup>th</sup> *Ratbod* Duke of the *Frisians*, and led K. *Dagobert* ravage *Austrasia* as far as the *Meuse*.

715. It happening therefore that the *Austrasians* at time were in a great Consternation and Confusion, *Charles* luckily made his escape out of prison, and having got his Friends together, was received with incredible Joy by all his People. And about the end of same Year *Dagobert* King of *Neustria* dying, after he had been a Property to the Mayors for four or five y<sup>rs</sup> he left one Son named *Thierry*, yet an Infant, be-  
 him; and the same was afterwards surnamed *Chelles*, the Place where he was brought up: And immediately hereupon, *Rainfroy*, that he might have a Name, under which he might maintain his Office and Government, took *Daniel* out of the Monastery, made King with the Concurrence of the Nobility, named him *Chilperic*. Indeed it is not certainly I whose Son he was, some believing him to have *Childebert's*, others *Thierry's*, and some again that of that *Childeric* who was assassinated by *B* Anno 673. But if this last Opinion prevail, he least forty four years old when he began his Reign.

Dagobert  
by Death  
and Suc-  
cessor.

### C H A P. III.

#### The Reign of CHILPERIC II.

*Chilperic II.* in *Neu-*  
*stria.*

*Rainfroy* Mayor.

*Charles*, Mayor  
Prince in one part  
*Austrasia.*

*Theodobald* under  
*trude's* Regency  
the other.

716. *R*ainfroy and *Ratbod*, by virtue of a League the preceding year, fell both upon *Charles*; the last having entered his Country as far as *Combranch*, they engaged in a very bloody Battle, proved at last disadvantageous to *Charles*;

### 3. *The Reign of Chilperic II:*

51

ost the only Defeat he met with in the whole of his Life. Hereupon the *Friezlanders* and *as* with joint Forces ravaged the open, and laid Siege to *Cologne* where *Plectrude* so with Money caused them to draw off. in the mean time having rallied his Men, Charles ambushed for *Rainfroy* in his Return, beat and *successful* d part of his Army, and next Year in his turn Irruption into *Neustria*, where *Rainfroy* and giving him Battel at the Village of *Vincial* in *refis* upon the 20th of *March*, the same after a success for a long time ended in Charles's favour he put *Rainfroy* to the rout, and pursued it as far as *Paris*. At his Return *Austrasia* him for their Head, *Cologne* opened him her and *Plectrude* was forced to give him up his *Pepin's* Treasure, together with his Grand *Theodobald*, *Hugh* and *Arnold*, whom he kept strong Guard: But tho he had all these Advantages yet wanting the Name of a King, he gave it to one *Clotair*, who was of the Royal and is supposed by some to be the Son of *III.* not long since deceased, tho perhaps he we been the Son of *Clovis II.* the Son of *Dago-*

*Rainfroy* finding but little Assistance from the

too much accustomed to that Name to lay it as if he made Peace with *Eudes*, and got *Chilperic* b whom he caused to be owned for King thro all three Kingdoms, that so he might be Mayor o Pope *Gregory* calls him Duke and Mayor of the lace of *France*, which shews he esteemed himself an Officer of the Kingdom, and not of the King.

Now of all the People tributary to *France*, *Saxons* were the most potent ; for they had not thrown off the Yoke, but bore hard upon the *Bri Attuarii* and the *Thuringians*, which brought *M* with his Forces 3 or 4 times thither to quell t tho that Honour was reserved for *Charles* the Gr And here 'tis worthy of Observation, that they divided into several distinct People, and that they almost as many Dukes as there were Countries b ing to them. *France* also during this Prince's R began to be incommoded with the Arms of the *Acens* from *Spain*, where they had fixed a Com but of them you will hear more by and by, an shall only conclude this Chapter with the D

Chilpe-

ric's death.

721.

*Chilperic*, who lived not above two Years after re-establishment, and reigned five or six in all.

## C H A P. IV.

### The Reign of THIERRY II.

**C**HILPERIC was no sooner dead, but C that would ever have an Image to amuse the ple, caused *Thierry* or *Theoderic* II. the Son of *Albert* II. to be inaugurated King ; and when he duced *Rainfroy*, and put him to death or at least him from his Mayoralty of *Neustria*, he had or five Years together divers Wars with the  *Germans* and *Bavarians* ; and in 725. he re *Hubert* Duke of *Bavaria* and all his Country, carried along with him *Biltrude* and her Niece child ; the first of whom is thought by some to be same with the forementioned *Plestrude*, that had

drawn hither, to procure him fresh troubles ; tho' she seems rather to have been Sister to *Odillon* Duke of *Neustria* ; but whoever she was, *Martel* some time after married her Niece.

After divers Wars against the People beyond the Rhine, happened that against *Aquitain*. Duke *Eudes* having violated the Treaty with *Charles*, and made a League with *Munux* the *Saracen*, who was Governor of the Spanish Countries on this side the *Hebrus*, but revolted from *Isam* the Caliph ; *Charles* having Intelligence hereof falls suddenly into *Aquitain*, and sacked the Country as far as the *Garonne* : But *Abderamen* General to the Caliph *Isam* in Spain, having vanquished and taken *Munux* Prisoner, fell into *Aquitain* also, ravaged the Country, and sacked *Bordeaux*, which made *Eudes* reconcile himself to *Martel*, and go and join his Forces with him ; but *Abderamen* would not allow him time, for pressing still forwards, he passed the River *Dordogne* to attack him in his Camp ; the Duke stood his Ground, and fought with exceeding great bravery, but at last was overcome with great loss, however he made a shift to retreat with some few Troops to *Martel's* Army now past the *Loire*, and incamped near *Tours*, tho' others will have it to be a little on this side *Poitiers*. In the meantime *Abderamen* following his Blow when he had sacked *Poitiers*, marched directly to *Tours* ; but



ken Camp, they did not pursue them.

This News was soon dispersed into all the Countre of *Christendom*, and wrought unspeakable Joy in Hearts of the People in all parts, as well as gave *Martel* a great Reputation; but he did not use of this great Advantage as he might have done for instead of pursuing it, he applied himself to secure every thing that cast but the least shadow on his Grandeur, and wrought great confusion in Church by banishing divers Prelates, and best Abbies and Bishopricks upon his Captains.

735. The Kingdom of *Burgundy* did not as yet receive Commands, but it was not long after he conquered the *Saracens* before he marched directly thither, brought all the Country into subjection. With the Expedition he conquered the *Frisons*, killed the Duke *Popon*, subdued the *Ostergow* and *Westergow*, pulled down all their Temples, sacred Groves, Idols, and covered all the Land with Slaughter and Destruction. The Year following the Duke of *Aquitain*, now out of danger, and repenting him of disadvantageous Treaty he had made with *Charles* to procure his Assistance against the *Saracens*, revolted and *Charles* fell a third time into his Country, but not able to catch him, made a great Ravage in Territories, and returned. In the mean time having put an end to the Duke's misfortunes, by which he bestowed upon his Son *Hariton* the County of *Poictiers*, and upon *Humond* all the rest of the first and second *Aquitain*; *Charles* who would have no other Partaker, ravaged it again with an Army, marching quite to the *Garonne* seized upon *Blaye* and some other places, so that *Humond* was forced to submit, and receive the Duchy from him as he had received it from his Father, giving his Oath both to him and to his Son *Pepin*. This done, he not only made sure of his Conquest, and put Governors into *Arles* and *Marseilles*, but from thence turned upon the *Saxons* beyond the *Rhine*, and reduced them so low, that they made no Attempts afterwards for many Years. Now as *Martel* was esteemed an Usurper, there were divers persons loth to obey him; among others, *Maurontius* a young man of *Marseilles*, called in the *Saracens*, and liv-

Martel's  
other Ad-  
ventures.

ed the City of *Avignon* to them, from whence  
spread themselves over *Dauphine*, *Lionnois*, and as  
as *Sens*, with an horrible Desolation: However  
first sending his Brother *Childébrand* to *Avignon*,  
soon after following himself with the main Army,  
took it by Storm, and put all the Infidels to the  
sword, then crossing over *Septimania*, laid Siege to  
*Narbonne*. The *Saracens* in *Spain* being informed of  
the danger the Place was in, made great Levies, and  
sent them by Sea to relieve it; the Troops landed at  
the Lake *Claviere*, and were commanded by the Go-  
vernor of *Terragonne*, against whom *Martel* leaving  
part of the Army with his Brother to maintain the  
Siege, marched, and after a very obstinate Battel near  
*Sigac*, gave them a terrible Overthrow, and slew  
and drowned the greatest part of them: But for all  
this, *Achim* the Governor of *Narbonne's* Courage  
in ways failing him, he defended himself so brave-  
ly that *Charles* left him there, and turning his Forces  
to more easy Conquests, made himself Master of  
*Besiers*, *Agde*, *Maguelonna* and *Nismes*, all which  
were dismanned by him. Much about which time  
happened the Death of King *Thierry* in the 23<sup>d</sup> Year  
of his age, and the 17<sup>th</sup> of his imaginary Reign.  
Now *Martel* having perhaps a design to take the  
Title of King upon him, as he had already the Au-  
thority.

Thierry's  
Death.  
738.

**Martel's  
Death.**

741.

**His Cha-  
racter.**

Roy, but sent him a remarkable Embassy, offered as a Present (if you will believe it) the *Key of St. Peter's Sepulcher*, and the Bonds wherewith been tied; and after that came another which conferred upon him the Sovereignty of *Rome*, and of *Patrician*: But *Charles* (if he had been d thereto) was no longer in a condition for gre terprises, for a troublesome Dis temper now fore him by degrees of his approaching Fate, and t tlement of his Family. He had three legitimate *Carloman*, *Pepin* and *Griffon*; and besides, these natural Children, *Remy*, *Hierosm*, and : Now *Charles* dividing the Estate between his legitimate Children, as if he had been the l: vereign, gave *Carloman* the eldest, *Austrasia*, : and *Thuringia*; to *Pepin* *Neustria*, *Burgundy*, : *Italia* and *Provence*; to *Griffon* a Portion bet two Brothers, made up of some parcels of the Kingdoms. Soon after he ended his Life on the *October*, in the Castle of *Carissy* upon the *Oyse*, in 3 Leagues of *Noyon*, after he had ruled 3 Years in *Austrasia*, and 28 in *Neustria*. As Character of this great Man, the Martial C and great Genius which inclined him to have a his Sword in his Hand to smite his Enemies, : him the Name of *Martel* in History, and tality of Fame: But the Ecclesiasticks, whom severely dealt with, sullied his Memory, and by no means forgive him in the other World. they affirmed, according to the Revelation of *St. I Bishop of Orleans*, that he burned both Soul and in eternal Flames, and that his Tomb havi opened, there was nothing to be found ther huge Serpent, and stinking Blackness, the i his ill State.

How little soever the share of *Griffon* was, Brothers could not endure it, and therefore they ed him in the City of *Laon*, shut him up in the c of *Chateaufort* in *Ardenne*; and having seized Mother *Sonichilda*, allotted him the Abby of C his Subsistence and Prison; and *Theodebald* of *Grimoald* was at the same time taken o World. All those People whom *Martel* had





to their Duty by the Power of the Sword, imagined  
 how upon his Death, it would be easy for them to cast  
 off this Yoke : Particularly *Humond* Duke of *Aqui-*  
*tain*, against whom the two Brothers joining Forces,  
 drove him beyond *Poitiers*, and forced the  
 Earl of *Loches*, so that he sued for Peace; but be-  
 fore the two Brothers left *Aquitain*, they shared the  
 Kingdom between them, or rather what they had  
 taken from *Humond*. But besides this Expedition,  
 the year was very remarkable for the Birth of *Charles* *Charle-*  
*the Great*, or *Charlemain*, the Son of *Pepin*, at *Ingel-main born.*  
*heim* upon the *Rhine*, which was now passed by *Car-* 742.  
*mar* against the *Almans*, whom he brought so low,  
 that their Duke *Timbaut* gave him up Hostages for  
 Pledge of his Faith, and the Tribute he was to have 743.  
 from him.

It seems to have been this Year, or at least the next,  
 that the two Brothers bethought themselves of filling  
 up the Royal Throne with *Childeric* the Witless,  
 justified, as being either really so, or so represented  
 to the People. Some make him to be the Brother of  
*Thierry de Cielles*, others of *Clotair III.* and if so, he  
 must at least have been 17 or 18 Years old.

loss, and so terrified his Camp that they all fled out their Baggage, and the Brothers had full Lin to ravage the Country for two Months tog. From thence *Carloman* marched against the Sax won the Castle of *Hechtsburg*; and *Theodoric* Du that Country solemnly gave him his Faith, th kept it but for a short time, which occasioned ther Expedition into his Country to the great da of it.

**Carloman** Prince *Carloman* having struck his last blow a  
**becomes a** the *Almains*, which was in 746. resolved to quu  
**Benedic-** World in the fifth Year of his Principality: t  
**tine.** therefore given up his Estate with his Son *Di*  
 746. or *Dreux*, into the Hands of *Pepin*, he first wen  
*Rome*, and then became a Benedictine at Moun  
*raete*, and sometime after retired to Mount *Cassin*. I  
 allowed no share of his Dominions to *Dreux*,  
 perhaps at his Brother's Request, he now sets  
 younger Brother *Griffon* at Liberty, and gave hi  
 honourable Allowance; but the Ambition of  
 young Prince not being tamed by a Prison, he  
 his escape, and engaged the *Saxons* in his Qua  
*Pepin* followed him close, insomuch that part of  
*Saxons* being overpowered by him, submitted  
 pleasure, and were baptized; and *Griffon* and  
 rest being incamped on the other side of the Or  
 they for fear deserted their Post in the Night,  
 their Country remained exposed to the Mercy of  
*French*; so that *Griffon* finding himself not safe t  
 retires to *Bavaria*, and seized on that Dutchy:  
 this Country could no more protect him than S  
 for *Pepin* joining *Gold* with his Sword, and Thr  
 soon unhinged his Party; so that now he had no o  
 way but to come in, and submit to his Brother.  
 749. whom he was kindly received, and had the *Ca*  
*Mans*, and 12 Countries in *Neustria* assigned him:  
 he made his Escape a third time the very same Y  
 and cast himself into the Arms of *Gaifre I*  
*Aquitain*.

**Pepin** *Pepin* having gained the better over all his E  
**made** and finding all the Power in his own Hands, after  
**King.** a Parliament that was wholly devoted to him,  
 750. whom he obtained the Title of King; but to

engag

from his Oath and Allegiance, he had recourse to his Friend Pope Zachary, who having need of assistance against the *Lombards*, gave a favourable answer, upon which the *French* calling another Parliament at *Soissons*, degraded *Childeric*, and elected *Pepin*. This the Bishops with *Boniface* Arch-Bishop, not a little promoting, this King and his sons, as if under some Obligation to the Clergy for their Regal Dignity, gave them a great share in the Government. *Childeric* by the same Act was made Monk; and with him ended the first Race of *First Race* Kings of *France*, who if we reckon from 418 to ended, reigned 333 Years, and had 21 Kings, only accounts of *Paris*.

## CHAP. VI.

### The Reign of PEPIN the Little.

AS the Estates of *Soissons* had chosen *Pepin*, they could needs add the Ceremonies of the Church, to state his Royalty, and render it the more sacred, so that he was crowned by the Arch-Bishop of the Cathedral of *Soissons*, and anointed with Oil, according to the Custom of the Kings of

751.



from his Body, but his Sword entred even a way into the Bull's Neck ; then turning his Lords, said with a kind of Heroick Pride you not believe I am worthy to command you ?

258. This King's first Expedition after his Cor was into *Saxony*, which he quickly brought to 300 Horses yearly Tribute ; and at his Return had the News of his Brother *Griffon's* Death having been assassinated in his way to *Italy*, by some of *Pepin's* People, or those of *Gaifre I Aquitain*, who had conceived some jealousy having been too familiar with his Wife.

*Astolphus* King of the *Lombards* having now the Exarchate of *Ravenna*, and so claiming a reignty over *Rome* it self, Pope *Stephen* had recourse to the Protection of *Pepin* ; and going into France, the King sent to desire him to come to Paris a Royal Castle near *Langres* ; but his eldest Son went above 50 Miles to meet him : The King with great kindness (tho he did not walk on his Horses side, as some would have it) and after Conferences, *Pepin* promised him all the Assistance he could, as soon as his Affairs would permit, and in the mean time desired him to repose himself in the Abbey of *St. Dennis* ; and not long after he crowned and anointed *Pepin* and his two Sons with his own Oil, exhorting the People to keep their Faith, and warning them from thence forward with Excommunication if ever they chose a King of any other Race at the end of the Ceremony, *Stephen* declared himself Advocate, or Defender of the *Roman Church*.

Pepin  
crowned by  
Pope Stephen.

In the mean time *Astolphus* foreseeing the Pope would bring the *French* upon him, sends the King's Son *Carloman*, now a Monk, into *France*, to disperse the Storm ; and indeed the Monk pleaded his Cause stoutly in the Parliament of *Crecy*, that it was necessary to send Embassadors to *Astolphus* to endeavour Accommodation. In the mean time *Carloman* espoused the Interest of the *Lombards* too. The King and the Pope consulting together, shut up *Carloman* in a Monastery at *Vienne*, where he died the same Year, and his Sons were shaven for fear they should claim the Estate their Father had once possessed.

## The Reign of Pepin.

61.

Great Preparations for War, and a second Em-  
 ing not enough to remove *Astolphus* from his  
 solution to keep the Exarchate; *Pepin* caused  
 to march, and the Vanguard having seized  
 of the *Alps*, and beaten off the *Lombards*,  
 retired to *Pavia*, where he was soon after  
*Pepin*. At length an Accommodation ensuing  
*Lombards* promising to give up the Exarchate  
 Pope, as soon as the *Frenchmen's* Backs were  
*Astolphus* instead of performing the Stipulation  
 in, the year following went and laid Siege  
 This Infraction obliged *Pepin* to pass the  
 upon which the other decamped, and re-  
*Pavia*, where *Pepin* besieged and prest him  
 that he had no other means to save his Life  
 on, but to take him for Arbitrator of the Dis-  
 between him and the Pope; and you may be sure  
 in favour of the last, notwithstanding the  
*Constantine Copronymus* his Pretensions to, and  
 of the Exarchate, who about this time en-  
 to gain the *French* to his Interest by rich  
 and particularly by a pair of Organs he  
 King at *Compeigne*, which were the first  
 taken in *France*.

He takes  
 the Pope's  
 Part a-  
 gainst the  
 Lombards.

756.

758.

For they changed the time of the General As-  
 which us'd to be held in *March*, but was now

His Con-  
quest of A-  
quitain.

767.

sides, he or his Nobles retained what belonged to the Churches the *French* had in *Aquitain*: Upon this plausible pretence, *Pepin* having suddenly marched into his Country, the Duke was so affected that he promised him full Satisfaction, and gave Hostages: But *Gaifre* instead of performing his promise, ravaged all the Country about *Chassagne*, which so incensed *Pepin*, that he resolved to make perpetual War upon him, till he were subdued; and therefore for several years successively made Expeditions into his Country, and took at last the Duke's daughter in marriage, and by this dance, nay almost all places from him; and in 767, after the General Assembly at *Orleans* he entered *Septimania*, and won the Cities of *Marguelonne*, *Beziers*, *Tholouse*, and all the Cities of *Givaudan* belonging also to *Gaifre*, though not by what Title: He must necessarily have made a long march in the Winter, since he kept his Court at *Vienne*, held the Field-meeting of *May* at *Orleans*, and in *August* descended from thence as far as the banks of the *Garonne*, clearing all the Country of *Gaifre's* Soldiers as skulk'd amongst the Rocks and the Caves of *Auvergne* and *Perigord*.

The King after having kept his Christmas at *Saintes*, crossed *Aquitain* as far as *Saintes*, and in his way met *Remistan* the Brother or Maternal Uncle of the Duke, and caused him to be hanged for breaking his promise to him three years before; and while he was thus employed, they presented to him the Mother, Sister and Son of the Duke's, who this unfortunate Man fled still before them, and being put to a full stop near *Periguenx*, he strained to stake his last Fortune in a Battle, but lost it and his Life soon after, being either killed by the *French*, or even his own Men, who were put an end to their Troubles and the Desolation of the Country.

Pepin's  
Death.

All *Aquitain* being now entirely subdued, *Pepin* was so sick of a Dropsy at *Saintes*, and died at *Saintes* Sept. 24. 768. at the Age of 52 or 54, of which he had reigned 17 and an half, if we reckon from the Day of his Election, supposed to be in the Month of *March* 751. He was survived by his only Son *Charlemagne*.

Greatfoot, the Daughter of Caribert Count by whom he had four Sons, Carloman, Pepin, and Gilles, and three Daughters, Rotaiside and Giselle: His youngest Son was very thrust into the Monastery of Mount Soracte; at three years old, and the Kingdom was divided to the other two, who were crowned in October Carloman at Soissons, and Charles at Noyon. Two Brothers falling into dispute about their share, the Nobility interposed, who obliged them, and determined, by way of Provision to take, Neustria, and the other Austrasia.

## CHAP. VII

Reign of Charlemain, or CHARLES I.  
*surnamed the Great.*

BEING the Discord between the two Brothers, Hunond the Father of Gaifre laying aside his Monastic Habit, assumed the Title of Duke of Aquitaine, and endeavoured to bring the Province to revolt: to whose share it fell, intreated his Brother to

769.

Carlo-  
man's  
Death.

770.

*Charles* for all the Opposition made by the  
gainst it, married *Hildegard*, another of that  
Daughters: *Carloman* was a Prince of a very o-  
morous Spirit, which gave *Charles* a great  
Trouble; but Death happily delivered him, in  
770. of his Brother in the 28<sup>th</sup> year of his  
left two Sons behind him. Hereupon while  
held an Assembly at *Carbonnac*, most part of  
*Astorian* Lords and Prelates came thither to  
ledg him for their King; while *Carloman's*  
withdrew with her Children to *Tassilon* Duke  
*Varia*.

Charle-  
main sole  
King of  
France.

771.

*Charlemain*, now sole King of all *France*, had  
very potent Enemies to deal with, viz. the  
*Huns*, *Lombards*, and *Saracens*. The *Saxons*, a  
warlike and valiant, yet idolatrous Nation, con-  
sisted of several People, but acting by mutual  
gave him work enough for above thirty years;  
which time he made divers Expeditions against  
always with advantage: He never denied them  
but they broke it again as soon as ever he  
sight; neither was he weary of forgiving them  
so much out of desire to allure them to his Ob-  
edience as to bring them under the Yoke of Christ; the  
chief part of his Care having no other end than the  
propagation of Religion. He entered therefore into  
Germany this year, and they disdained not to give him  
battle near *Osnabrug*, where he routed them with  
Slaughter; and pursuing his Victory took the  
*Fresburg*, demolished the Temple of their fa-  
*Irmensel*, and broke his Idol: This is supposed  
to have been *Mars*, whence *Merspur* took its Name  
The King afterwards passing the *Weser*, compelled  
the *Saxons* to give him some Hostages, and having  
*Fresburg*, put a French Garison into it.

In the mean time *Didier* King of the *Lom-  
bards* continuing still at variance with the Pope, after an-  
other Experiments to gain his Point, employed  
himself on several Cities of the Exarchate, ravaged  
the Neighbourhood of *Rome*, and advanced to  
the Pope under pretence of visiting the Sepulcher  
of the holy Apostles, carrying along with him the  
the late King *Carloman* to crown them; this

refused, and failed not to make use of it as a more  
 desperate *Charlemain* more against the *Lombards*.  
 were already some Causes of Enmity betwixt  
 the Kings; for *Charles* in 771 had divorced *Hil-*  
*Didier's* Sister, alledging she was infirm, a  
 that did not please many People; and *Didier*  
 had given reception to *Carlomn's* Widow,  
 promised her assistance in restoring her Sons to  
 Father's Kingdom: These put together, the  
 easily inclined *Charles* to hearken to the Pope's  
 ties. Having therefore rendezvoused his arm at  
 he divided the same into two Bodies, one of  
 under his Uncle *Bernard* marched by the way of  
 Jon, while himself led the other by Mount Ce-  
*Didier* had fortified the Passes, and in case they  
 be lost, he was advanced himself with an his  
 into the Valley of *Aost* near *Turin*, to oppose  
 army; but some of the *Frenes* Army having dis-  
 cepted him, attacked him suddenly in the rear,  
 terrified *Didier* lest he should be hemm'd  
 all sides, that he threw himself into *Pavia*, while  
 his Colleague in the Kingdom went into  
 Those of *Spoletta* and *Riccia* having already  
 him, and sided with the Pope; all the *Marca*  
*ana*, and many other Citys followed their Ex-  
 Hereupon *Charles* with part of his Army in-

773.

*Charles his  
 Expedition  
 against the  
 Lombards.*

Power in all those Countries. *Pavia* at length streightned with Famine, that after *Huno* Firebrand of this War, had been knocked on by the very Women of the Place, *Didier* Wife and Children surrendered himself to *Charles* who was cloistered in *France*, where he died soon after thus was a final Period put to the Kingdom of *Lombardy*, after it had lasted 204 years.

Kingdom of  
Lombardy  
at an end.

*Charles* before his return into *France*, went time to *Rome*, where the Pope with 150 whom he had summoned together for his magnificent reception, and likewise the People of *Rome* conferred upon him the Title of Patrician, with the next degree to the Empire; and farther that *Charles* should have the Power of the In of Bishopricks, and even to nominate the Emperor to prevent those Cabals and Disorders that happen in Elections: Indeed the *Italian* Authors assure that he committed this Right to the *Romans*; but however, he at least reserved to himself the Power of confirming them, which the succeeding Emperors enjoyed without the least Contradiction above.

Charles  
made Patrician, &c.  
at Rome.

Is crowned  
King of  
Lombardy.

774.

*Charles* upon his return was crowned *Lombardy*, at the Borough of *Modece* near *Modena* according to Custom, with an Iron Crown, titled over with a plate of Gold: And then published the following Order in *Italy*: He left the *Exarchate*, the *Pentapolis*, since called *Romagna*, also the *Dutchies* of *Perusa*, of *Rome*, farther *Tuscany*, *Campania*; the *Dutchy* of *Benevento* he conferred on *Aragisa* *Didier's* Son-in-law; that of *Spoleto* on *Hildebrand*, and that of *Friuli* on *Rotgane* upon Conditions only of Homage and Service, but he reserved again to him for want of Heirs Male: He likewise bestowed the Earldoms and Capitainries upon the *Saxons* on terms, but reserved *Liguria*, *Emilia*, *Venetia*, and part of the *Alps* to himself: He imposed a Tribute upon the Cities, and would have the Law be in force there.

He beats  
the Saxons.

The *Saxons* during his absence breaking all in the Country of *Hesse* to Fire and against whom in 775 in the Spring, he in Person, took the Castle of *Siegburg*, rebuilt

rove them upon the *Wefer*, and having soundly  
their Army, he forced them to quit the Post of  
; then dividing his Army into two Bodies,  
d them to the River *Ouvre*, and there received  
his and Hostages of Prince *Halsen* of the *East*-  
and upon his return those of *Vitiking*, and the  
considerable of the Dutchy of *Angria*.

ing all this *Adalgise Didier's* Son, honoured by  
eror with the Title of Patrician, got an Army  
to recover *Lombardy*, and debauched the Duke  
to join with him; but *Charles* hastning thi-  
d having defeated this last in a great Battel,  
ff his Head, and gave the Dutchy to a *French*  
amed *Henry*. The *Saxons* in his absence ha-  
course to Arms, the *French* pursued them with  
Slaughter to the Banks of the *Lipp*; and they  
Intelligence that *Charles* was got into their  
g, they went and prostrated themselves before  
their Wives and Children, and dissemblingly  
Pardon and Baptism, it disarmed his Displea-  
most them.

in *March* following they came from several  
to the General Assembly of *Paderborn* to im-  
Protection, the same being done by *Ibnalara-*  
*gracen* Governour of *Siragossa*, to support him  
usurpation of part of *Spain*. *Charles* dividing



Governor of the *French Coast* towards the Lords of those Countries fearing lest he should inflict upon them: But how the *Spanish* Authors may triumph in this *Count*, *tain Arragon, Navarre, &c.* that is, all betw *Pyrenees* and the *Hebre*, were brought under the *Power* of *Charles*, and that tract of Land was called *Marches of Spain*.

78c. In his absence *Vitiking* Duke of *Angria*, not submitted to him, incited the *Saxons* to a terrible Havock as far as *Mentz* and *Cologne*: were soon beaten by his Troops, yet the follow they gave him Battel at the River *Lipp*, tho Success, which gave him an Opportunity to *Westphalia, Eastphalia*, and *Angria*; and next ther Nations about the *Hore* submitted to him now fearing lest *Italy*, which was went to and was besides molested by Land with the *the Saracens* by Sea, would revolt, he went under pretence of devotion; where the Pope his second Son *Pepin*, and afterwards crowned King of *Italy*, and *Lewis* his younger Son *King of Aquitain*, whom he sent to *Orleans* under the *Ship* of *Arnold*; but *Pepin* staid in *Italy*.

782. *Charles* for some years had held his Generall Court in *Saxony*, and now he had one at the River *Lipp*; and after that and the Audiences of *For* *bassadors* were over, he repassed the *Rhin* *Vitiking* returning from *Denmark* to his own Country caused a rising of the *Saxons* against him, and the People about the *Elbe* and *Saal* being in a Confederacy: And here three of *Charles's* Commanders without staying for *Count Thierry* *peror's* Kinsman, falling rashly and disorderly on the *Enemy*, most of them were cut to pieces, incensed *Charles*, that he would not forgive them, unless they would deliver up 4000 of the most Mutineers to him, all whose Heads he caused to be cut off upon the Banks of the *Alare*; but to hinder them from rising up in Arms the following year with an undaunted Courage, and not contented with one Battel, they attempted another with

*Charles his War with the Saxons.*

They likewise entered divers other misfor-  
 tunes till 785. when their two bravest Leaders *Abdon* Saxons  
 and *Werkon* being disheartened by so much ill For-submit.  
 tune, gave ear to *Charles's* friendly Persuasions, and 785.  
 gave up their Horses, they appeared before the E-  
 mperor at *Paderborn*, and then following him into *France*  
 they were baptized in his Palace of *Aragn*.  
 At the forementioned Assembly at *Paderborn*, *Lewis*  
 King of *Aquitain* came to his Father with all his Forces,  
 often sending for him and his Brother *Peppin*, either  
 when he wanted them, or to call them to an account,  
 thereby to keep them in Subjection. And his Army the  
 year after made an Irruption into *Bretagne*, to bring  
 those Princes to a dependance upon him. In the mean 786.  
 while *Adalgise* was at Sea with an Army, and at the  
 same time solicited his Brother in law *Tassillon* to fall  
 into Italy by Land; having made sure of *Aregisa*  
*Duke of Benevento*, who had married his Sister: But  
 after passing the Mountains the fourth time, and ta-  
 king *Benevento* and *Capua* from *Adalgise*, who would  
 be called King, he quickly brought him to terms, and  
 made him renounce that vain Title. *Charles* in his  
 return to *France* brought with him the *Georgian* Sing-  
 ing, and the Liturgy and Mass that was used at *Rome*,  
 and would needs abolish the Musick and Service of the  
 English Church: This Change occasioned the Persecuti-

788. what the Event of it was like to prove to only, wherein they lost three Battels. *Adal* the same time endeavouring to regain *Lomb* not only overthrown, but also taken by of *Pepin* and others, and cruelly put to death

Charles subdues Germany. And now *Charlemain* having subdued all *mans*, even to those who inhabited along the who would not own him; he spent this Year Palace at *Worms*, without undertaking any Expedition, addicted himself to Works and sent large Alms to the Christians in *Syria*, *E Africa*, that groaned under the *Saracen* courted the Friendship of those Infidel Prince by to oblige them to use the Christians better

790. This year gave a beginning to the indifference between *France* and *Scotland*, and to the University of *Paris* by an *Englishman* and a *S* And *Charles* in the next resolved to be revenge the *Huns*, which indeed proved a Blessing it having been a means to convert them to Christianity. Some Authors say, they had seven vast Inclosures within one another, wonderfully fortified and strengthened with Rampiers, which retreated with their Spoil, which they had for above two hundred years. *Charles* having the *Emms*, marched along both the sides of the attended with a vast Fleet; and at the same time a Body of Eastern *Frenchmen*, entred from *Bohemia*: They all fled upon the King, lest their Rings, which gave him Opportunity to ravage the Country as far as *Raab*; and been for a Mortality, that destroyed most cities, he would have pushed his Conquest farther, an eminent danger the following year prevented his return thither; for the *Austrasian* offended with the Behaviour of Queen *Fast* freed from her, conspired the Death of him and intended in his stead to set up one of his called *Pepin*, who had a handsome Face, but was cruel and exceeding malicious: But the Plot was discovered by a poor Priest, the States caused them to be beheaded, and others were banished, while *Pepin* was made a Fryar.

Charles routs the Huns.

While *Charles* was at *Ratisbonne* intent upon subduing the *Avars*, he was diverted therefrom, as well from his Design of making a Communication between the *Rhine* and the *Danube*. First by the Revolt of the *Saxons*, who had now been quiet for 7 or 8 Years, and then in that the Forces commanded by his Nephews in the *Marches of Spain* were defeated by the *Moorish*. Before the King left *Francfort*, he held a Council of Bishops, who condemned the Error of the Bishop of *Urgel*, that held Christ as Man was the adopted Son of God the Father; and his Queen *Brada* died: But then falling with all his Forces in two different ways into the Country of the *Saxons*, they were so terrified, that instead of running to their Arms, they sued for Mercy; and *Charles* contented himself with taking away a third of all that were capable to bear Arms, and transport them to the *Margrave* parts of *Flanders*. Upon his Return, he wintered in *Juliers*, where having discovered some hot Baths, he built there a fair Palace and Church, in Honour of the Virgin, for which Reason 'tis called *Aix la Chapelle*; but before the Expiration of the Year, the *Saxons* once more like enraged Devils brake out, and cutting an Army of the *Abrodites* in pieces at the Mouth of the *Elbe*, as they were marching by the King's Command upon an Expedition against the *Saxons*, in which Action their Commander also was

793.

*Saxons submit.*

796.

Judges, who did not leave that Cr u  
 799. The *Baleares*, called since *Majorca* and 1  
 Islands in the *Mediterranean*, now gave to  
 to *France*, that they might be protected ag  
*Saracen* Pirates; and the *Saracen* *Aza*,  
 made himself Sovereign of *Huesca*, that he  
 get the Protection of the *French*, sent the  
 his City with Presents to the King: On the o  
 the *Auvers*, after many vain Attempts to rec  
 Liberty, were entirely subdued, and the R  
 of their Wealth carried away by the *Fren*  
 now began to adorn themselves with Gold Ori  
 even to the very common Soldiers. *Guy* also C  
 the *Marches* of *Bretaign* wholly submitted  
 County, and brought him the Shields and Arms, t  
 with the Names of all the Lords and Com  
 became subject to the King, so that all the C  
 a time was under the Dominion of *France*.

800. Put tho the *Danes*, *Normans* and *Saracens*  
 their Piracies about this time, and very much i  
 the Coast of *France*, this did not hinder the  
 Charles goes to Rome. to go from *Metz*, where he had called a Par  
 into *Italy*, as well to take cognizance of f  
 rages committed against the Pope, as upon a  
 suspicion that they were conspiring with G  
 Duke of *Benevento*, and the Inhabitants of  
 to revolt from him: Being at *Rome*, he admi  
 Pope to justify and purge himself by C  
 Crimes laid to his charge (no body then ap  
 accuse him) and order those to be punished with  
 that had done him the Outrage; but the Pope i  
 for their Lives, and in Retribution of the K  
 his Family's Favours to the holy Chair, he  
 Charles made Em- the *Romans* to demand him for their Emper  
 peror of Rome. crowned him on *Christmas*-day in *St. Peter's* C  
 the People crying aloud thrice, *Along ll*  
*and Victory* to Charles, the *August, Gre*  
*able Emperor* of the *Romans*, crowned God.  
 Ceremony being over, the Pope adored, i. e. k  
 down before the new Emperor, and ackno  
 him for his Sovereign. Some Historians say, c  
 no ways sought this Honour; however it w te,  
*West* had an Empire again, but such as had

in action with that in the *East*, as formerly.

The Emperor returning home this Year, made no military Expedition, but his Son *Lewis* rendered him-

801.

self famous by the taking of *Barcelona*; and when

the petty *Saracen* Princes of *Spain* were afraid of be-

ing oppressed by the King of *Castile*, they made an

alliance with the *French*, but soon broke it: And *Zad*

Prince of *Barcelona* studying some Conspiracy against

the *French*, was yet so imprudent as to go to King *Lewis*

at *Narbonne*, who there seizing him, the *Saracens* chose

himself a Kingman *Hamar* in his room, and resolved to defend

themselves to the utmost. This brought *Lewis*, after *Lewis*

he had severely chastised the *Gascons* for their

takes Bar-  
celona.

conduct, to undertake the Siege of *Barcelona*, and the

city resisted after a 12 Month's Resistance gave up the

town. Indeed *Charlemain* was either feared or loved

by all the neighbouring Princes: The King of *Gallicia*

could be called no other but his Vassal, the *Scottish*

Kings ever stiled him their Lord, the chief of the

*Arabian* and *African* *Saracens* sought his Alliance;

even the haughty King of *Persia* desired no Friendship

but his, he having not only sent him great Presents this

Year, but gave him the Propriety of the holy Land

and of *Jerusalem*, reserving to himself only the Title

of his Lieutenant in that Country; and two Years

after he interposed so earnestly in his behalf with

the Emperor that he caused that Emperor to con-

804.

They turn  
Christians.

King of *Denmark*, who was very potent at  
Now *Charles* being come thither with all his Force  
and having pitched his Camp near the *Elbe*, the *Saxons*  
*Holfatians* suddenly finding themselves abandoned  
the *Danes*, redeemed themselves from utter ruin,  
turning all Christians: But the Emperor transplanted  
one part of them into *Flanders*, and another into  
*Helvetia*, from whom they say, the *Swiss* are  
descended; and the Lands they inhabited beyond the  
he bestowed upon the *Abrodite Slavonians*; then  
established a Council in *Saxony*, by way of Inqui-  
sition, to punish Mutiners, especially such as returned  
again to Idolatry, and this sort of Inquisition lasted  
to the 15th Century.

806.

The Parti-  
tion of his  
Estate.

The Emperor now for the better Establishment  
his Family shared his Estates between his three Sons  
so that if either of them happened to die without  
Children, his Proportion should be redivided between  
the other two; but if a Son were born, and the  
People would choose him to succeed his Father,  
the Uncles were to consent to it. This Partition  
was made in the Presence of all his Sons, subscribed  
by the *French Nobility*, and carried to the Pope to  
sign it; not to make it the more valuable, but to  
render it the more Authentick. About this time  
*Navarrois* were reduced from their Revolt to the  
Obedience of the *French*.

The Emperor's eldest Son employed himself continually  
to subdue the remaining Idolatrous People of *Germany*;  
having the preceding Year gained a great Victory  
over the *Bohemians*, and now over the *Slavonians*  
and *Sorabes*, on the other side of the *Elbe*; while his  
Brothers did all they could in their respective Divisions  
to increase them to the Detriment of the *Infidels*.  
*Pepin* made War by Sea against the *Saracens*, and  
*Louis* with his *Aquitaniens* made Incursions to the  
farther Shoar of the *Elbe*.

807.

Norman  
Piracies.

The Piracies of the *Normans*, and their Depredations  
upon the Coasts of *Neustria*, and even in the *Mediterranean*,  
about this time became more frequent and  
troublesome; and *Charlemain* being one day in *Provence*,  
and observing the misery *France* was like to  
suffer from them, he could not forbear shedding Tears.  
Howe

However the Emperor was more and more honoured, particularly in the *East*; none but *Godfrey* King of *Normark* countermined his Grandeur, and had the Confidence to attack his Country. At first he made great bustle, drove the Duke of the *Abrodites*, a tributary of *France*, before him, took and hanged a great number of them, and made two thirds of the People become his Tributaries; however having lost his Men, and his Brother's Son upon the storming of a Castle, and being informed that *Charles* the Emperor's eldest Son had passed the *Elbe*, he thought to retreat, and take all possible care to cover his own Country.

On the other hand, amongst divers Exploits performed in the Marches of *Spain*, *Lewis* King of *Aquitan* forced the City of *Tortosa* in *Catalonia*: But *Count Aurelius*, who had the Government of those frontiers, dying the Year after, *Amoroz* a *Saracen* Prince of *Saragosa* seized upon several Fortresses of the French, but still protested he was ready to restore them and his own Person to the Emperor's disposal: Whereupon a Treaty was begun, during which *Abul* King of *Cordona* not pleased therewith, sent his Son *Abderamen* to seize *Saragosa*, who forced *Amoroz* to retire to *Huesca*. Those Turmoils were quickly after succeeded by a Revolt of the *Gascoigns*: *Lewis* therefore, being gone to *Dax* with a potent Army, ruined



wife, and say, the *French* received a n

In the mean time *Godfrey* with a host of lands in *Friesland*, ravaged the Country, and Tribute; but instead of going forward, as out, to give the Emperor Battel upon the *Pepin and Veker*, he returned home, where he was killed Charles his own Son, and succeeded by his Brother's Son / Sons die. who made a Peace with the *French*. France Revenge for the Affront received in the *Guipn nice*, because *Pepin* died now at the Age of 33 and the 29<sup>th</sup> of his Reign in *Italy*, leaving a natural Son behind him, named *Bernard*, succeeded him in that Kingdom, and was then not 12 or 13 Years old. About the end of the 1<sup>st</sup> Year *Charles* the Emperor's eldest Son died but left no Children. About which time the Emperor's Troops overcame the *Bretons* and the King.

812.

And now *Charlemain* himself being brought to an advanced Age, and the Toils of Empire, this with the loss of his two Sons made him more inclinable to have Peace with the *Saracens* in *Spain*, as also with the *Angles* and *Danes*, which was the more easily accomplished; because *Mahumed* King of the *Saracens* being at War with *Abdella* his Brother, was forced to let him have a share in the Kingdom of *Spain* then as to *Greece*, the Emperor *Nicephorus* was engaged in Battel against the *Bulgarians*, and there was a War in *Denmark* about the Succession.

Charle-

main's  
Death and  
Character.

814.

The Emperor at length finding himself decayed by day, summoned a Parliament at *Aix*, where he asked every one present, whether they would be pleased he should give the Title of Emperor to his Son *Levis*; and they assenting, he made him his Colleague in the Empire, and in the same Parliament declared *Bernard* King of *Italy*. The Death of this mighty Prince was preceded by all sorts of prodigies: And whilst he was studiously employed in reading and correcting some Manuscripts or other business in his Palace at *Aix*, he was seized with a violent illness and carried out of this World, 72<sup>d</sup> Year of his Age, at the beginning of the 12<sup>th</sup> of his Empire, and the 48<sup>th</sup> of his Reign.

in being, he gave all but the fourth part of his  
 share to the poor and *Metropolitan* Churches of  
 Kingdom, and he was buried at *Aix la Chapelle*,  
 which he had erected: He caused all the Laws and Cust-  
 oms of the several Nations under his Empire to be di-  
 ctated in writing, contrived several Capitularies, and  
 collected all the antient Poetry that contained the brave  
 Actions of the *French*. At his Meals he made some  
 to him the History of the Kings his Prede-  
 cessors, or the Works of *St. Augustine*; he took two  
 or three Hours Repose after Dinner, interrupted his  
 sleep in the Night, rising three or four times; heard  
 all Complaints, did Justice at all Seasons; the Spring  
 and Summer time he spent in War, part of the Au-  
 tumn in Hunting; the Winter in Councils and the  
 management of the Government: Some certain Hours  
 both of the Day and Night he employed in the Study  
 of Learning, as Grammar, Astronomy and Theology;  
 and to illustrate his Language, which was *Dutch*, he  
 brought it under Rules, and made a Grammar to it,  
 assigned Names for all the Months in that Tongue,  
 likewise for every Wind, which are mostly retained  
 to this day; and in Truth, he was one of the most  
 learned and eloquent Persons of that Age, the Works  
 he left behind him to Posterity being undeniable  
 c. His Treasure he employed in rewarding

and Carriage; his Humour sweet, facil and jovial; his Conversation easy and familiar; he was humble, courteous and liberal, active, vigilant, valorous, very sober, tho' Fasting was prejudicial to him; Enemy to Flatterers and Vanity: He hated new strange Modes, clothing himself very modestly unless it were upon some publick occasions, where the Majesty of the Kingdom ought to appear in the Sovereign. However it were, his Successors prove not Imitators of his Virtues, and were not attended with such a Fortune as he; nay all the Wisdom and Valour of *Charles Martel* expired in this his Grandson *Charles the Great*, and his Posterity grew to be so foolish, that the *French* Nation must have perished in their Conduct, if the Nobility and People had not rejected them, and placed the Crown upon a more deserving Head, as we shall see in the Sequel of History; and therefore to close this Reign, this great Prince's Fame would have been without blemish, was beyond Parallel, had he not been too much given to Women, and too indulgent towards Mistresses and his Daughters in their Carriages.

He had at least three lawful Wives, *Hermenegild* King *Didier's* Daughter of the *Lombards*, whom he repudiated the 2d Year; *Hildegard* the Daughter of *Childebrand* Duke of *Swabia*, and *Fastrade* Daughter of Count *Rodolph*: The last bore him no Children but *Hildegard* nine; four Sons, viz. *Charles*, *Pepin*, *Lewis* and *Lotaire*; of whom *Lewis* reaped the whole Succession, and the rest were Daughters. As for the Number and Names of his Mistresses they are not known, only amongst his illegitimate Children mention is made of *Pepin* the Crook-back, *Hugh* Duke of *Burgundy*, called the great Abbot, *Dreux* Bishop of *Metz*; and amongst 7 or 8 Daughters, one of them called *Hiletrude*, by her Actions became scandalous in her Father's House.

**C H A P. VIII.**

*Reign of LEWIS I. called the Debonnaire or Pious.*

L. Emperor and } *Bernard* his Nephew K.  
of France. } *of Italy.*

*LEWIS* upon his first Accession fearing to meet opposition, more especially from *Walla* an under-Person, and a Prince of the Blood, he got as Troops as he could together; and having sent *Walla*, he came to him with all due Submission, the French Nobility made hast to meet him. He had solemnized his Father's Funeral, he divided his Goods with his Brothers and Sisters, and expelled all Ladies of pleasure out of the Court, consigned his Sisters, some of whom were lewd enough, to the Abbays his Father had conferred upon them; but this time the Ambassador whom his Father sent to *Constantinople*, returned home with Envoys from the Emperor *Leo*, who brought a Treaty of

814.

816.

some that had conspired against *n* to *Sorabes* in that which succeeded *ing* reduced : The *Giscoigns* Inf *ice* also nished by their losing of tv *ttels*, ced to renounce the Count they had elec *Seguin* ; *Giscoigne* being then divided into a Dutchy, whereof the first held of the o *Leo* dying *May 23d*, and *Stephen* the i ceeding, tho he waited not for the Emper ment, yet he made the *Romans* swear I and afterwards journied himself into *Fr* *Rheims* the Emperor and Emperers *Her* crowned by him with two Gold Crowns he pose brought along with him, that for th being set all over with Jewels and precious the other was of plain Gold without ment.

*Louis weak  
for Govern-  
ment.*

This King *Louis* seemed rather to be Church than the World ; for as he behav he would have made a better Abbot or King : For besides his particular Exercises on, he busied himself too much about r Clergy, and among other things in the *Aix la Chappelle* he caused a Rule to Canons, commanded the Benedictines to sent Commissioners into the Provinces to Simony, Luxury, Pride, and other ab Churchmen ; and obliged the Bishops to in outward Appearance, and throw aside and Swords. In this Assembly he associa eldest Son in the Empire, gave all *Aqi* and *Bavaria* to *Louis*, both with the T es doms.

To this place they brought him Intel Defection of the *Abrodites*, and the *Bernard* King of *Italy*, both which were their Birth : *Bernard* was strangely delud take the dethroning of his Uncle ; tl sently forsaking the passages of the *As*, the Emperor's Army began to march, advised him to it being the first that forio rashly went to *Chaalons* to beg the Emperor's but here he was imprisoned together v

his Retinue, of whom the Seculars were all  
 ed to death, and the Ecclesiasticks degraded  
 ined to a Monastery; neither did *Bernard*  
 escape with Life, which was very rigorous  
 Uncle to a young Nephew: Indeed *Lewis* had  
 morse of it all his Life after, not did the French  
 him that Cruelty. *Bernard* left one Son na-  
 in, and this begat 3, viz. *Bernard*, *Pepin*, and  
 from the middlemost of whom sprang the  
 ch of *Vermendois*: And the Emperor now ap-  
 ing his own bastard-Brothers, whereof he had  
 might form the like Conspiracies, he cau-  
 on all to be shaven, and put into Monaste-

*K. Bern-  
 ard put to  
 Death.*

one, the Emperor reduced all the Country of  
 in forty days, slew their King *Morvian*, and  
 a Duke of his own nominating, but at his  
 he lost his Wife *Hermengarda*: The Emperor  
 changed the King of the *Abrodites*, and de-  
 and exiled the Duke of the *Gascaigns*: However  
 motions made by these and others, sufficient-  
 red the weakness of the Government. *Lin-*  
 of *Lower Hungary*, threw off his Masque,  
 three or four years together gave a great deal  
 ble to the Emperor's Lieutenants in *Dalmatia*,  
 and *Bavaria*, till at length he was quite driven

to omit divers minute things not worth  
'tis very memorable, that *Lewis* troubled  
put his Nephew to death, and cloistering  
and Cousins, made his Confession, and did  
nance at the General Assembly of *Attigny*, after  
he released all those he had cloistered, and  
*Valac* and *Adelard* to be of his Council. A  
happened the Birth of *Charles* the Bald, and wi  
World of Mischiefs, which was presaged by  
terrible Prodigies this year.

The *Bretons*, as obstinate for their Liberty  
*Saxons* for their Religion, endeavoured to wi  
themselves from the Obedience of the *Fren*  
chose one *Guyomac* to command them; against  
the Emperor entering the Country with three  
made such an havock, that in 10 or 12 days t  
glad to submit; and next year their Prim  
*Guyomac* their Chief came to the General Ann  
*Aix*, as making up now a part of the *Fr*  
narchy, and the Emperor made them all ric  
fents.

The *Bulgarians* having already signaliz  
selves by their Incursions into the Territories  
Eastern Empire, the *French* began to kno  
when they became their Neighbours; and t  
*mortag* having employed Ambassadors to the *Em*  
to settle the Limits between the two Nations,  
tained them above two years, and sent the  
without any Answer. The Affairs of *France* bei  
in a declining Condition towards the Marches o  
since the defeat of the *Gascoigns* under *Ebles* a  
*nar* by the *Saracens*; a discontented Lord nan  
zo, leaving the Emperor's Court, cunningly sei  
on the City of *Ossuna* in *Catalonia*, and  
League with the *Saracen* King, who giving hi  
erful Assistance, he therewith so disquieted the  
nours of the Neighbouring Places, that some  
them, while others went and joined the *En*  
that there was none but *Bernard* Earl of  
that persisted faithful to the Emperor. *Aiza*  
got a great Reinforcement of *Saracens* next ye  
Emperor on his part gave *Pepin* an Army  
him, and resettle his Affairs in those Count

His ravaged the Countries of *Gerome* and *Bar-*  
 their pleasure before the *French* were ready,  
 the Commanders were severely punished.  
 Emperor sent another Army under *Lotair* against  
 who advancing as far as *Lyons*, and having con-  
 with *Pepin*, he went no farther; and this was the  
 the *French* made for those *Marches*; so  
 People of the higher *Marches* seeing them-  
 abandoned, made *Eneco* or *Inniguo* Earl of  
 their King, who took *Pampelona*, and some o-  
 from the *Saracens*: And here we must assign  
 of the Kingdom of *Navarre*.

to pass over the Ravages committed by the  
 in *Upper Hungary*, for not opposing of  
 the Duke of *Friuli* was divested of his Duchy,  
 Emperor desperately fond of his Wife and Son  
 bestowed *Rhetia* and part of the Kingdom of  
 upon him, to the great mortification of his  
 and the farther disgust of such as had been  
*Bernard's* Party. The Emperor foresaw the  
 and his Wife to gain a greater Power en-  
 his Apprehensions, persuading him to put an  
 Confidence in *Bernard* Earl of *Barcelona*, who  
 Chamberlain, and on whom he was enamoured;  
 did but increase the opposite Parties Discon-  
 and therefore they all addrest themselves to *Pe-*



Restored.

went to his Sons *Pepin* and *Lewis* to incite to  
 pouse his Cause; so that the Power of the  
 others serving now as a Counterpoise to that of  
 there was a Necessity of a General Assembly to  
 led to settle the Government, and the mee  
 some designed Altercations was held at *N*  
 where the Emperor's Interest prevailing, he  
 Son *Lotair* to come and submit to him in his  
 give up the principal of his Confederates, whom  
 doned for all their Disloyalty; only he comma  
 Laymen to be shorn, and the Churchmen to  
 in Monasteries. When he was got back to *Ais*  
 called his Wife, and her Brothers that had  
 ven; but he required her first to clear herself  
 ding to the usual manner; and in the Easter  
 he released and recalled all those he had ca  
 shorn, but he sent his three Sons into their ov  
 doms, after which neither of them shewed him  
 Obedience; but more particularly *Pepin*,  
 made a Prisoner at *Triers*, from whence he  
 escape, and still pursued the same rebellio  
 but at last being summoned to appear at the  
 Assembly at *St. Martins*, and not obeyi  
 he dispossessed him of the Kingdom of *A*  
 great displeasure of the other two So  
 the like Treatment: They therefore all co  
 gainst him, under the management of *Lot*  
 took the Field with a numerous Army; t  
 having done the like, they both incamped be  
*fil* and *Strasburg* five or six days; during  
 Emperor and the Pope had some conference  
 Peace, but his Men under that pretence bei  
 ched and induced to forsake his Service, he  
 ther way himself but to submit, and obta  
 neither his Wife nor Son *Charles* should f  
 nor Limbs; however they confined the last to a  
 tery, and banished the Mother to *Tortona* in *I*  
 The King being thus detained, *Pepin* return  
*quitain*, and *Lewis* to *Bavaria*, while *Lotair*  
 neral Assembly at *Compeign*; during which  
 beginning to be touched with Compassion  
 their old Emperor, some Lords and Bisho  
 be punished if ever he was restored, contr

to exclude him, by degrading and condemning him to publick Penance; and therefore the Bishops having remonstrated his scandalous Faults to him, sent for his Son *Lotair* and his Princes, and made his Reconciliation with him. then they led him to *St. Medert's Church*, where prostrate before the Altar upon Sack-cloth, he confessed he had been the Cause of great Troubles to *France*; and the Bishops exhorting him to name his Crimes openly, he owned he had committed Sacrilege, Parricide, and Homicide, and then gave the Bishops a Paper, who laid it upon the Altar: This done, they took off his military Girdle; and lastly having disrobed him of his secular Habit, they clothed him with a penitential one, which was never more to be quitted: But being quickly set at Liberty again by his Sons *Lewis* and *Pepin*, they returned unto him the Crown and Military Girdle in *St. Dennis Church*, with the Deliberation and Consent or Counsel of the *French People*, and sometime after his Wife and Son *Charles* were brought to him; so that now the Emperor's Power revived to that degree, that *Lotair* who opposed his Restitution was forced to submit, upon Condition he should come no more into *France* without his Father's leave, but remain in *Italy*; all the Passages from which Country he shut up with strong Garrisons. Indeed it had been much better for *France*, that *Lotair* had never repassed the Mountains; for the Empress *Judith* desiring to have a Support for her Son *Charles* after the old Emperor's Death, endeavoured to reconcile them, and sent word he should come to Court; but he was hindred by an Epidemical Distemper, that so seized him, and most of the *French Lords*, that it was said it had left *France* naked, both of Counsel and Strength: However *Lotair* at last coming to stand to such a Division as his Father made of his Territories, he took the *Eastern France* from the *Meuse* upwards, and left the *Western* to his younger Brother *Charles*, obliging himself by Oath to defend him, and not to undertake any thing against his Father's Will.

*Lewis deposed again.*  
833.

*Restored.*

837.

About the same time the *Normans*, never ceasing *R. Pepin's* to pillage the Coasts of *Flanders*, gained a great Battle in the Isle of *Walcheren*, slew the Count of *Zeland*

838.

and were driven out with much Difficulty : A Comet in *January* presaged the Death of *Pepin* of *Aquitain* in *Nov.* aged 35. after a Reign of twenty years : He left two Sons *Pepin* and *Charles* whom hereafter, and a Daughter that Count of *Poitiers*.

But to return again to the forementioned *Pa* with *Lotair*, *Lewis* was forbid to take upon his Title of King of *East-France* any longer, which him arm ; but before he could put himself into any rable Posture, his Father passed the *Rhine*, and brought him to submit : Then in his return to *Aquitain*, he there met the Lords of the Country who had been induced to swear Allegiance to *Charles* ; but young *Pepin* with his Friends, still by some corner or other and struggled so vigorously for it, that he could be dispossessed for many years. Here the Emperor giving notice that *Lewis* had debauched the *Saxons* and *Thuringians*, and seized all the Country with the *Rhine*, he was exceedingly troubled at it ; and when his Distemper increasing, he went to *Im* where lying in his Tent, his Heart pierced with a Death and Stomach oppressed with an Impostume, he died this Life on the 20th of *June*, in the 64th year of his Age, and the end of the 27th of his Empire before which he had been King of *Aquitain* 32 years. This Prince was of a mild and sweet Nature, and that was all, for he was too easy and credulous ; so that he was sometimes persuaded to unwise Actions : From his Youth he was profoundly devout ; and if he gave not too much credit to Churchmen, it must be owned he could not distinguish the Good from the Bad, or else he spoiled them by his Over-liberality, whereas it had been better pursued his Father's Method, who never suffered one Man to have more than one Employment or office at the same time. As for the rest of his Character, he was laborious, sober, vigilant, and very knowing and learned, both speaking and

ing Latin as well as any Man in his Kingdom, and  
 who together with the perfect Knowledg of the  
 laws, had ever a great Care to see them put in Exe-  
 cution. He had by his first Wife *Hermengard*, *Lo-*  
*thar*, *Pepin* and *Lewis*, besides three Daughters, and  
 by his Second Wife *Judith* had *Charles* surnamed the  
 Bald.

---

G 4

BOOK

# BOOK IV.

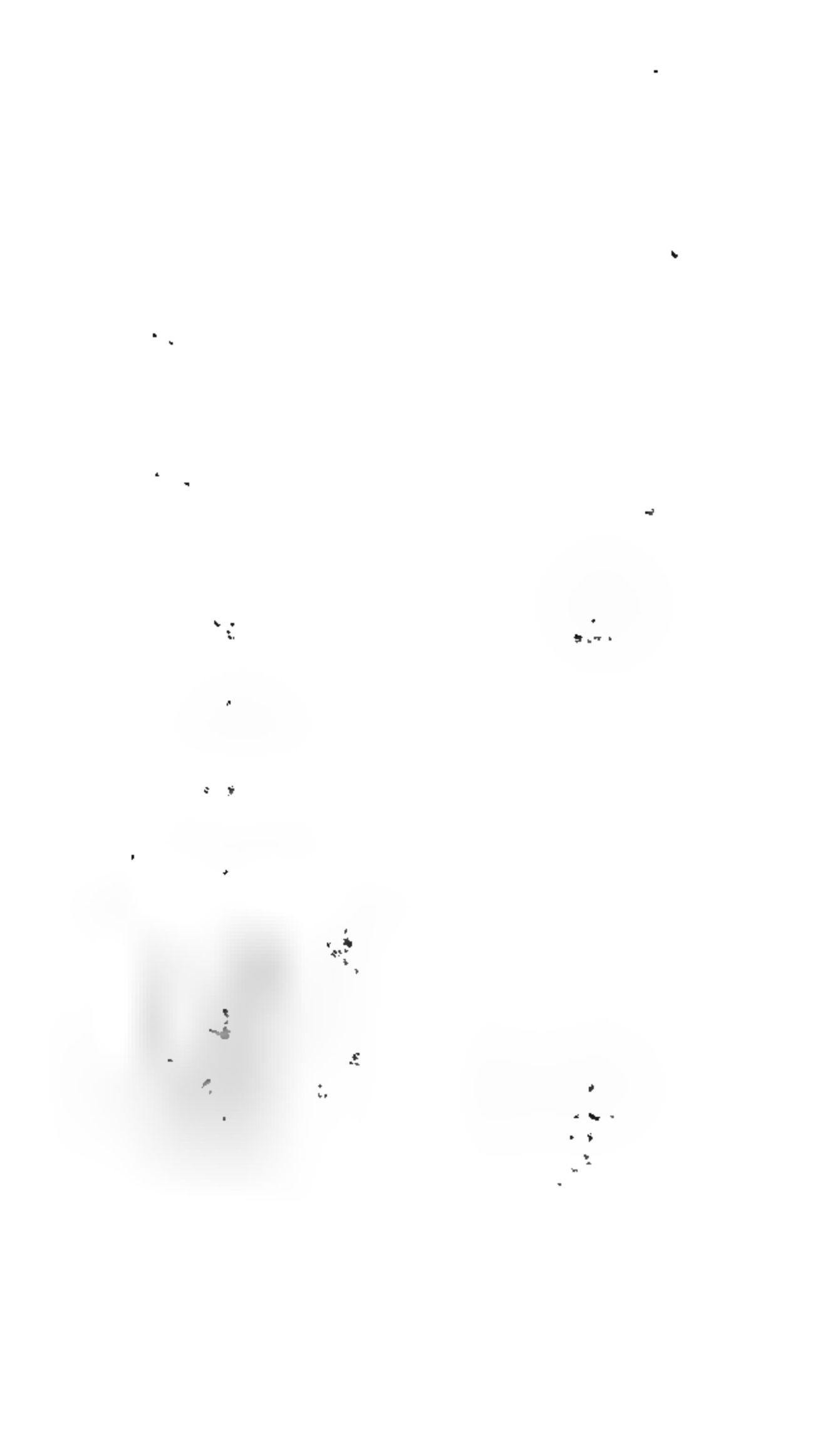
## CHAP. I.

### *The Reign of CHARLES II. surnamed the Bald.*

vil  
ars.  
841.

**S**OME TIME before his Death, the Emperor *Lewis* had sent his Scepter, Crown and the Ensigns of Empire, to his eldest Son *Lotair*, recommending to him the Protection of *Prince Charles*, and enjoining him to preserve the Share for him that had been allotted him with the Consent ; but *Lotair* presuming his Birth-Right Quality ought to make him Sovereign over his younger Brethren, he went from *Italy* to the Kingdom of *Germany*, and so with his Army to *Frankfort*, where *Lewis* coming boldly to encamp by him, he was prevailed at the matter, and they agreed to remit their Differences to the 12th of *Nov.* to be amicably composed then between them. *Charles* was then at *Bon* where he waited for *Pepin* who failed him, and thence he sent to *Lotair* to intreat him to retract his Oaths ; but he amusing *Charles* with fair words adjusted all his Engines to turn him out of his Minions ; and indeed the *Neustrian* People joined *Lotair*, tho *Charles* had already beaten *Pepin*. However *Charles* and his Party advanced against the Emperor near *Orleans*, but then finding himself much weaker, he was forced to agree to take *Aquitain*, *Lodowic*, and *Provence*, with some Countries on the *Loire* and the *Seine* only by way of Provision, and was said they should meet at the Parliament at *Compiègne* to compose all their Differences ; but *Lotair* was the mean time to attempt nothing against *Charles* : However he soon violated his Engagement, by endeavouring to





the Passages, and hinder *Charles* from coming to *Atigni*; but *Charles* very diligently wafting over the *Seine*, in some Vessels he found at *Ro-*  
*inemies* presently fled upon the first Appearance of his Standard; and so *Charles* marching up along the River, beat two of the Counts sent by *Lotair* to oppose him, went to *Atigni*, and thence advancing forward, he there found the Empress his Mother, who Forces she brought him out of *Aquitain*, and at the same time had Intelligence that his Brother *Lewis* had gained a Battel against *Albert* Count of *France*, and so *Lotair* made all Expedition to join him; and so the two Brothers were united and superior to the Enemy, he gained some days by feigned Negotiations, till *Pepin* could join him; with which Reinforcement he was so uppish, that nothing would do but he must have all: So that they were forced to give him Word, they would give him Battel next day, which was the 25th of June. All the Powers being now met at *Fontenay* by *Auxerre*, there was so bloody a Battel, that there was more slain therein, than in any other whatever, since the *Carlovinian* Race, that they could not recover it; however the Victory fell to the Brother's share, who used it so modestly, that

*A most bloody Battel.*



France divided between the three Brothers.

843.

to them : After which the two Brothers b  
*Aix*, the Bishops by them assembled pronounced  
lemn Judgment, whereby they deprived *Lo*  
his Portion of Lands on this side the Mount  
the Brothers divided between them, tho this  
did not stand ; for *Lotair* endeavouring an Acc  
tion, the three Brothers were persuaded to m  
Island of the *Soane*, each attended with 40 L  
the presence of whom they agreed to divide t  
Succession of their Father (not including  
*Lombardy*, and *Aquitain* ) into three equal  
whereof *Lotair* should take his choice, and  
Lords were to meet together in *Nov.* at *Metz*  
that Division : But the same Assembly bei  
to *Thionville*, they successfully completed  
on by the 6th of *March* : To *Charles* fell the V  
Kingdom of *France*, and from the *British* (   
the *Meuse* ; to *Lewis*, *Germany* ; and to 1  
Title of Emperor, the Kingdom of *Italy* and r  
and all that lay between the Kingdoms of his  
ther Brothers, which were the Lands betw  
*Scheld*, *Meuse*, *Rhine*, and the *Soane*. *Pepin*  
thing allowed him, but he having gained a gr  
tory over the Troops of his Uncle, who ende  
to take *Aquitain* from him, he kept up for so  
till his Vices, rather than the Power of his r  
dethroned him.

And now the bloody Battel of *Fontenay*  
strangely enfeebled *France*, the *Gascoigns* pract  
manner of Devastations and Barbarities over  
Kingdom ; insomuch that from one Sea to a  
there was not a Monastery standing, that had n  
their Fury and Devilish Rage, nor a Town t  
not been ransomed, plundered or burnt two  
times. The *Normans* were also exceeding tre  
to *France* at this time, and *Oger* one of th  
mous Commanders with a Fleet of 150 Sm  
*Roan* ; and for fifteen or sixteen years to  
continued their Barbarities in *Neustria*, and  
ticularly upon *Bretagne* and *Aquitain*. *Le* s r  
*bonnaire* had given the Government of *Bretagne*  
*omenes*, descended from the antient Kings  
Countries ; now this Person having acquired 1

the right and left Shoar ; and being un-  
*Paris*, destroyed all that lay without the  
being pretty well laden with Spoil, they  
tempted with Presents made them by  
retire, but in Return they ravaged  
*landers* and *Friezland*, and took the City

being now entered into *Bretagne*, en-  
selves in Bogs and Fenny Grounds, where  
a second Blow ; but while *Charles* was  
third Expedition against that Country,  
of the *Normans* obliged him to make a  
the this last quickly broke it and

ner,                      ers      th      C  
 them to :      e      ave :      r      their      l      ry  
 with Blood.

849.

About this time *Lotair* and *Charles* I view in the Palace of *Peronne*, and re League, while *Charles* Brother to *Pep* passing from *Lotair's* Court by *W* seized by Count *Vivian*, and carried to *Bald*, who at the Assembly of *Chartres* to be shaven and sent to *Corbie* Monastery; four Years after *Lewis* the Germanick I him Archbishop of *Metz*. King *Pepin* many very ill Qualities, so that a great man Nobility of *Aquitain* conceiving a kind of him, invited in *Charles* the Bald, and : take *Tholouse*, tho as soon as he left : conciled themselves to *Pepin*.

A General  
 Assembly.  
 851.

There was now a General Assembly held Kingdoms of the *French* Monarchy on the *Meuse*, where the three Brothers met, Amity and mutual Assistance; after v went to *Bretagne* to attack *Herisponx* the Successor of *Neomenes*, who after he l *French* much mischief departed this Life; engaged on the Confines of *Anjou*, and if the *Bretons*, *Charles* came off but ill; it were, he agreed to a Peace in order to possession of *Aquitain*, a thing of more and also to oppose the *Normans*. 'Twas in that the Pirate *Hachery* coming with his of *Burdeaux*, destroyed the Abby of. going up the *Seine* with his small B all the Country a great way on eit many Cities.

*Pepin* de-  
 posed.  
 852.

*Pepin's* ill Conduct had by this time offended the Lords of his Kingdom, that they him at last, and gave him up to *Charles*, who him to be shorn and confin'd to *St. Mard*: whence making his escape, he took part v *Normans*, but being retaken he close l the Castle of *Senlis*. There w be no er down all the Exploits and Rav. In 852 and 853. other Multitu

and some up the *Loire*, plundered Towns, Churches, particularly the Grand St. *Martins*; whether it were by Necessity or ill Counsel, treated the *Aquitains* very rudely, insomuch that many of the Nobility sent Deputies to *Lewis* the Great, to pray him to accept of the Kingdom, and his Son to them: Upon this *Lewis* sends one of his Sons to observe the Disposition of the People; to which *Charles* sought the Friendship, with whom he conferred in the Parliament at *Valenciennes*, a Place possess'd in part by both; and having brought themselves to a good standing, another Parliament was called at which they invited *Lewis*, but he refused to go, so that *Charles* going from thence into *Aquitaine* was crowned at *Limoges*.

Now the Emperor *Lothair*, from what Motives *Lothair* is certainly be determined, strip'd himself of his Sovereignty, and became a Monk in the Abbey 855. where he died some Months after, having reigned the Empire 15 Years, and the Kingdom of *Lotharing*: He left three Sons behind him, *Lewis*, *Lothair*, and *Charles*, and a Daughter named *Hermengard*; before his Renunciation he shared his Territories among his Sons, giving to *Lewis* *Italy* and the Empire, wherein he had associated him in 851. to *Lothair*

was crowned at *Metz*; but he did not long for and died without Issue. *Charles* who held them liament at *Poissy*, immediately went and seized Kingdom of *Lorain*, neither minding the Emperor's *Lewis* Brother to the two last Kings, nor the who expressly desired him to do his Nephew so that he was crowned at *Metz* with the usual monies. 'Twas indeed with some Justice, but out any lawful Power, that the Pope should take nizeance about *Louis*'s Succession; and therefore dispatched a second Embassy to *Charles* to him to give up the Kingdom to the Emperor; otherwise he would excommunicate him; and wrote to the Bishops to forbear all Communion him. *Charles* replied modestly enough to the Letter but the French Bishops went a higher Note, particularly Archbishop *Hincmar* wrote very smart Letters to *Adrian* about it, tho he was much opposed by his Nephew the Bishop of *Laon* therein, who had a particular Interest to be on the other side, and court the Popes favour; however the matter was carried so that *Laon* was deposed and imprisoned, where two Years his Eyes were put out.

870.

*Lorain divided between Louis and Charles.*

But for all these things the two Brothers *Louis* and *Charles* after many Arguments used by the one and by the Mediation of the Lords and Bishops in a place upon the *Meuse*, and there divided the Kingdom of *Lorain* between them, without regard had at all to the Emperor their Nephew whose Cause being still supported by the Pope sent a famous Embassy to the Brothers. *Louis* sent them back to *Charles*, and he taking time to his matters, advanced as far as *Lyons*, as it were to confer with the Pope; but meaning nothing less than to do his Nephew Justice, he likewise seized on the Kingdom of *Burgundy*, which he gave the charge of governing to *Basile* Queen *Richilda*'s Brother, whom he made Duke of *Aquitain*, and Grand Master of *Porters*, nay raised him so high, that he was afterwards one of those that dismembered the Monarchy.

*Charles* during this Expedition had left Archbishop *Hincmar* to govern the Kingdom, who tho a most powerful and daring Genius, had no dis-

dis-

to put a stop to the Designs and Enterprizes  
 of the King's eldest Son, his Father for  
 his Piracies had some Years before made him  
 prisoner and imprisoned him, tho he had got loose  
 from the Treaties of the Pope's Legates; but falling  
 into his Father's Hands, he was condemned to *Prince*  
 that Sentence changed into a Deprivation of Carlo-  
 however some time after he got out of Prison *man's*  
 contrivance of a couple of Monks, who con- *Fate.*  
 ducted him to his Uncle the *German* King, by whom *871.*  
 an Abby conferred upon him, but Death did  
 not him long to enjoy it.

Princes of the *Carlovinian* Line were for the  
 most of weak Spirits, Fools and Sottish. *Lewis*  
 of *Italy*, tho pious and valiant, was so slighted  
 by his Subjects, that they would part him from his  
 Crown, because he had no Heirs Male. The Children *873.*  
 of the *German* gave their Father much Trouble.  
 The eldest, afterwards surnamed the Gross,  
 doubtless with the Conspiracies he had form-  
 ed against him, had violent Fits of madness, believ-  
 ing himself possessed by the Devil, and notwithstanding  
 all sorts of Cure, he felt it more or less all his

to return again to the Actions of the Field:  
 he had about four Years since seized on the  
 Kingdom, and there settled from whence they

Louis the  
Emperor  
his Death.  
875.

Charles  
the Bald  
made Em-  
peror.

nestled themselves in an Island within t  
whence they continued their old T  
sairs of *Bretagne* were also in great con  
this time, insomuch that it lost the Name of a  
dom, and took that of a County, then a  
which two Titles were confounded in those days  
to leave this, and *Louis* the Emperor of *Italy*  
without Issue Male in *August* this Year; we  
observe that the Stake of Succession lay ne  
*Louis* the Germanick and *Charles* the Bald, v  
used great diligence to get thither before  
*Carloman*, two of the Germanick's Sons, w  
Brother *Louis* fell upon *France* to make a l  
as for the two first, *Charles* amused them  
Words, and sent them handsomly back, v  
Prelates used such pathological Remonstrances  
third, that he took pity on the poor People,  
turned without committing any Acts of Ho  
The Pope thought it his Interest to have  
Bald for Emperor, therefore by a splen  
excited him to go to *Rome* to receive  
Crown, as if it had been absolutely at  
and the same was set upon his Head on  
with great Solemnity. The Emperor also on  
received the Crown of *Lombardy* at *Pavia*,  
Confirmation of the Imperial one at an  
held in the said City, the Pope assil  
But the following Year there being ye  
in *Italy*, who refused to acknowledg h  
held another Council at *Rome* to confir  
time, and added Excommunications ag  
fractory: But for all this bustle the *Wes*  
could be but a vain and empty Title, and at  
nothing belonging to it but the Exarchate of  
and the *Pentapolis*; for his Power was not  
the City of *Rome*, and for the Kingd  
it neither belonged nor in any wise be  
ever the Bald, to retaliate the Pope, endea  
tend his Authority over the Liberties of  
Church; and in a Council held at  
ported as much as he could the Pope's Le  
of Primacy, but the *French* Clergy  
means give way to it. At the eighth Set

in the Empress his Wife. (so fond was he of  
with the Crown upon her Head, to preside there  
in, of which the Bishops were so alarmed, that  
did not so much as get up to receive her.

In mean time, tho the *Germanick* was seventy years  
much distracted in his Family by the Discord <sup>Lewis the</sup>  
his Sons; yet he so resented *Charles* his ha- <sup>German-</sup>  
Empire, that with all his Forces he made an <sup>ick's Death</sup>  
into *Newstria*; and being got to *Frankfort*, <sup>and Char-</sup>  
broke the Thred of his Life and Enterprises, <sup>rafter.</sup>  
he had reigned near fifty nine years. This  
was learned according to those times, and had  
his life-time active, warlike, and liberal, one  
not for Money, but to give it away; and  
greater value for Steel than Gold; a great  
in Justice and Religion, an Equitable Distribu-  
Commands and Employments; and in short,  
nearer than any Prince of his Race to the no-  
names and Qualities of *Charlemaign*. He left  
sons, *Carloman*, *Charles*, and *Lewis*. The Bald  
the News of his Death thought to have stripped  
young Princes of all; which made *Lewis* the  
Neighbour to the Danger send Ambassadors  
to put him in mind of the Treaty made with  
her, and offered to prove by thirty Witnesses,  
if ten should undergo the Tryal of cold Wa-

876:



Country of the *Grisons*, *Switzerland*, *Swabia*, *Al* and the other part of *Lorain* bordering upon them.

During all these Diffensions the *Normans* pursue their Game, and even imposed Tribute upon *France*, while the *Saracens* no less tormented *Italy*, so that the *Bald* was necessitated to go thither, and Pope crowned the Empress at *Tortona*, from whence they went to *Pavia* to consult with the *Italian* Lords how to expel the *Saracens*; but hearing, while they were there, that *Carloman* King of *Bavaria* appeared with a great Army to resume the Kingdom of *Italy* and the Empire, the Assembly broke up, the Pope to *Rome*, and *Charles* made hast for *France*; tho at same time *Carloman* seized with a Pannick Fear returned to *Germany*. In the mean while *Charles* in

*Charles the Bald's Death and Character.* turn by *Mount Cenis*, was poisoned by *Sedecias* was his Physician, and a Jew, at the Age of 55 y the second of his Empire, and the 38th of his R from his Father's Death. As he loved Pride and nity more than Solidity, so Fortune made him in appearance, but unhappy in effect; the Qualities was, that he had attained to great L and rewarded Scholars, sending to *Greece* and for them, to enrich *France* by their Knowledg: He vanced very mean Persons to military Employments Dignities, due only to the greatest in his Kin thereby turning the whole Estate as'twere upside the greatest Families sunk to nothing, and the were raised to the highest pitch. He left only one behind him, *Lewis* the Stammerer, who with Di by reason of the hatred they bore to his Father, to succeed him.

877.

CHA

## C H A P. II.

*The Reign of LEWIS II. surnamed the  
Stammerer.*

THERE is but little material to be met with in this King's Reign; one of the first things I find he did, was his going toward *Lorain* to confer with *Lois* King of *Germany*, and make a Treaty to divide *Lorain* between them, as it had been between their Fathers, and the Stammerer also promised him a part of *Italy*: But however it were with this Prince, the Affections of the Nobility were not firm towards him; so that he hapning to take up Arms to suppress *Bernard* Marquess of *Gothia*, whose Government he had given to *Bernard* Earl of *Auvergne*, he fell sick in his Passage by *Auxun* into *Burgundy*, not without suspicion of Poison, and therefore he sent for his Son *Lewis*, and committed him to the Care of the Earl of *Auvergne*, *Thierry* his Great Chamberlain, Abbot *Hugh*, and some others, while the King himself with much Difficulty was brought to *Compeigne*, and on the 19<sup>th</sup> of *April* gave up the Ghost, at the Age of 30 or 35 years. 878. Lewis II's.

## C H A P. III.

*The Reign of LEWIS III. and  
CARLOMAN.*

the Kings  
ruled,  
880.

WE shall find nothing but Factions to the end of this Race: The Abbot of *St. main des Prez*, did all he could to bring in *Low Germany*, and make the *French* own his Title, to the prejudice of the Bastard Sons of *Lewis the Stammerer* for so he called them; and the greatest Friends of the two Princes could divert the storm no other way, but by yielding up to the *German* that part of *Lotharing* which the *Bald* and the *Stammerer* had possessed. *Lewis* indeed would have been satisfied with nothing less than the whole Monarchy, had not his Affairs pressed his hasty return home; for his Brother *Carloman* sick and dying about this time without Legitimate Children, *Lewis* resolved to hasten thither to prevent him from giving his Dominions to his natural Sons: long after which *Lewis* and *Carloman* were crowned at the Abby of *Ferrieres* in *Gastinois*, and divided their Father's Kingdom between them; the first had *Neustria*, and the other the Kingdoms of *Aquitaine* and *Burgundy*; but at their first Accession they found to their displeasure to find *Lorain* and *Burgundy* dismembered from them; this last being lopp'd off by *Boson*, a Person in so much Favour with *Charles the Bald*, that he gave him *Provence*, if not in Sovereignty, at least in Perpetuity, and his Niece *Hermengarda* to Wife, who was ambitious enough as she was encouraged him to make himself King; and so having gained the Lords and Prelates of those Countries, he was crowned King of *Burgundy* in the Royal Castle of *Mantale* in *Dauphiny* by the Archbishop of *Lyons*. This made the Brothers very uneasy, and so did the *Normans* (whom yet they defeated near the River of *Vienne*) and their Count *Lewis*, who at length had a Parley with them at *Gedonville*, where they saw one another, and agreed

General Assembly to meet there: *Louis* of Ger-  
 man to excuse himself because of his Sickness;  
 Charles his Brother came thither, and conferred  
 with *Louis* and *Carloman*, and found it necessary to  
 League for the Destruction of their Enemies,  
 first *Hugh* the Son of *Valdrade*, that sacked all  
 the Country of *Lorain*, and *Roson*. As for the  
 Forces of *Louis* the German, and the two  
 Brothers, having encountred his Army, they defeated  
 him with a great Slaughter: Then *Charles* the  
 Great, his two Brothers, marching against *Roson*,  
 besieged him, and laid Siege to *Vienne*, which *Charles*  
 did not find at an end till about two years hence; *the Fat*  
 in this, *Charles* who had been already crown- *made Em-*  
 ed of *Lombardy*, had also the Imperial Dignity *peror.*  
 put upon him by the Pope, who crowned him 821.  
 at *Rome* on the day.

In the mean while a Fleet of *Normans* went up the  
 Rhine, while another strong one passed up the *Soane*,  
 and took the rich Abbey of *Corbie*, and the City of  
*Amiens*, after which they overran all the Neighbour-  
 hood, and did very great Mischief: Where-  
 upon *Louis* leaving his Brother *Carloman* at the Siege  
 of *Vienne*, hastened to *Picardy*, fell upon the *Normans*  
 there, and slew 9000 of them upon the Spot,  
 and on his return home the remainder of those Bar-  
 barians fell to plundering as before: while a third

going over the Mountains, confirmed the Donation of *Carinthia* to *Arnold* his Ballard-Nephew; and after had held a Parliament at *Worms*, marched with him towards *Hastou*. The *Normans* at first were forced to retreat, and the Emperor blocked them up with his whole Army; but a most dreadful Tempest and raging Plague infecting his Army, proved once more favorable to them; so that after ten days Siege they agreed to leave the Kingdom, from whence they carried infinite Riches. About the same time *Lewis* King of *West France* going to meet some *Breton* Princes, who were marching against the *Normans*, fell sick at *Tours* and died at *St. Dennis*, after a Reign of somewhat above three years; tho' *Emilius* says, that spurring his Horse to run after a pretty Maiden that fled from him into an House, he brake his Back riding in at the Door whereof he died.

*Lewis his Death.*

Upon this his Brother *Carloman* leaving the Siege of *Vienne* to the Care of Earl *Richard*, went to seek the Succession, and head the Army against the *Normans*, and being joined sometime after by *Richard* (who had taken *Vienne*) he defeated part of the *Normans*, and then after the Example of the Emperor *Charles* the First, treated with the *Normans* to go out of his Country upon Condition of giving them 12000 Marks in Silver. Not long after being a hunting in the Forest of *Iveline* near *Montfort*, not far from *Paris*, he was mortally wounded by a wild Boar, tho' others say by a Gentleman of his Train, who thought to dart at the Boar, after he had reigned five years, and left no Children. As soon as the *Normans* heard of his Death they returned again into the Kingdom, of whom Robert *Hugh* made so terrible a Slaughter, that they kept *France* for some time in quiet.

*Carloman his Death.*

## C H A P. IV.

## Reign of CHARLES III. surnamed the Fat.

It is not to be thought strange, if the Western  
 Kingdoms, standing in need of a King at Majority, did  
 offer the Crown on *Charles* the posthumous Son of  
 the *Stammerer*, but swore Allegiance to *Charles*  
 tho it cannot be said they entirely excluded  
 him, since they entrusted Abbot *Hugh* with his Edu- 884.  
 cated Guardianship. In the mean time *Valdrade's*  
 had not quitted his Pretension to *Lorain*; but  
*Godfrey* the Norman Duke of *Friesland*, his Brother-  
 in-law, was creating some quarrel, that they might have  
 an opportunity to restore him to the Possession of that  
 Kingdom; however the Emperor *Charles* rid himself  
 of this by indirect means, according to the Pro-  
 posal of *Henry* Duke of *Saxony*: For he and the  
 Bishop of *Cologne*, having drawn *Godfrey* to a  
 place in an Island of the *Rhine*, there massacred  
 all the Normans along with him: and at the same Time Treas-

make use of Gold than Steel to drive those Robbers away, and agreed that for 700 l. Weight of Silver they should leave *France* in *March*, and in the mean while that they might winter about *Sens* in *Burgundy*: This done, he returned back with a grievous Head-Ach, which they were forced to make divers Incisions; this induced them to return again to the Fields of *Germany*, pretending however to keep their Agreement, but designing in reality to surprize the City, tho without Success.

The Death of Abbot *Hugh* the Great, and other vicidencies about this time left *France* in a very distressed Condition, to which you may be sure, the weakness of *Charles* the Fat's Brain did not a little contribute, which still proved worse after the Incisions made in his Head; he grew suspicious of the Empress *Richarda*, and put her away in the Parliament of *Uberling*, and his Frensy appearing more notorious in the General Assembly of *Trier*, all his Subjects both of the Kingdoms of *Germany* and *Bavaria* forsook him, in order to elect in his stead *Arnold* his Bastard Son; and when he thought to arm himself against him, he was likewise forsaken by the *Lorainers*, and then the *Almain* *Swabians* his antient Subjects; insomuch that he had not a man left to serve him, nor a single Penny to maintain himself; only *Arnold* at length allowed him the revenue of two or three Villages for his Subsistence. However this deplorable Condition lasted not long, for he died a while after of Grief, or else was strangled by his Enemies, on the 8th of *Jan.* Of the *Carlovinian* Race there were but two Princes left, *Arnold* a Bastard, and *Charles* a Child; there were indeed two others in *Italy*, i. e. *Berenger* Duke of *Friuli* and *Guy de Spoletta*, but they were by the Female line, however thinking they ought to have their share of the Succession of *Charlemaign*, therefore it was agreed that *Guy* should have the Title of Emperor and Govern France, and the other enjoy *Italy*; but the first having overthrown the latter in two bloody Battels, he was forced to fly for refuge to *Arnold*, who likewise found himself much embarrassed, so that the Lords of *Neustre France*, which from hence forwards we shall name simply *France*, sent him word when he was coming, that

Charles  
the Fat his  
Misery and  
Death.  
228.







Assembly at Compeigne they had chosen Eudes  
 Duke of France for their King; and  
 made a noise in favour of Charles the Simple,  
 who was actually crowned by the Arch-Bishop of  
 Reims on the other hand Rodolph the Nephew of  
 Hugh was crowned King of Burgundy beyond  
 the Rhine as Louis the Son of Bojan seized on the The Mo-  
 narchy between Lyons and the Sea, betwixt the narchy dis-  
 and the Alps, under the Title of King of Arles member'd.  
 and caused the Kingdom to be confirmed  
 at a Council held on purpose at Valens in 890.

## CHAP. V.

### The Reign of EUDES.

THE KING already mentioned the several Divi-  
 sions of the Dominions of the Carlovian Race,  
 without doubt but these new Kings gave part of  
 the Kingdom to the Lords of their Party to gain their  
 Homage; and now Eudes to shew how  
 he was of being their King, went out against  
 those who ravaged Burgundy, and nigh Mount  
 19000 of them, pursued them to the Fron-

Arnold  
makes an  
horrible  
Slaughter  
of the  
Normans.

ty. *Arnold* fretted at this, passed the *Rhine* with whole Force of *Germany*, forced their Camp near *Mense* with so much Fury, that he left not one of alive, insomuch that the dead Bodies made a quite cross the River, and the Flood was swollen with the Blood of those Barbarians.

893.

In the mean time all the *Neustrian* Lords did own *Eudes* for their King, and therefore while he was employed in *Poitou* in the War, there was a Conspiracy formed against him to set up *Charles* the Simple who was brought out of *England*, whither his Mother had carried him, and crowned at *Rheims* on the 20th of Jan. in 893.

## CHAP. VI.

The Reign of CHARLES IV. surnamed the Simple.

THE Parties of *Charles* and *Eudes* made War on one another for two whole years with various Success; and *Eudes* being returned from *Germany* drove *Charles* out of *Neustria*, tho he got in again after; and *Arnold* was sometimes on one side sometimes on the other. At length the People weary, they contrived for an Accommodation to *Burgundy* and *Aquitain*, *Champagne* and *Picardy* to *Eudes*, and to *Charles* all the rest. In the mean time *Arnold* being uneasy that any of *Charlemain's* Race should succeed, he went into *Italy*, drove *Guy* out of all *Lombardy*, forced him to retire to *Verona*, and then returned to *Germany*; not long after which *Guy* died of the Bloody Flux, tho he lived much longer; however *Arnold* got nothing by his death, the Kingdom being conferred upon his Son *Lambert*, who was crowned Emperor, and bore that Title as long as he lived. But to return again to the *Normans*, they now renewed their IncurSIONS into the unhappy Kingdom with so much the more Assurance and Facility, as they found *Eudes* backward to fight them. And this Year *Rollo* or *Rol*, one of the most considerable

Leaders of those Pyrates, after he found nothing in *England*, where he tried to encourage thereunto by a Dream or Divination, steered his Course towards *France*, being invited in by *Charles*, who turned every Stone to his Rival; but the Enterprizes, Surprises, and Counters between them ended with the Death of *Rollo* on the 3d of Jan. about the end of his Age, and the 8th of his Reign; at his departure, he earnestly enjoined his Barons and other Lords to own *Charles*. He left behind him a son named *Arnold*, who assumed the Title of *Aquitain*, but died soon after.

*Rollo goes to France.*  
895.

*Rollo's Death.*  
898.

At the same time the Loss of the Kingdom of *Lotharing* displeased the *French*, and therefore *Charles* in their esteem, endeavoured to recover it; and at last *Zuendibold*, who was got to be Prince of *Lotharing*, and had been pursued by him also in his flight, was made, and in an Assembly held near *Paris* was confirm'd between *Charles*, *Arnold*, and *Zuendibold*; and towards the end of the year *Arnold* reigned 12 years since the Death of his father *Charles* the Fat, and held the Empire only two years and a half. Among his other Children he had *Conrad* and *Arnold* the Bad by two Concubines, and *Henry* by a lawful Wife; he was but eight years

*Arnold's Death.*  
899.

ed themselves; from whence for five y made Incurfions into all the Neighb conquered *Constantine*, and inhabited it, *cardy*, *Artois*, *Champaigne*, and the *C fin*, often frightened *Paris*, covered the *and Loire* with the *Ashes* of those ( med, and beat the *French* every w *Chartres*, were some of them were a Duke of *Burgundy*. In the mean time a General having by degrees become fami Archbishop of *Roan*, he upon his Intr thrice had granted a Truce. The De late was to convert him, and of the o to Sovereignty; the *French* Nobility ry averfe to have a Stranger settle in t of the Kingdom, but the People fo lo the Enemy, cried out for a Period to Miseries: Besides, *Robert* Earl of to the Monarchy, desired he might re tion, to have his Assistance in time *neccu.*

Reasons *Charles* made a Truce with i he proposed to give him in Propriety. a Title of a *Dutchy*, that part of *N* between the Sea, the *Seine*, and the Daughter *Gisele* in marriage, if Christianity; which he acce d ot. i Homage for the Lands he hi w called *Normandy*. The Y to demand Homage hand: Duke *Alain* leaving his Children very y ried them out of the Country h est Nobility, and so we hear no ore rory, while others were forced to sub mans: There were indeed in ers *France*, especially in *Bretagne*, ty of *Main* with the Islands or t Numbers of these *Normans*, who *Rollo's* Example, took Habitation and themselves *French*, but not with doi of Mischief first; and for a long v Settlement of these drew fresh Swa and *Sweden*, who were no less cruel, but not as the first.

Rollo be-  
comes a  
Christian,  
and settles  
in France.

912.

913.

He had repudiated *Pope* the Daughter of the  
 to marry the Daughter of *Charles*;  
 since being dead, to do the former Wife  
 variation he now could, he takes her again,  
 he had two Children *William* and *Gerlote* or *Rollo's*  
 however she did not long enjoy him, for he  
 ear after, tho some put it off to the year  
 was the first Duke of *Normandy*, and for ever  
 for that severe Justice and exact Policy he  
 within his Dominions; where the very  
 his Name is able to this Day to stop the  
 of Villains, and bring those that are such  
 Judgment-Seat. He was succeeded by his  
 afterwards surnamed *Long-Sword*; and  
 was yet but a Minor, the Earl of *Paris*  
 Godfather undertook the Tuition of

916.

917.

919.

King of *Germany* dying this year, when he  
 ordered his Regal Ornaments to be carried  
 Duke of *Saxony*, tho he had always made  
 lost him; *Charles* before *Henry* was settled,  
*Lothain*, conquered it all as far as *Worms*, and  
 him to become his Subject for the rest of that  
 But the *French* Lords, who apprehending  
 grew too potent and peaceable, he might  
 their Estates which they intended to make

922.

Robert  
slain.Rodolph  
crowned  
King.  
923.

*Charles* upon the News hereof raised his before the Castle of *Capremont*, where he l up *Gisalbert* one of his greatest Enemies; raised considerable Forces in that part wh of the Kingdom, he marched resolutely t *Robert* who was encamped near *Soissons*; passed over the *Aisne* unawares, he charged ously, while his Men were refreshing them here *Robert* fighting at the Head of his slain with a Lance, which some attribute himself: However it were, his Son *Hugh*, E of *Vermandois*, and the other Commanders made Head against *Charles*, but so prevailed, had utterly defeated him if they had bu their Pursuit. And in short, the Chain of *Rok* was so far from being broken by this Action Lords elected *Rodolph* Duke of *Burgundy*, E ther-in-law, and a Nobleman of brave Pre much better Judgment than *Hugh*, to be t and he was crowned at *St. Medart* in S 13th day of *July*, 923.

## C H A P. VII.

## The Reign of RODOLPH

Charles  
the Simple  
imprisoned.

AFTER the Election of *Rodolph* every took *Charles*, having therefore no oth he wrote in a doleful manner to *Henry* Kin many, and gave him up *Lorain* upon conditio ance: *Robert's* Party was greatly astonishe and the rather because *Charles* believed he taken off the Earl of *Vermandois* from t Interest; but that Traitor having decoyed into the Castle of *Peronne*, confined him t *Thierry* under a strong Guard, upon which *Ogina* fled to *England* her Native Countr Son *Lewis*.

Now *William* the first Duke of *Aquitain* mitting as he ought to *Rodolph*, he was .. turn his Sword that way, upon which *W*

enced to the *Loire*, the Bounds of his Dutchy; and after some Negotiations having passed the same, he lighted and went to *Rodolph*, who embraced and seated him as he sat on Horseback, and next day granted him a Truce for 8 Years, at the Expiration of which the Duke did him Homage, and in requital had the Cities of *Bourges* and *Berry* restored to him.

924.

926.

The *Normans* still almost every Year made Incursions into the *French Territories*; besides those that were in *Neustria* there were others in *Burgundy* and *Artois*; and at all times they were forced to be making Head against them, or be in pursuit of them: But they had such sure Friends amongst the *Grandeas*, who would not suffer the Kingdom's Grievances to be remedied, that they ever got away scot-free; pay this Year King *Rodolph* having surrounded them in a Wood in the Country of *Artois*, they suddenly made a furious assault, wherein he was wounded, and had been taken had not Count *Hebert* given him timely Assistance: And those that held the Islands of the *Loire* having been a long time besieged by *Hugh* and *Hebert*, they so stoutly defended themselves, that they gave them the City of *Nantes* for their Habitation.

But notwithstanding the strict Alliance there seemed to be between King *Robert* and *Hebert*, the City of *Laon* became an occasion of discord, for *Hebert*



nation to l Imprison , 37 Y  
Life 50; he t b n 1 1  
Daughter to E K E .

Whilst Koda v 1

Normans of the Loire e excu

hus; but he bravely surr l 1

at a place called *Dextricios*, wl 1

much esteem among the *Aquit* , 1

induced to acknowledg him with a little

Rodolph  
receives  
divers Ho-  
mages.

931.

sion. Indeed the Regal Authority was  
low Ebb, and the Lords very potent;  
*Hebert* still opposed *Rodolph* under pretence  
the King's Brother-in-Law had allured some  
Vassals from him. *Hebert* made use of the  
of the *Lorainers*; but his Insolence being  
abated by the loss of *Rheims* and *Laon*, he  
into *Aquitain* and *Languedoc*, where he re-  
Homage of the Princes, and of the Duke  
who was mounted, if we believe *Florentin*  
Horse that was an 100 Years old, and very  
and lusty. *William* Duke of *Acquitain*  
him Homage, and the King in return  
those Lands the *Bretons* held on the con-  
ed to be the *Bessip* and *Constantin*; but  
things could not be kept quiet at home,  
*Blanc*, and *Hebert de Vermandois*,  
potent Lords in *France*, falling out, began  
War upon one another; the King  
whose Sister he had married, King of  
many having interposed to mediate, the  
*St. Quintin* and *Peronne* were restored to  
Cessation that ended in a Peace.

935.

In the Year 935. the three Kings of  
*France* and *Burgundy*, had an Interview  
*Meuse*, to give joint Orders for repressing  
Inursions of the *Bulgarians*, who infe-  
minions, and had this very Year got into  
upon the *French* King's marching that way  
ly retired into *Italy*: However the King  
*Dijon*, of which his own Brother

Rodolph's Possession. But he did not long survive  
Death. for he left this World on the 15th of 3

936. following Year, at *Auxerre*, in the 14th of

He was a most liberal, valiant, religious and just Prince, and worthy of better Times; his Wife died 11 Month before him, and his Brother *Boson* about a quarter of a Year, both Childless; they had another Brother called *Hugh le Noir*, or Black, who bare the Title of Duke of *Burgundy*, and the Surname of *Caper*, of whom more hereafter.

## CHAP. VIII.

### *The Reign of LEWIS IV. surnamed the Transmarine.*

OF all the French Lords *Hugh le Blanc* Earl of *Paris* and *Orleans*, Duke of *France*, and Brother-in-law to the late King *Rodolph*, had the greatest Authority in the Kingdom: However he durst not take the Crown, because of *Hebert* of *Vermandois*, and *Gisbert* Duke of *Lorain*, two potent Lords that would have broke his measures; and therefore he thought it more safe to make a King of the Blood of *Charlemagne*, who should be wholly obliged to him for his

936.

his Authority the better, he began fi  
 petty Rebels, then fell upon *Hebert*  
 he thought the more easily to overco  
 was grown odious for his Treachery to  
 ple; but *Hugh* joined with *Hebert*,  
 938. tified themselves with the Alliance of *Otho*  
*Germany*; while *Lewis* on his part had a st  
 with *Arnold* Earl of *Flanders*, and others:  
*bert* Duke of *Lorain* being come to the A  
*Hugh* the Great his Brother-in-Law, *Arn*  
*le Noir* negotiated a Truce till the first  
 in the Year following, between the K  
 Duke; but as soon as that was expired, the  
 gan afresh. Whilst the King was in  
 vide it with the *Noire*, *Hugh le B*,  
*William* Duke of *Normandy* ravaged and  
 Territories of *Arnold*, but the King's R  
 them renew the Truce till *June*.

Civil  
Wars.

About this time *Otho* King of *Germany*  
 hard for his Brother *Henry* and *Giselbert*  
 these two sent to King *Lewis* to put themse  
 his Protection, and went to *Laon* to do him  
 and indeed *Lewis* wanted but little of  
 whole Kingdom of *Lorain* surrendered to him:  
 into *Alsatia*, and was well received every  
 when he came to treat those as conquered  
 who had voluntarily submitted themselves, it  
 nated their Affections. In the mean time  
 Great; *Hebert* and the *Norman*, re-allied t  
 with *Otho*, in conjunction with whom the  
 939. *Lewis* out of *Alsatia*, and besieged *Brisac*;  
*Lewis* on the other hand, to get an Interest a  
*Lorainers*, married that King's Sister.

940. Now Count *Hebert* of *Vermandois* havi  
 and cunning got his Son but of ten Years  
 nominated Arch-bishop of *Rheims*, contrar,  
 Rules of the Church, in opposition to  
 of the King's; the Contest about the Arcn  
 created a War that lasted 18 or 20 Years,  
 ly molested all *Campaigne*: The first effect  
 was, that *Hebert* and the *Norman* took  
 failing to take *Laon* they retired to *Otho*,  
 themselves under his Protection; yet next Y

which way soever it came into *Hebert's* Possession I cannot tell, laid Siege to it, tho to his own detriment; for being surprized in his Camp by his base Subjects, he saw one half of his Men slain, and could not save himself but by a shameful Flight; and then being forsaken of all his *Neustrian* Subjects, he retired to *Charles Constantine*, Earl of *Vienne*, his Cousin German; thence had recourse to the Pope, the Lords of *Aquitain*, and to *William Duke of Normandy*, who all gave him ready Assistance; and with these Forces he sought all opportunities to fight the Enemy; but failing of that, first a Truce, then a Peace was concluded by King *Otho's* Mediation, whereby *Hugh* and *Hebert* submitted to their King.

*William Duke of Normandy* being now basely murdered by the Earl of *Flanders* at an Interview, *Lewis* well knowing that while the *Normans* thereupon were divided amongst themselves, their little Duke *Richard* might be easily stripped, and that it would be a noble Act to recover so great and so good a Country, he went to *Roan*, seized on *Richard*, and his Subjects with some difficulty suffered their young Duke, under pretence of Education, to be carried away to *Laon*: Upon which *Arnold Earl of Flanders*, whose Interest it was to extirpate all the *Normans*, easily inclined the King to incapacitate the Duke for ever of succeeding, and reclaim the Dutchy: But before they came to put

and so they entred the Country  
 one time ; but *Herbert* Count of  
 ty preserved the Dutchy, for he  
 to pretend a Submission to the King  
 easily perswaded him to reserve all that  
 to himself, and take away from *Hugh*  
 which he had conquered, whereby  
 Rupture between thoe Princes ; and  
 the discontented *Hugh* once more to un-  
 Protection of *Richard*. And for the Resto-  
 this young Prince he used this device : *The*  
*Norman* King named *Aigrold*, who bei-  
 Years before from *Denmark*, had fi-  
*Constantin* ; this Prince upon a Consult-  
*ward* revolted against *Lewis*, and sent to  
 to set little *Richard* at Liberty, upon  
 counterfeiting great Zeal, assured the *King*  
*mandy* was firm to his Service, and by  
 Pretence he engaged the King to go thither  
 to suppress that Pirate : The King's Army and  
 being near one another, the last seemed to be  
 and demanded a Conference, which was  
*Cressenville* ; and the Train was so well  
*Norman* finding himself the stronger, he  
 that came with the King, seized upon his  
 and sent him Prisoner to *Rhoan* : He  
 after by the Mediation of Friends got his  
 upon condition he should restore *Rich-*  
 and receive Homage ; but for all that  
 still under the Power of *Hugh*, who I kn-  
 what Pretences detained him at least a  
 would not let him go till he had got the City  
 from him.

ing Lewis  
 ade a  
 risoner.  
 944.

946.

But the King being at length got loose, and  
 with *Otho* King of *Germany*, and the Earl of  
 against *Hugh*, they had an Army together of  
 gions, and all of them wore Straw Hats ; bu-  
 were so baffled at the Siege of *Rhoan*, and *E-*  
*nold's* deserting of them, that they left it and  
 948. Now the Dispute about this time between *F-*  
*Vermandois* and *Arnold* about the Arch-  
*Rheims*, became a mighty business ; it  
 by some Prelates at *Douzi*, who referred

Synodical Assembly of *French and German Bishops at Verdun*, where *Hugh* not appearing, the Archbishoprick was awarded to *Arnold*. Upon this *Hugh* complaining to the Pope, he procures another Assembly to determine this difference, and the Quarrel between King *Lewis* and *Hugh le Blanc*; here the King set forth all the mischiefs *Hugh* had done him, by detaining him a Prisoner a whole Year, and otherwise, and offered if any one could lay to his charge the Troubles and Calamities of the Kingdom, to justify himself in such a manner as the Council should advise, even by personal Proof in the Field of Battel. Upon these Complaints they wrote Letters to *Hugh le Blanc* and his Adherents, to admonish them to return to their Duty, under pain of an Anathema; and doing Justice upon the Petition of *Arnold*, they confirmed the Archbishoprick to him, and excommunicated *Hugh* his Competitor till he duly repented. Hereupon *Otho* assisted King *Lewis* with good Forces, the *Lorain Bishops* his Vassals took *Mousoir* and rased it, they excommunicated *Thibault*, who kept the City of *Lyon* for *Hugh*; and many other Traverses of Action passed between the contending Parties, some too tedious and others too insignificant to be noted. However we are to observe that this Year proved fatal to *Fulk* the good Earl of *Anjou*, a very religious Prince, and a Lover of Learning, and who being one day informed that King *Lewis* crossed at his going so often to the Quire

Earl of  
Anjou's  
Death.

## ign of I

aged about 45, and kept P. 1er 1  
 went and married E. 1  
 Troyes, Son to the 1. H. 10  
 her Husband die in Prilon; 1 1tn  
 951. Revenge to the prejudice of 1er 1  
 made that only a Cloak for her Incon 1ce.  
 The King But notwithstanding the patched 1e  
 and Hugh mentioned between King Lewis and 1. 1  
 agree. about the Arch-bishoprick of 1 quickly  
 953. them again to Daggers drawing; but Hugh at  
 treating with the King personally at Soissons, he  
 a Peace with him this Year, about the end of 1  
 And in that which followed King L. died  
 strange Accident, for as he 1 from 1  
 Rheims, spurring to ride after a Wc 1 whi  
 in the way, his Horse stumbled, and thr  
 upon the Ground that he was bruised all  
 these Bruises turning into a kind of Le 1  
 his Death the 15th of October in the City 1  
 after he had reigned 18 Years and 3 M  
 lived 38 or 39: He left only two Sons  
 Lotair and Charles, the last of whom no  
 the Kingdom with the other; and fr 1n  
 we find the Eldest alone have the Title of Ki 1  
 younger Brothers had only some Lands in 1  
 and under an entire Subjection; and even of t  
 Kingly Power being increased, hath taken the  
 sion for want of Heirs Male, which has not  
 contributed to restore the Grandeur of the Moir







# BOOK V.

## CHAP. I.

### *The Reign of LOTAIR.*

THE greatest part of the Power being in the Hands of *Hugh*, he might have taken the Crown if he had not feared *Otho's* Forces and the Jealousy of the *French* Nobility; but *Lothair* was crowned King at *Rheims*, upon which occasion he gave the Dutchies of *Burgundy* and *Spain* to *Hugh le Blanc*, and *Hugh Capet* his Son, being satisfied, it was not difficult to calm the other who were less considerable. Now *France* was enough for three Years together, only *Hugh* led the King into *Poitou*, to make *William* of that Country, and Duke of *Aquitain*, become obedient, and laid Siege to *Poitiers*; but the scarcity *Lothair* provisions and the Terror of a Thunder Clap, before

who succeeded him, and *Henry* after them.

The Children of the deceased *Hugh the White*, the Persuasion of *Bruno* Arch-Bishop of *Cologn*, dred Homage for their Lands to *H. Lotair*, who Retribution declared the eldest Duke of *France*, as Father had been, and bestowed *Poitou* upon him upon condition only that he were able to conquer it for it was then possess'd by another Potent Earl; whence it is conjectured, that the Kings had yet entirely given away their Power, of bestowing Dutchies and Earldoms, and that if they were but tary, the same was only but Usurpation and not sion. But all the new Principalities and new firs Seignories of the Kingdom, did not trouble the so much as that of the *Normans*, who enjoyed for a Province; wherefore *Bruno* who governed the Affairs of the Kingdom, by the Instigation of the Duke of *Flanders*, *Chartres*, and *Anjou*, combined to Duke *Richard*, and for that reason sent for him to the General Assembly of the States at *Amiens*, a design to seize him; but *Richard*, who was on Journey, being informed of the Conspiracy by unknown Gentlemen, returned home, and stood upon his Guard: He also avoided another Snare King had laid for him near the *Epte*, whither he sent for him to do him Homage, he thought to seize him; but he withdrew from hence likewise before and to escaped.

Treacherous Designs against the Norman.  
959.

To pass over that the Western Empire was at this time revived again in the Person of *Otto King of Germany*, to which Country the Title hath ever remained annex'd; we are to observe that divers Grels were still troublesome to *France*; the two greatest being about the Archbishoprick of *Rheims*, as the hatred of the Counts *Thibault* of *Chartres*, and the old Earl of *Flanders* against the *Normans*: This indeed might have been composed by restoring *Herbert Vermandois* to his Dignity in *Rheims*, *Arnold* the Bishop being dead in 962, if the Queen could have secured it; but far from that, she brought it so that the Council of *Soissons* referred it to the Pope who declared him excommunicated.

ready for two years to come. But in  
969. 3 *Thibault* supported by the King, went  
ed before *Roan*, from whence he could not  
it by the Assistance of the Infidel *Normans*,  
King of *Denmark* sent to his Kinsman *Ri-*  
having forced him to retreat, made Incur-  
very Gates of *Paris*.

973. peror *Otho* the Great dying at this time,  
ed by his Son *Otho* the Second, tho not  
ie Fortune, for his Country was distract-  
Wars, particularly *Lorain*, of which the  
g's Brother *Charles* was created Duke. But  
ould not forget the Remembrance of their  
in *Lorain* and therefore King *Lothar*

Lotair  
and Orto  
agree.  
978.

then committed all the Ravages he could up and the Countries. Orto on the other hand in re hereof with 60000 men, made a great Irruption to France, sacked all Champagne, and the Isle of even to Paris, sending word to Hugh Capet who there, and Count of that City, that he would an *Alleluja* sung upon Mount *Martre* by 50 Priests, that it should be heard at *Nostre-dame*, the approach of Winter he was obliged to retire. Lotair with Hugh Capet having drawn their together, cut off all his Rearguard as they were sing the *Aisne* (which was overflowed) and put him fighting to the *Ardennes*: Now in this retreat Earl of *Anjou* let the *German*s know, that the rel being between the two Kings, it were better decided it singly, rather than shed the Blood of any Innocent Men; but the *German*s replied, That they did not doubt their King's Courage, yet they not consent he should expose his Person singly: Orto roughly handled, sought an Accommodation with French; and Lotair and he conferring together at *Rheims*, they concluded a Peace upon condition Lotair should yield him *Lorain* to be held in Fee the Crown of France, at which the French shewed a great deal of discontent. Thus the Sovereignty of that Kingdom remained in Lotair, and Dutchy of Lower *Lorain*, which two years before been conferred upon Charles by Orto, reverted to disposal; but as he must give some part to Charles, he agreed he should enjoy that also, which was confirmed at an Interview between that King and Orto on the River *Kar*: But Charles imagining his Father had yielded him that Dutchy but by Compulsion only, did Homage to Orto for it for his greater support. Now this Submission of Charles sounded in the Ears of the French, and the Augmentation of his Power certainly shocked the Designs of Hugh Capet, who was preparing his way to the Throne: we are to consider that Charles was the only Obstacle since Lotair had but one Son, and he weak by Age and Understanding, and of very small hopes; besides, the abode of Charles in those Countries with coming into France, the too great Affection he

the *Germans*, who at that time were the Capital  
of *France*, as likewise some *Rencontres* with  
his Brother, and amongst therest one about  
of *Cambray*, which he defended against *Lo-*  
who would have plundered the Churches, as he had  
those of *Arras*, gave his Enemies occasion to de-  
amongst the *French*.

the Emperor *Otho* the second dying this year, 982.

*Lotair* believing *Germany* would be all in Con-  
about the Guardianship of young *Otho*, he en-  
*Barain*, took *Verdun*, and *Godfrey* the Earl there-  
when he understood *Otho* was crowned by the  
of all the Nobility, he returned home. Two

*Lotair*  
*takes Ver-*  
*dun.*

he restored *Verdun*, and caused his Son *Lew-*  
be crowned to reign with him, he having alrea-  
ried him to *Blanche* a Princess of *Aquitain*:  
Couple were ill matched, for the Woman  
Courageous and Gallant, the Husband wanting  
of Mind and perhaps of Body, insomuch that  
sed him, and carrying him into her own Coun-  
der colour that she could procure the conquest  
by the Assistance of her Friends she planted  
the, and the King was forced to go and fetch  
once again. This was a great misfortune in the  
Family, and yet a greater, that *Lotair* died  
of *March* the following year, of some

983.

985.

## The Reign of Lewis V.

Lewis's  
Death.

The Carlo-  
vinian  
Race at an  
End.

upon him, as it seems, refo to  
June to his Grandmother . la W  
tho I. an Heroick Princ ti in  
ther of Kings ; but t poor rince  
effected, ended his Lite in the  
ther had done, and by the i r mery  
*Blanche*. An Author of those tii  
Kingdom to *Hugh Capet*, and another, ti  
ed it to his Wife, upon Condition l inow  
him : His Reign in all was about t e y  
20 Monthswith his Father, and six v  
with his Reign ended the C i  
had lasted 236 years, in a Succession of ii  
cluding those only of *West-France*.

There were sprung up three Branch of  
one in *Italy* by the Emperor *Lotair I.* a  
many by his Brother *Lewis*, and a third w  
by *Charles the Bald*, and all three ended  
with a *Lewis* ; That of *Italy* by *Lewis II.* G  
son of *Lotair* ; That of *Germany* by *Le*  
*Arnold* ; and That of *France* by this *L*  
*ant*. The Causes of the Ruin of this Race  
tributed to several Particulars : As 1. T  
the State into several Kingdor 2. i  
Love the *Debonnaire* had to l n C s  
3. The Imbecillity of most or ti Pi :  
Ravages and Inroads of the A s for  
years together, which favoured the At  
Great Lords. 5. The Multitude of t  
natural Children, who played the Soveri  
Countries allotted them. 6. We may add,  
Tree bearing no more good Fruit, the Alm  
pluck it up to plant another in the room c  
fair and fertil ; whose Duration has been exten  
longer ; but I will not say with some *Fr*  
ans, it will be to the final Period of T ,  
Glory to the ends of all the Earth.

---

*The Third and Capetine Race.*

## C H A P. III.

*The Reign of HUGH CAPET.*

THE only Person of the *Carlovinian* Race remaining was *Charles* Duke of *Lorain*, but he being abandoned ill favoured by the *French*, and *Hugh Capet* contrary in the heart of the Kingdom, powerful and esteemed, he was more like to prevail; he held *Duchy of Burgundy* by his Brother *Henry*, that *Normandy* by his Nephew Duke *Richard*, and that *France* with the Counties of *Paris* and *Orleans* in his own Hands; besides, having made a strong Party, assembled the Lords at *Noyon*, he was chosen King May, and crowned at *Rheims* without any Opposition, which is very strange, considering the clearness of *Charles's* Title, for whom no one present claimed; on the contrary all gave their Oaths in writing, as well as by word of Mouth, to his Enemy; and that Title soever *Hugh* might pretend to come,



being rejected, he had recourse to Arms, and the Assistance he had was from *Arnold* Earl of *Flam* and *Hebert* Earl of *Champagne*; but the first dying year, the other durst hardly stir; however by the means of *Arnold* his Bastard Brother, who a Clerk at *Laon*, seized upon that City, and the Bishop of *Rheims* therein, who being a cunning presently pretended to be wholly his Friend, thereby so managed the Prince, that he made him Chief of his Council. In the mean time *Capet* was idle, but quickly laid Siege to *Laon*; yet his Troops being careless of their Guard, *Charles* in a brave routed them, and destroyed their Works, then made himself Master of *Rheims* and *Soissons*; but suff'ring this heat of good Success to cool, few People devoted for him. It was highly conducive to *Hugh's* Interest to gain *Arnold* the Natural Brother of *Charles*, therefore the Archbishoprick of *Rheims* becoming vacant by the Death of *Aldaberon*, he conferred upon him; but *Charles* was sometime after introduced thither, as supposed by the Concurrence of the Bishop, tho he ever denied it, and remained a Prisoner in *Charles's* Hands: At the same time *William* of *Poitou* and Duke of *Aquitain* refused to acknowledge the two Kings *Hugh* and *Robert*, repulsed sharply at *Poitiers*, pursued them to the *Loire*, had a bloody Engagement with them there, but Conclusion was to the advantage of the French.

Charles betrayed to Capet.

On the other hand *Charles* living in two great security at *Laon*, was betrayed with the Place into the Hands of *Capet*, and sent Prisoner to *Orleans*; his Brother *Arnold* having been taken with him, he by a Council of Bishops at *Rheims* degraded, and imprisoned with his Brother; *Gerbert*, so learned a man in respect to those times, as to be reputed a magician, being chosen in his Place.

993.

This year *William* Duke of *Aquitain* made Peace with *Capet*, and owned to hold of him, but another *William* Duke of *Gascoigny* kept himself still independent: Now many are of opinion, tho without certain Proofs, that *Capet* confirmed the Inheritance of the great Estates, Dutchies, and Earldoms to the Lords that had usurped them; and 'tis probable, that

we had first given such as depended upon them  
own Vassals, thereby to engage them to main-  
tain their Usurpations; however 'tis certain he  
to the Crown, that had scarce any thing left,  
loos of *Paris*, the Dukedom of *France* con-  
all between the *Loire* and the *Seine*, and the  
of *Orleans*: Now amongst the Great Lords,  
there were many, the most Considerable were  
of *Burgundy*, *Normandy*, *Aquitain*, and  
(*Bretagne* then holding of *Normandy*) the  
*Flanders*, *Champaign*, and *Tholonze*, and  
*Barcelona* and *Anjou*. As for *Lorain*, *Bra-*  
the several Divisions made out of the Ruins  
Kingdom of *Arles*, they held of the Emperor,  
were not under our Cognizance: Indeed the  
is of the Kingdom thought that *Capet* ought to  
be from them, because they had put the Crown  
Head; so that nothing but his Patience and  
could keep them from Extremity, and sustain  
the Throne: The Count *de la Marche* and  
was one of the most unruly, and *Fulk Ner-*  
some Pretensions to *Tours*, the other believ-  
his behalf, and refused to desist at the King's  
; nay he was so high, that when asked,  
was that made you a Count? he replied, the  
made you a King; and so going on with his

are not perfect Barbarians, was Religious, Devout, and a Lover of the Churchmen, gave up all the Abbys held, and surrendered his Right of Election to the Clergy and Monks; and by his Example those Lords that possessed Church-Lands as their own Patrimony not only restored them, but by way of reparation founded Monasteries which they filled with reformed Monks, such was the Devotion or rather Superstition of those Times. And now the Thread of *Capet's* being spun out, he ended his days on the 29<sup>th</sup> of this year, tho others will have it to be the 22<sup>d</sup> Nov. being about five and fifty years old, after he reigned nine, and some Months, and was buried at *Dennis*: He had by his Wife *Adeleide*, *Robert*, three Daughters, *Hadvige*, or *Aloyde*, Wife of *Re* IV. Earl of *Mons* and *Haynault*, *Adelais* Wife *Renard* I. Earl of *Nevers*, and *Gisle* married to *R* I. Earl of *Poitou*. The same year died *Richard* *Peur*, or the fearless Duke of *Normandy*, aged four years, of which he had reigned nine, and was succeeded by his Son *Richard* II.

**Hugh Ca-  
rter's  
Death.  
996.**

**The bur-  
ning Sick-  
ness breaks  
out again.**

About this time the sacred Fire, which they tell the burning Sickneſs, that had formerly made great havock, broke out again, cruelly tormenting France eſpecially for two Ages: It ſeized People on a ſudden burnt the Entrails or ſome other part of the Body which fell off piecemeal, and happy were thoſe that eſcaped with the loſs of a Leg or an Arm. This calamity in *Aquitain, Angoumois, Perigord, and Limouſin* Anno 994, ſwept away above 40000 Perſons in a few days time, and wrought at leaſt this good effect, that the Great Ones who had tormented their Province by intestine Feuds, fearing the Divine Indignation, made a ſolemn Oath among themſelves to do Juſtice to their Subjects, and for this end formed a holy League which drew other Provinces by their Example to do like. And this Century is no leſs remarkable, for having obtained the Name of the Iron-Age, which may have ariſen from the continual and bloody Wars between the Weſtern Princes, and from the terrible ſavageſts of the *Normans, Hungarians, and Saracens* but if they called it ſo from the Ignorance and Irregularity of Men's Manners, this was done rather in

the Church of *Rome*, where, according to *Me-*  
nigenous Confession, there were in Truth hor-  
rours and Disorders.

---

C H A P. IV.

*The Reign of ROBERT.*

King, compleat both of Body and Mind,  
a handfom Stature, a sweet and grave Air,  
and sage Humour, having had very good  
education, became very knowing for that Age, much  
religious and Zealous for the Service of God,  
Charitable and *Debonnaire* towards his Peo-  
ple; a Prince that ever wore a Crown; and in  
his Reign was favoured with the choicest Blef-  
sings, a long and happy Peace, which after  
a few and petty Wars he enjoyed near thirty

It hapning that the Earl of *Poitou*, and Duke  
of *Breton* having War with *Roson II.* Earl of *Pe-*  
*Robert* was obliged to assist him as his King. 997, and  
998.

in those days punish Gentlemen with Death  
bellion or Felony, unless they committed it  
and in that Case they hanged them on some  
Place, that Crime degrading them of all Nobility

Degrees of  
Marriage  
appointed.  
1002.

About this time the Degrees of Consanguinity  
in Marriage was prohibited, having been extended  
the seventh Kindred, caused many Broils, especially  
among Princes and Great Men, who commonly  
akin to one another, even within that Degree  
as soon as Man and Wife fell out, or that  
had a mind to trouble them, they needed but  
Oath they were of Kin within the forbidden Limit  
and produce Witnesses upon it, and then the  
Court or Assembly would do the work. Queen *Lutga*  
*Robert's* first Wife being dead, he was politically  
vised to marry *Bertha*, Sister to *Rodolph* the Late  
of *Burgundy*, the Widow of *Eudes I.* Earl  
*tres*, and Mother of *Eudes II.* then young. They  
being akin in the fourth Degree, and besides that  
having held a Child with her at the Font; he  
he might prevent the Inconveniency of Nullity  
Marriage by the Authority of the *Gallican*  
and the Assembly he called for that purpose was  
it; only *Abbon* the Abbot of *Fleury*, a violent  
not having been able to dissuade the King from  
Match, bestirred himself with much Vigour  
it dissolved; and the Pope excommunicated  
shops that had authorized it, as also the two  
that were contracted, if they did not forthwith  
rate; but the King not obeying the Sentence,

K. Robert  
excommunicated.  
1003.

by an unheard of Procedure, put the whole  
under an Interdiction, to which the blind King  
humbly submitted, that all the King's Domesticks  
except two or three forsook him, and threw  
was left at his Table to the Dogs, no body then  
lawful to eat of that Meat he had but touched  
were these Hardships, and not a monstrous  
tion by his Wife, who, the Miracle-mongers  
delivered of a Child, whose Neck and Feet resembled  
a Goose, that constrained him to part with  
not till two or three years after; and we find  
upon, that they made a Journey to *Rome* either  
to send their Cause, or crave the Pope's Pardon

here, the Marriage remained null; to that the Power of the See of Rome was now at that nothing must withstand it, of which take

Example more: *Guy* Viscount of *Limoges* had taken the Bishop of *Angoulesme* Prisoner, he led for it to *Rome*, where the Pope *Silvester II.* sentenced *Guy* to be tied to the Necks of two oxen, and his Body thus torn and bruised to be cast on the Dunghil, and the same was to be put in three days after: In the mean time the Pope himself moved with Compassion, pardoned *Guy* and stealing away in the night, generously conveyed him to *France* again along with him.

At this time *Henry* Duke of *Burgundy*, and the son of *Hugh* Capet dying without Issue, he by Will left the Dutchy to *Otho-William* surnamed the Great, who being already Earl of *Burgundy* now called *Franche Comte*, and assisted by the Earl

of *Langres*, he by virtue of a Grant took possession of all *Burgundy*: But *Robert*, to whom this Dutchy did of Right belong, his Uncle, marched with a great Army, together with *Richard* Duke of *Normandy*, to suppress him, took *Auxerre* by Articles, and *Avalon* by Force, as they said, miraculously falling before him; and at length he expelled *Otho-William* beyond the *Soane*, where he be-

1006.

Robert r.  
covers  
Burgun-  
dy.

1013.

1015.

Pr. Hugh  
crowned  
King.  
1017.

his Table, to touch their Ulcers, and to make the Sign of the Cross over them, whereby they pretend they were oftentimes healed: He was a Prince also that delighted to sing in the Quire, and composed Words and Notes for the Songs and Responses, some of which the Church has preserved, and makes use of to this day: But for all this the King having conferred the Arch bishoprick of *Bourges* upon his natural Son *Goslin*, Abbot of *Fleury*, the Clergy opposed it much, alledging the Canons admitted no Bastards to the Prelacy, which occasioned so many Tumults that they were not allayed till five Years after: However the King was not wanting to justify the Rights, and undertake the Protection of the Clergy as occasion offered. For *Rynard II.* surnamed the Bad, Earl of *Sens*, using much violence against *Leoterie* his Arch-bishop, and all the Clergy within his Territories; *Robert* besieged and took his City, deprived him of his Earldom, and rejoined it to his Demeans, and then suppress the Rebellion of the *Burgundians*, destroying and pulling down their Castles and fortified Places, that they might no longer be the Receptacles of such Persons.

And now *Hugh* the King's eldest Son being a Prince of great Accomplishments both in Body and Mind; and of early hopes, tho he were not yet 10 Years old, his Father caused him to be crowned at *Compeigne*, on the day of *Pentecost* this Year, and his Name was made use of in all Publick Acts with that of his Father.

In the mean time the *Danes* and *Normans* had not quite forgot their Custom of Piracy, for they landed now in *Wiltshire*, where all the Country armed to expel them; and the Duke of *Acquitaine* going to attack them, 20 or 30 of his most considerable Men fell into Holes covered over with Branches and green Turfs, which the *Normans* had dugged about the Avenues to their Camp, and thus disconcerted the rest from advancing against them, however the *Normans* fearing the worst, retired to their ships in the Night, but demanded what Ransom they pleased for the Prisoners they had got.

Now a War breaking out between *Richard* Duke of *Normandy* and *Isabel* Earl of *Compeigne*, the latter raised

raised so many other Enemies against the *Norman*, that that Prince fearing to be overwhelmed, sent for Assistance to the King of *Sweden* and *Norway*, who sacked the City of *Dele*, and marched towards *Chartres*: Upon which all *France* thro a remembrance of former Desolations, fell into an extreme apprehension of danger, and the King so bestirred himself to quench this Flame, that he brought the two Princes to an Agreement, and the *Northern* Kings to retire home. But tho the King had conquered this difficulty, yet the proud and imperious humour of *Queen Constance* made him perpetually uneasy; he used all means to mollify her, and the Queen one day being offended with a Favourite of his, named *Hugh de Beauvis*, and complaining of him to her Cousin *Fulk* Earl of *Anjou*, with desires he would revenge her; the Earl sent 12 of his Country Gentlemen to seize *Hugh* as he was hunting with the King, and cruelly cut off his Head in his Presence without any regard to his Intreaties. The King was not only forced to put up this Affront for fear of a greater mischief, but withal to endure this Step-Mother to treat his Son *Hugh* with the greatest Indignity, even to the reducing of him to the want of all Necessaries; but the young King did not long survive to bear them, for he departed this Life on the 17th of *September* this Year, in the Flower of his Age, his Death being lamented by all *Europe* for his rare and lovely Qualities, which had acquired him so great Reputation, that he could hardly have made it good if he had long survived. King *Robert* had three Sons more, *Henry*, *Robert* and *Eudes*, which last, some said, was the eldest of them all: However it were, the Father now caused *Henry* to be crowned, tho the Queen by a depraved Appetite had undertaken to advance *Robert* to the Throne, and for that Reason caused a great many Tumults to the great mortification of her Husband, but she failed to carry her point against him.

*The Queen  
proud and  
revengeful.  
1025.*

*K. Hugh's  
Death.  
1028.*

*Henry  
crowned.  
1029.*

But his Troubles did not arise alone from this Woman, other Accidents gave him some uneasiness; more particularly, the King having allowed the liberty of electing *Bishops* to the Clergy, yet upon the Death of *the Bishop of Winchester*, he by his absolute Authority



devout. the Crofs over them, whereby they pretend  
 oftentimes healed: He was a Prince also tha  
 ed to fing in the Quire, and composed W  
 Notes for the Songs and Responses, some  
 the Church has preserved, and makes use o  
 day: But for all this the King having com  
 Arch-bishoprick of *Bouges* upon his natural S  
 Abbot of *Fleury*, the Clergy opposed it muc  
 ing the Canons admitted no Bastards to the  
 1013. which occasioned so many Tumults that they  
 allayed till five Years after: However the  
 not wanting to justify the Rights, and unde  
 Protection of the Clergy as occasion offe  
*Raynard II.* surnamed the Bad, Earl of *Sens*, u  
 violence against *Leoteric* his Arch-bishop, a  
 Clergy within his Territories; *Robert* besi  
 took his City, deprived him of his Earldom  
 joined it to his Demeans, and then suppress  
 1015. bellion of the *Burgundians*, destroying an  
 down their Castles and fortified Places,  
 might no longer be the Receptacles of such P  
 Pr. Hugh And now *Hugh* the King's eldest Son bein  
 crowned of great Accomplishments both in Body a  
 King. and of early hopes, tho he were not yet  
 1017. old, his Father caused him to be crowned at  
 on the day of *Pentecost* this Year, and his  
 made use of in all Publick Acts with that c  
 ther.

In the mean time the *Danes* and *Norma*  
 quite forgot their Custom of Piracy, for th  
 now in *Poitou*, where all the Country arn  
 pel them; and the Duke of *Aqustain* goin  
 them, 20 or 30 of his most considerable Met  
 Holes covered over with Branches and gro  
 which the *Normans* had digged about the  
 their Camp, and this disheartned the rest fro  
 ing against them; however the *Normans* se  
 worst, retired to their Ships in the Nigh  
 manded what Ransom they pleased for the  
 they had got.

Now a War breaking out between *Richar*  
*Normandy* and *Eudes* Earl of *Campaigne*,

So many other Enemies against the *Norman*,  
 the Prince fearing to be overwhelmed, sent for  
 aid to the King of *Sweden* and *Norway*, who  
 the City of *Dele*, and marched towards *Char-*  
*lton* which all *France* thro a remembrance of for-  
 e-dolations, fell into an extreme apprehension of  
 it, and the King so bestirred himself to quench  
 the same, that he brought the two Princes to an  
 agreement, and the *Northern* Kings to retire home.  
 As the King had conquered this difficulty, yet  
 the proud and imperious humour of *Queen Constance*  
 was perpetually uneasy; he used all means to  
 please her, and the Queen one day being offended  
 by a Favourite of his, named *Hugh de Beauneis*, and  
 coming of him to her Cousin *Fulk* Earl of *Anjou*,  
 desires he would revenge her; the Earl sent 12 of  
 his best Men to seize *Hugh* as he was hunt-  
 ing in the King, and cruelly cut off his Head in his  
 presence without any regard to his Intreaties. The  
 King was not only forced to put up this Affront for  
 a greater mischief, but withal to endure this  
 rather to treat his Son *Hugh* with the greatest  
 severity, even to the reducing of him to the want  
 of necessaries; but the young King did not long  
 to bear them, for he departed this Life on the  
 21<sup>st</sup> of September this Year, in the Flower of his Age,  
 much being lamented by all *France* for his rare

The Queen  
 proud and  
 revengeful.  
 1025.

K. Hugh's  
 Death.  
 1028.

1030, *Robert's death and character.* 1033. substituting another in his place, the Canons poisoned him; and the King putting in another. this excited great a trouble among the Clergy of that Diocess, that he was forced to send his Son to instate and secure him from their Attempts. Now whilst *Henry* was in the Country, there happened a great Eclipse of the Sun and *Robert* his Father was seized of a Distemper whereof he died on the 20th of July this Year, after he had lived 61, and of them reigned 45 and a half, with 9 and a half with his Father, and 36 since his Death. It was no fault of his Government that *France* was not completely happy, he gave his Subjects what depended upon him, I mean Peace and Justice, but had the unhappiness to see a Famine three times; after which a Plague made a great destruction in his Dominions in the Years 1007, and 1010, and from 1030 to 1033, which last was so severe in this Country, that many People were seen to dig up dead Carcases for Food, to go a hunting after little Children, and lie in wait at the corners of Woods like Beasts of Prey to devour Passengers; nay, there was one so possessed with the covetous desire of Gain, more cruel than Famine itself, that he exposed human Flesh to Sale in the City of *Tours*, but that detestable Prodigy was expiated by the People in the Flames.

## C H A P. V.

## The Reign of HENRY I.

THIS King's first and most capital Enemy was his own Mother, who to advance her beloved *Robert* made a good Party among the Nobility, and more particularly engaged *Baldwin* Earl of *Flanders*, and *Eudes* Earl of *Champagne*, on which last she conferred the City of *Sens*; but *Henry* showing a vigour both of Body and Mind above his Age, with the Assistance of *Robert* Duke of *Normandy*, gave her and her Party so many Defeats, that he reduced her in spite of all her Projects to live quietly with him. After which he gave his Brother *Robert* the Cities of *Chartres* and



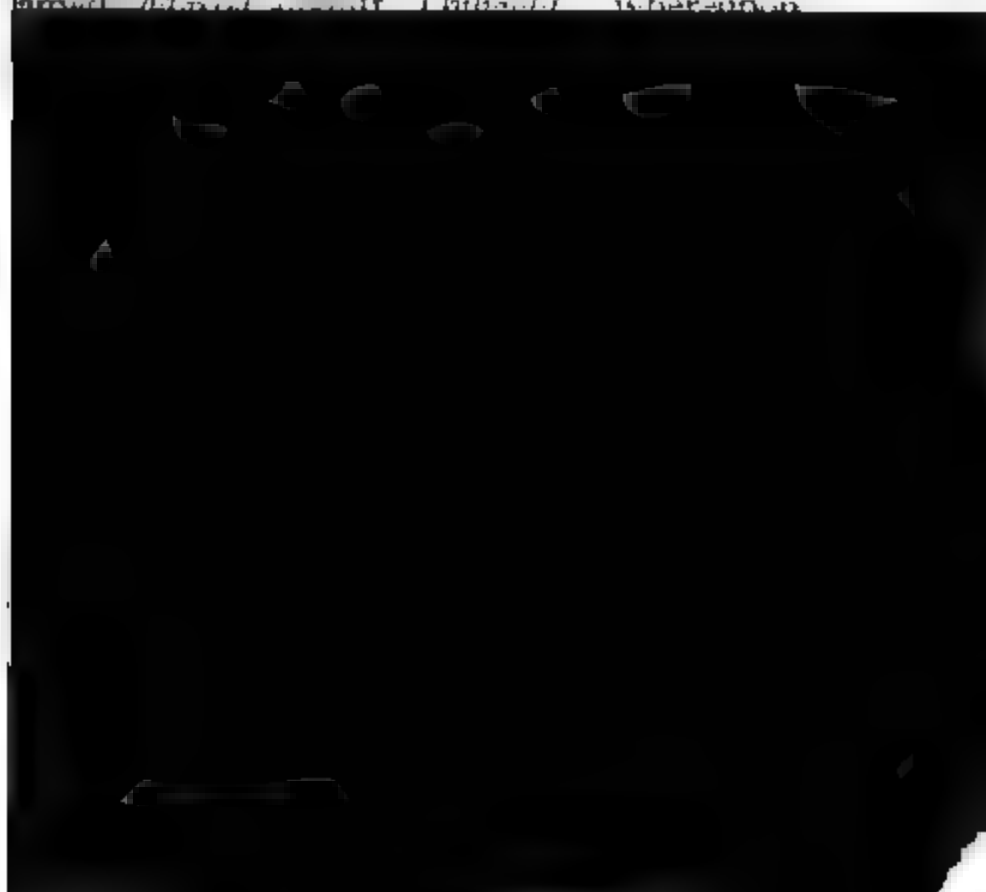


the French Vexin, and at the same time, and the Dutchy of Burgundy upon him, Grant to the first Race of the Dukes of Burgundy the Blood Royal. In the mean time the Earl of Champagne did not look upon himself vanquish'd by the Defeat of the Party, so that the King him lay down his Sword was forced to raise his Army twice, and the third time not only to rout his Troops, but caus'd him to fly away naked, himself.

The Earl after many other Adventures against the Emperor about his Pretensions to the Duchy of Burgundy, dying, his Sons in 1040, &c. did Homage for their Territories to King Henry because he had not assisted their Father against the Emperor. However they had also another Pretension, the Crown belonged to his Brother Robert, and in short they encouraged him to set up for King. Henry did not give this Conspiracy time to make any Progress, for he besieged his Brother in Paris, whither he had retired, took him and sent him to Orleans, and so we hear no more of him. When done, he march'd against the Earl of Champagne, routed him; from whence turning his Arms against the Earl of Meulan their Ally, he deprived him of his Earldom: On the other hand he animated the Earl of Meulan against Thibault, who was upon

Henry's  
Grant to  
Robert his  
Brother.  
1035.

He takes  
his Brother  
Eudes  
Prisoner.  
1041.



Henry  
assists the  
Normans.  
1041.

*Rodolph de Gale* his Constable for his Guardian; the Lords were very loth to obey him, because the Defect of his Birth, and they were headed *Guy of Burgundy*, the Son of *Reynold* Earl of *Franche Comte*, and *Alix* the deceased Duke's Sister; and indeed the Faction was so strong, they had like to have ruined *William*, but *Henry* espoused his Cause, and both of them engaging Enemy in the Valley of the *Dovons* near *Caen*, King was beat down with a Lance by a Gentleman *Constantine*, but recovered again without any hurt, and so the Rebels were entirely defeated.

The Earl of *Anjou*, who had been once in great favour with the King, I know not from what cause grown betwixt them, let fall some Words, which highly offended *Henry*, that he undertook to challenge him; and therefore he being accompanied with the Duke of *Normandy*, entred into his Territories: they were soon reconciled: And now Duke *William* having attained to Years fit for Matrimony, espoused *Matilda* the Daughter of *Bidwin* the Pious, Earl of *Flanders*, and of *Aaeloid* the Daughter of King *Bert*; so that she being of kin to him, they were forced to obtain a Dispensation of the Pope for it; but the Church opposing this, the Earl of *Arques* headed Malecontents, but was presently repulsed by the Duke, who besieged him in the Castle of *Arques*: The Duke who changed sides either according to his Humour or Interest, highly undertook his Defence, and was the first Person to the Relief of the Place; but tho' he sent some Provisions into it, the Duke was resolutely to keep it blocked up; so that the Earl at length was forced to give it up, on condition he might enjoy his Life without loss of Members, and have some Land for his Subsistence. Hereupon the broken Remnants of the Party fled to King *Henry*, who growing somewhat jealous of *William's* Prosperity, and pushed forward by the Earls of *Anjou* and *Poitou*, the Duke's Enemies, promised to turn him out of his Dukedom, in order to which being advanced towards the *Normans* had the good Fortune to cut his Guard to pieces, between *Escomy* and *Mortemer*, which check the King delivered up the Castle of *Taleres* to the Duke.

Henry  
worsted by  
the Nor-  
mans.  
1047.

Year the Emperor *Henry III.* called the *Black,*  
 King of *France* had an Interview in the  
 of *Meſſin*, where they revived their antient

After which we find nothing material  
 Country till 1054. when *Thibald* Earl of *Char-*  
 ing it to Heart, that the King ſhould thruſt  
 of the Earldom of *Tours*, and not being able  
 ſatisfaction, he went and waited upon the Em-  
*Metz*, who made him a Knight, and promiſed  
 Protection: But to prevent any jealousy and  
 that this Journey might ſow between the Em-  
 and the King, they thought fit to ſet all things  
 a mutual Interview, at the ſame place where  
 d formerly met, where the King complained  
 Governor had contravened the Articles of Al-  
 and finding no ſatisfaction he conceived ſome  
 ſions of an ill Deſign upon his Perſon, and ſo  
 from thence by Night. *Normandy* having ſtill  
 ſtricks of diviſion in its Boſom, the King think-  
 make advantage of it attempted to bring it to  
 by a ſecond Expedition, which was no more  
 than the firſt, his Army having been defeat-  
 the Plains of *Varaville*, after which he made a  
 with the Duke.

Henry de-  
 feated in  
 Norman-  
 dy.  
 1058.

King not long after finding himſelf broken  
 the Toils of Government, tho he was not above  
 of Age, called together the Grandees of the



*Hugh* was Earl of *Vermandois*; the King left the three under the Guardianship of the Earl of *Flanders* who had married his Sister, and entrusted him with the Regency of the Kingdom.

## C H A P. VI.

## The Reign of PHILIP I.

1060, &c. EVERY Body quietly submitted to the Rule of Earl *Baldwin*, only the *Giscons* refused obedience, apprehending as they pretended, that should by that Title destroy his Pupil, and invade the Crown, under the colour of his being married to his Daughter: The Earl for the present wisely dissimulated the Injury, but two Years after marched with his Army towards the *Pyrenees*, under a shew of a War upon the *Saracens* in Spain, tho when he passed the *Garonne*, he stopp'd in the Rebels Country and brought them to their Duty without striking a Blow.

Baldwin  
dies.

1067.

From henceforward *Baldwin* governed *France* with great Tranquillity to the day of his Death, which happened in the Year 1067. and left two Sons, the eldest *Robert*, and the youngest *Henry*. The two quickly fell out one with the other; for the eldest King to divest the youngest of *Friezland*, was beaten and slain, leaving two Sons *Arnold* and *William*, about the Guardianship of whom there was a Contest between their Uncle *Robert*, and *Richilda* his Mother; but she being supported by the Duke of *Lower Lorain*, defeated *Robert's* Army, and drove him out of part of his Country, which made her so proud and haughty that the *Flemings* forsook her. *King Henry* would have made himself Arbitrator between the Parties, but *Richilda* coming to *Paris* with rich Presents gained his Council, and engaged him open to espouse her Quarrel.

K. Philip  
defeated.

1070.

The King inflamed with the Heat of Youth, needs go in Person to make his first Essay in War, but the same proved unsuccessful, for he was

and *Richilda* taken and carried Prisoner to  
; but as he was retreating towards *Monstre-*  
the Earl of *Bologne*, who had a great Body of  
; took *Robert*, and carried him to *St. Omers*;  
commanded the Place surrendered it to deliver  
; at which the King was so enraged that he  
and burnt the City. The same Year the lost  
Battel, tho still assisted by the *French*, where-  
the Earl of *Bologne* being taken Prisoner, his  
the Chancellour of *France*, and Bishop of  
to obtain his Liberty, brought the King to inter-  
no farther with that Affair; nay what is more,  
he him marry *Bertha* the Daughter of *Florent*  
*Holland*, whereby he was engaged to main-  
his Father-in-Law's Cause, who with his Assistance  
and *Richilda's* Army a fourth time, and so re-  
Master of *Flanders*.

*Philip* being pretty well grown up, ran into  
Disorders and Branglings with his Subjects;  
which Pope *Gregory VII.* wrote to the Duke of  
; that he together with the Nobility of the  
should make him some Remonstrances, and  
if he did not amend, he would both excom-  
munic him and all the Subjects that obeyed him, and  
place the Excommunication upon *St. Peter's* Altar,  
to aggravate it every day.

properly the Thred of our History, we shall  
it.

K. Philip  
puts his  
Wife away.  
1086.

King *Philip* being a very voluptuous Prince, growing disgusted with his Wife *Bertha*, he made use of the Pretence of Consanguinity, to have his Marriage made null by the Authority of the Church. He had a Son by her named *Lewis* about five Years and a Daughter whose Name was *Constance*. Two Years after this *William* the Conqueror being under a Course of Diet at *Rome*, to reduce the grown fatness of his Body, and *Philip* by railery sending to know when he would be up after his lying in, the other answered, when he abroad he would visit him with 10000 Lances instead of Candles, and he was in reality as good Word soon after, for he destroyed all the *French* and forced and burnt *Mantes*, but over-heating self in the Action, he fell sick, and died at *Rouen* long after.

William  
the Con-  
queror's  
Death.  
1088.

Now *Fulk le Rechin* of *Aquitain*, after having shed off two Wives under pretence of Consanguinity and in 1089 married *Bertrade* the Daughter of *de Montfort*; the Appetite of this young, beautiful gay Woman not suiting with the Age of her band, she after three Years time forsook him, took her self into the Arms of King *Philip*, who a lover of Women, and not above 35 Years but tho *Bertrade* was kin to *Philip* in the fifth Degree, and was not divorced from her former band, yet the Bishop of *Bayeux* for his own endertook to marry them, wherein he was hotly opposed by the Bishop of *Chartres*. In the mean time was not a little Lord in the Kingdom, that did not King *Philip* rocked asleep in the Arms of his beloved *Bertrade*.

1095.

The Croi-  
sade.

This Year came *Urban II.* for Refuge into *France* the Emperor having got him deposed in the Court of *Clermont*, where *Peter* the Hermit, and Native of *Antioch* near *Amiens*, appeared with his Remonstrances to cite them to undertake the *Croisade* against the *Saracens* the Heat whereof lasted for above 200 Years, proved indeed the ruine of the Nobility and common People; for the Popes and Kings in the

and great opportunities towards making themselves : Among the chief Commanders of the Forces for this Expedition, we may reckon *Hugh the Great, King Philip's Brother, Duke of Normandy, the Earls Raymond of Toul, Stephen of Chartres, Baldwin of Haynault, Hugh 'd,* with a great many more; but of this Holy (they call it) we shall hardly enter into a detail it be in somewhat very particular : And we will here only observe, that it gave birth to the use of Coats of Arms; every Nation some Symbol or other in their Ensigns, the Legions were distinguished by the different of their Shields and Bucklers, particular Men likewise adorn their Shields with Devices which denote their Birth, brave Actions, Wit or Humour. In these Expeditions those that had such Symbols, made them more proper for them, and had none contrived and chose such as might make them conspicuous and remarkable in Battel (in armour for the Head hindring them from being seen by their Faces) as well as to distinguish them from others, and likewise that those Coats of Arms gave them as it were for Surnames, for in those days had few or none : Some therefore took their Devices in their Shields, whereof there was infinite

*Absolved.*  
1102.

the Consent even of *Fulk* her Husband, and so strangely enchanted with that Woman, that often seen at her Feet, there to receive all Commands as if he had been a Slave; but *Belgick* Bishops honoured the King's Adultery Name of a Marriage, yet the Pope's Legate to communicate with him, and couvened a *Council*, where he was once more excommunicated. However the King was so fixed in his Affect, solicited the Pope's Favour so earnestly, that some Legates to review the Cause, which was *Bauley*; and the King and *Bertrade* proposed to abstain from each others Company till the Dispensation, the Council broke up without giving Judgment; at length having obtained the same at *Rome*, he was absolved at *Paris*, and his Marriage confirmed, so efficacious is Constancy, even in the most commendable.

*Lewis*  
goes to  
England.  
1103.

About this time young *Lewis* whom they called the Prince of the Kingdom, and who was delighted with the King by his Father, took the Government upon him; and the first difficulty he had to deal with was from *Bouchard* Lord of *Montmorency* against whom he took the part of the Monks of *Clugny*, whose Lands that Lord had pillaged; and appeared according to a Citation in the King's Court of Justice, he refused to obey the Sentence against him therein; but *Lewis* by burning and destroying all his Villages, forced him to sue for Reason; he also humbled divers others, but did not or would not intermeddle with the Quarrel between the two *Norman* Brothers, *Robert* and *Henry*; the Year he went over into *England* to King *Henry* his Mother in-law *Bertrade* solicited to send for him; but this Artifice failing, she got *Poitiers* given him at his Return into *France*, which much endangered his Life; and the Year following he was contracted to *Luciana*, the Daughter of the Lord of *Rocheport*. In the mean time *Ebles* and *Ronci* a famous Captain, that had often madeursions into *Spain*, vexed all *Champagne*, to the Annoyance of whom *Lewis* came with so much celerity, that he forced the Plunderer to lay down his Arms, and

inbear his farther Robberies; but the Pro-  
 e-gave *Thomas* Lord of *Marle* against *En-*  
*de Boes* his Father, was not so just: *Thomas*  
 cans of his Castle of *Montagne* in *Laonnois*  
 d so many Devastations and Insolencies,  
 Father was forced to besiege him; upon  
 his revictualled the Castle, and this so en-  
 e Father and some other Lords, that they  
 they would own him no longer for their  
 but this at last was amicably composed;  
 swore to be faithful to him. After  
*Paschal* II. going into *France*, at the Council  
 pronounced the Dissolution of Prince *Lew-*  
 riage, which had not yet been consum-  
 mated; *Luciana*, whose discontented Father  
 arms; but he and his Confederates were  
 defeated by *Lewis*, who afterwards took *Gour-*

1106.

*Philip*, at length quite wasted with excess of  
 died at *Melun*, on the 26th of *July*, at the  
 Years, whereof he had reigned 48 and  
 and was buried in *St. Bennet's* Abby upon  
 according to his own desire. He was a  
 good Shape and Stature, but his Softness  
 rous Delights had rendred his Body un-  
 d heavy, and stupified his Conscience and  
 B. his first Wife *Bertue* he had *Lewis*

K. Philip's  
 Death and  
 Character  
 1108.

## C H A P. VII.

*The Reign of LEWIS VI. surnamed  
the Gros.*

**T**HIS Prince, no less massive of Body than his Father, but brave, active, and vigilant, exposed himself boldly to all Labours and Dangers, and undertook to suppress the Licentiousness of the Nobles who had formed several Leagues against him, the Promoter of which was Guy Earl of Rochefort, who had perhaps been the Instrument of hindring him to be crowned in his Father's Life time: The fear of this League made him hasten his Coronation, which he effected five days after his Father's decease at Orléans by the Arch Bishop of Sens and his Suffragans, who would not have it at Rheims, because Rodolph chose the Clergy, and confirmed by the Pope, had no Approbation.

For all the King's Coronation, the War raised at Rochefort and his Adherents went on; and they at the same time had War with Henry I. King of England, and Duke of Normandy, by reason, *1109, &c.* the French alledg, Henry upon his doing Homage for Normandy, did not keep his Promise to demolish the Castle of Gisors upon the Epte, the Boundary between the French and Normans. The Difference left to be decided by Commissioners on both sides, the Parties being not able to agree, King Lewis offered to prove it by single Combat, and some jesters said, the two Kings had best fight upon a Bridge of Shoo and was ready to fall, but Henry refused the Challenge; whereupon they came to a Battel, in which the English lost, and the broken Remains of their Army fled to Melun; but Robert Earl of Flanders, rashly pursuing them, he was slain and succeeded by his Son Baldwin.

The Malecontents under the favour of this War drew Philip the King's Brother to be of their Party who had two strong Holds Mantes and Montreuil.

first of which the King took, and the other also he  
 used to *Mathieu* Viscount de *Troyes*, who had some  
 hit to it: Then he attacked *le Puiset* in favour of  
*Count* Earl of *Chartres*, and took the Place toge-  
 : with *Hugh de Cressy* the Owner who was therein;  
 this War begat another, for *Thibault* being re-  
 ad to build a Fort on the Limits of the Country of  
 , under pretence that the King had promised to  
 him leave to do it, the King opposed, and the o-  
 offering to prove it by Combat, proposed his  
 underlain for his Champion, himself being but  
 ; while the King on his part appointed *An-*  
*de Gorlande* his Grand Seneschal; but the Cham-  
 could find no Court nor Judg in the Kingdom,  
 could secure to them the Field of Battel, tho this  
 was underhand was obstructed by the King.

The Earl therefore with the Assistance of *Henry I. K. Lewis*  
 of *England*, his Mother's Brother, and the Duke at War  
*Bretagne*, declared War against King *Lewis*; for with his  
 must know the Nobility, according to the Cust- Lords, &c.  
 of those times, believed they had Right to do it,  
 they apprehended Justice was denied them; and  
 other Lords joined in with them. In short,  
 gave the King a great deal of Trouble, and he  
 them suffer so much on his part, that he brought



1117. the Refuge of King Lewis, who was commonly true to the French, with the French say that he was the Source and of them Lewis by way of Retaliation William Son of the deceased King admitted him to do him homage in Normandy, and gave him the Cause first occasion of this Quarrel: This was troublesome to King Henry, that with Lewis, and promised to leave all to his Mercy.

The Cardinals that followed Pope Calixtus to France, whither he retired for the sake of Henry I. and died soon after, Archbishop of Vienne to succeed him, of Calixtus II. the whole Kingdom of France part, and therefore he held a Council at Rheims, wherein divers Constitutions were made for taking away Simony, the Irregularities from Laicks, Concubines from the Clergy, selling of Sacraments: The French King and the Emperor Henry refusing to be bound by the Right of Investitures, communicated. There were also the same Councils of the Popes and the Kings of France, touching the Election and Provisions of the Pope sufficient without their Consent; but they were not fit to deal with these so rudely, for fear of making too many Enemies at once, but to leave them as a Refuge against the Emperors.

Councils in France.  
1119.

War between France and England.

The Peace between the Kings of France and England was of no long Duration; the Duke Robert and his Son William and the Earls of Anjou and Flanders, as Thibault Earl of Champagne who was his Uncle: Baldwin Duke of Flanders received at the Castle of Bures, and with his Nephew Charles the Good; at last of Ravages, Conflagrations, Sackings, Plunderings, and two great Battels between the two Kings, one in the Plain of

the French were worsted, and the other near  
 Ile, where the Success was doubtful, Pope Cal-  
 rent on purpose to Gisors, and brought them to  
 reement, upon condition they should restore  
 had taken from each other; and so the Dut-  
 maind to Henry, who gave it to his eldest Son Wars in  
 surnamed Adelin, to the prejudice of Wil. Norman-  
 Nephew: But this Peace did not put an end dy.  
 ry's Troubles, for soon after he lost his three  
 y Shipwrack, and at the same time his Nephews  
 stirred up new Commotions in Bretagne, and  
 aged the French King to support them, which re-  
 the Desolations of that Province; and the War  
 otter and hotter, and was carried on with va-  
 success.

Emperor about the same time being reconciled 1124.  
 Pope, and having laid down the Investitures,  
 boiling with Anger, would needs discharge it  
 France: He had married Maud Daughter to the  
 of England, and for that reason as well as from  
 sentiment he conceived, because Lewis had pro-  
 Pope Calixtus, he raised a great Army to lay  
 where Calixtus had held a Council against  
 it with the Ground. Lewis on his part resolved  
 together all the Forces of the Kingdom; inso-  
 that he had in a short time in all 200000 men, out  
 of the of France, Picardy, and Champagne only.

the Duke of *Aquitain* came to his Vassals Reli having viewed the King's Power from the Mountain, he sent to offer him all due Ot and brought the Earl as far as *Orleans*, to do all that should be enjoined him.

Lewis  
makes  
William of  
Norman-  
dy Earl of  
Flanders.

1127.

While *Charles* the Good prudently govern-  
ders, he was basely murdered at the Instigatic  
Bastard *William* of *Tpres*; at the Horror &  
Fact, and the Intreaties of the Nobility, *L*  
mediately mounted, and having most severely  
ed the Parricide, he adjudged the Earldom to  
of *Normandy* Duke *Robert's* Son, as being ne  
without any regard had to *Baldwin* Earl  
*nault*, and *William* of *Tpre*, who pretended a  
the Succession, and obstinately struggled to ca  
force; but the King handled him so roughly t  
vested him of *Tpre*, and all the Lands he held  
ders; and *Stephen* Earl of *Bologne* had as l  
cess therein, tho supported by the King of *Eu*  
Uncle. However *William* out of a covetous  
disobliging his new Subjects by Taxes laid up  
and the Sale of Offices, the principal Cities  
and invited *Thierry* Earl of *Alsacia* to cor  
their Prince, and indeed he was of the Blood  
Earls by the Female Side. The King advanc  
as *Artois*, undertook to serve *William* again,  
ing things otherwise disposed than he expect  
turned. *William* for all this lost not his Com  
fought and routed *Thierry* near *Alost*; but  
his Victory, he received a Wound in his Arm  
being ill drest proved fatal to him, so that  
Death all the Commotions raised in *Norman*  
Party wholly ceased.

William's  
Death.

1128.

In this King's Reign there were four Broth  
Family of the *Garlands*, who had the greatest  
the King's Favour. *Anseau* had the Office &  
Seneschal, which he held in Fief of the Ea  
jou; *Stephen* Arch-deacon of *Paris* was Ci  
*Giselbert* Butler, and *William* succeeded Senes  
the Death of *Anseau*, and *Stephen* came in  
he proved a Monster whom all People abhor  
his Pride ascended to that height as to p  
cope with Queen *Allex*, but she would not be

This was the reason he would have surrendered  
 to *Amaury de Montfort* his Niece's Hus-  
 band the King not thinking that convenient, Ste-  
 phen so bold as to take up Arms against him, and  
 League with the King of *England*, *Thibault Earl*  
*of Flanders* and others: The King vigorously attack-  
 ed the Castle of *Livry*, which they had fortified, from  
 whence he was wounded with an Arrow in the Thigh,  
 which he took the Castle, and forced *Stephen* at  
 to renounce the Office of Seneschal; but the Party  
 being long, he thought fit to leave him that of Chan-  
 cellor. And now much Toil and Fatiguing more than  
 his Age, making King *Lewis* old, he took care  
 to set his eldest Son *Philip* upon the Throne, which  
 he did at *Rheims* on the 14th day of *April*, in  
 the 1129. of *England's* Presence.

*Pr. Philip*  
*crowned*  
*King.*

*Lewis* who had defended the Churches, and  
 the Clergy towards the latter end of his  
 reigned changed his Language, because they carried  
 themselves too haughtily, and would not allow him to  
 meddle with the Nomination to Benefices, for  
 he turned some out of their Sees and seized  
 the Lands, and the Bishop of *Paris* and Arch-bishop  
 endeavoured to excommunicate him for it;  
 but *Honorius* made their Censures void. *Innocent*  
 succeeding *Honorius*, and making War upon the  
 King of *France*, then elected another Pope at *Rome* in

1130.

## The Reign of Lewis VII. Book

assistant at those Ceremonies to twelve only, Ecclesiasticks, and so many of the Laity; tho at the same time they did not divest other Peers of the Privilege of being judged only by their Peers in Feudal as well as in Civil and Criminal Matters.

And now King *Lewis* having admitted *Thierri Alsace* to do Homage for *Flanders*, and approved the Will and Testament of *William IX.* Duke of *Normandy*, whereby he ordained his eldest Daughter *Margaret* to marry the young King *Lewis*, and to bring him all his Lordships in Dowry, he fell sick with *Dysentery*, which seized him in his return from the Castle of *St. Brisson* upon the *Loire*, the whereof used to rob Merchants; and he departed this Life at *Paris* on the first of *August* in the 30th year of his Reign, and the 58th of his Age. Before his Prince his Reign, nothing in a manner ruled but violence, the People, Merchants, Clergy, Widows, and Orphans being exposed to Rapine and Plunder; but he proved very active to bring things every where to good Order and Security: He had by his Wife *lix* Daughter to the Duke of *Savoy*, six Sons and a Daughter, *Lewis* who succeeded him, *Henry* a Physician, *Hugh*, *Robert* Earl of *Dreux*, *Peter*, and *Archdeacon* of *Paris*; and the Daughter's Name *Constance*, first married to *Eustace* Earl of *Burgundy* and then to *Raymond V.* Earl of *Tholonse*.

## C H A P. VIII.

### *The Reign of LEWIS VII. surnamed the Young.*

137. **L**EWIS the Young was married a little before his Father died; and when he had taken Possession of *Guyenne*, he brought his Queen to *Paris*, where he deavoured to establish the Publick Tranquillity, but some petty Tyrants began to disturb afresh; and the Cities to defend themselves from their Oppression created popular Magistrates who had power to

## 8. The Reign of Lewis VII.

1137

zens, for which they obtained the King's Let-  
tent, as also many goodly Privileges, thereby  
set them against the overgrown Power of the  
King, but some Citizens of *Orleans* using their Pri-  
vileges to the prejudice of the Royal Authority, and  
the King quickly brought them to their Duty. Now  
as he was Sovereign in *Normandy*, inter-  
vened between *Geofrey Plantagenet* Earl of *Anjou*, and  
the Empress's Husband, and King *Stephen* of *Eng-*  
*land* first taking *Geofrey's* Part, he received Ho-  
nor of him, but *Stephen* going over, and having gain-  
ed the Advantage over *Geofrey*, *Lewis* changing his  
Part, put his Son *Eustace* into Possession, and gave  
his Sister *Constance* in Marriage: However *Ge-*  
*offrey* recovered a great Part of the Country soon af-

1138.

1139.

This year the Clergy of *Bourges* having chosen one  
*Peter de la Chastre*, a Person of singular Learning and  
Worth for their Arch-Bishop, the King, for what reason  
certain, refused to give his Consent. *Peter*  
thereupon have desisted, but Pope *Innocent* en-  
joined him to perform his Duty, which the King ob-  
serving, the difference grew to that height, that the King ex-  
communicated by the Pope and put under communi-  
cation. Now *Thibault* Earl of *Champagne*, cited.  
intermeddled somewhat too much in this Busi-  
ness. The King was offended with him for it: but his

1141.

K. Lewis  
takes Vi-  
tri.

1142.

K. Lewis  
takes the  
Croisade  
upon him.

1147.

Lewis re-  
turns.

1149.

takes *Vitri*, where he put all to the Sword, and fir'd the Church, wherein 300 poor innocent People were burnt; but the King becoming mightily afflicted with Conscience for this Fact, he was easily persuaded under that Circumstance, to restore the Arch-Bishop of *Bowges* to his See, and to grant the Earl a Peace.

King *Lewis* now, as well as the Emperor *Conrad*, king the Croisade upon him, set forward after *Michaelide* this year for the Holy Land; and march'd thro *Hungary* and *Thrace* with a great Army, past the *Bosphorus*; so that by the following Lent he got to *Syria*, while on the other hand his Navy was to Sea to meet him there. The Government of the Kingdom during his Absence he left by the Advice of his Parliament held at *Estampes*, to *Rodolph* Earl of *Normandis*, and *Suger* Abbot of *St. Dennis*: There was not that wicked nor mean Artifice, but the perfidious *Manuel* Emperor of *Greece* made use of to defeat both Armies, which had but too much effect; that of *Conrad's*; but for the *French* they were more by good Fortune than Prudence, and they had a Battel in their Passage over the *Meander*, they reaped but little Benefit by it; for afterwards not being upon their Guard, they received a notable Rout in a narrow Pass thro the Mountains: At last they arriv'd at *Antioch*, where *Raymond* his Queen's Brother then held the Principality, and with whom he did long continue at good terms; but proceeding forward on his march to *Jerusalem*, the Emperor and he arriv'd upon the Siege of *Damascus*, tho with but ill success; so that both Princes thought now of nothing more than to return home; and therefore the King having gone on board his Fleet, met with the Navy of the *Greeks*, that lay in wait for him; and some Authors say, that as they were carrying him away prisoner, by good Fortune the Fleet of *Roger* King of *Sicily*, their mortal Enemy, arriv'd, who made them quit their Prize, and destroyed many of them.

During this Expedition, *St. Bernard*, as they call him, was wholly imployed in *Languedoc*, to convince *Henry* a Monk, and a Disciple of *Peter* de *Bar*, whose Opinions were almost the same as the *Zuinglians*.

*Minists*: And a certain rich Citizen of *Lyons* made likewise about ten or twelve years after the same thing in *Lyonnois* and the adjacent *es*, and his Followers were called the Poor of *Vaudois*, as those of *Henry* and *Peter de Bruns* and *Henricians* and *Petro-Brusians*. Now the *es* of the King's Expedition, which had made Widows and Orphans, and ruined many Families great murmurings against *St. Bernard*, who to promise them a quite contrary Event; so when the Pope, two years after, would have had reach up another Croisade, the Monks of *Cister* broke those measures.

1150

*Lewis* at his return into *France* finding the ill continued between King *Stephen* of *England* and *Maud*, he joined his Army with *Eustace* King's Son to lay Siege to the Castle of *Arques*, to the relief of which *Geofrey Maud's* Husband and his Army, to whom the year before he had resigned the Duchy, directed their march; but the two Armies came in sight of each other, the Lords of both Parties mediated an Accommodation, and managed that the King agreed to admit Prince *Henry* upon giving him Homage as Duke of *Anjou*. Not long after died *Eustace* Earl of *Bologn*, which in time gave way for *Stephen*, now become Childless, to agree that he should succeed him.



King of *Castile*. It was not allowed the *King of France*, says *Yves de Chartres*, to marry *Beaumont* and there being a Report that *Constance* was *Lewis* two Years after being desirous to be therein, under pretence of going on Pilgrimage to *St. Jago in Galicia*, he took her Father's Counsel, who quickly removed that suspicion, and detained him most Royally at *Burgos*.

1159. *Henry II.* being now King of *England*, his *Geoffrey* demanded *Anjou, Tourain* and *Maine* him, according to his Father's Will; but far from that, that he took *Loudun, Ch. Mirebeau* from him: But whether revived from or from other Causes, the Enmities between *King Henry* and *Lewis* were ready to burst out, when they found a way to prevent them for a while by a Marriage between *Henry's* eldest Son and *Margaret*, a Daughter by his second Wife, tho both of the Children. The Princess was put into the *Father's* Hands, and *Lewis* for a Portion promised her *Gisors*, and other places in the *Vexin*; which in the Interim were entrusted to the keeping of the Grand Master of the Knights Templars, to be delivered up to *Henry* when the Marriage was consummated.

War renewed. 1160, &c. But this Alliance did not make their Friendship any long duration; for *Henry II.* besides holding the Dutchy of *Normandy*, which had a part of *Bretagne* depending upon it, the *Counties of Maine, Anjou, Tourain* and *Aquitain* in whereby he seems to have been the greatest King at this time in our Western parts of the World being not content herewith, he would take care to revive the Title his Wife had to the *County of Tholouse*, and therefore having confederated *Raymond* Prince of *Arragon*, and Earl of *Burgundy* he raised an Army of *Aquitainians* and *Roman* Veteran Soldiers, amongst whom was *King of Scotland*; he entered *Languedoc*, took *Cahors*, and some other Places. *Lewis* jealous of his growing Greatness, which moved him at least as the Intreaties of Earl *Raymond* his Brother-in-law, marched that way, and threw himself into

had so few with him that *Henry* might if he have taken it ; but here they were reconciled, King of *England* would not let fall his Claim of the Earldom, till he had bestowed his daughter *Jane*, the Widow of *William II.* King of *Norman* Earl *Raymond*.

the most potent and factious Family in all was the House of *Campagne* ; and therefore to divide them from the *English*, and gain them self, marries a younger Sister of the Family ; for the two Daughters of his first Bed, he gave them to *Henry*, the eldest of the four Brothers, *Troyes*, and the other to *Thibauld* the second, *Blais*.

In the mean time Pope *Alexander*, for fear of the Emperor, being fled to *France*, and having held a Council at *Clermont*, wherein he did not forbear to put out his Excommunications against his Enemies, he came to *Torcy* on the *Loire*, where the two Kings of *England* and *France* received him with great submission ; they both alighted, and each taking one of the Emperor's Horse's Bridle, conducted him to the place appointed for him. But now the Emperor being come a second time with Pope *Victor* to *Burgundy*, where the *French* King had refused to receive him, he desired he might do it now,

King forced both their Earl and them to beg *Paris* and dissolve their Corporation. *Lewis* also the Year went in Person to fight the Earls of *Clermont* and *Du Puy*, with some others of *Auvergne*, who would not forbear robbing of Churches; he overtook and brought them Prisoners to *Paris*, from whence after a considerable time they were released, giving their Oaths and Hostages for their Fidelity. In like manner he punished the Earl of *Chalons* for the loss of his Country; however this Man's Daughter re-entred upon her Matrimony.

1165.

King *Lewis* this Year had a Son born, whom he believed to have been sent from Heaven in return of Prayers, and for that Reason he was surnamed *Donne*, i. e. the Gift of God, and afterwards the *queror*, from the brave Actions performed by him. Some few Years after this, the Feuds between the Kings were renewed, upon several occasions, particularly one was from the Earl of *Auvergne*, whom King *Henry*, to whom the Earl was a Vassal as being of him Lands in *Aquaintain*; another was the fight *Lewis* gave to *Thomas Becket* Arch-bishop of *Canterbury*, who had fled into *France*: The War there broke forth, and lasted two Years; however it was tried but slowly on, and as the Respect both of them had for Pope *Alexander's* Mediation was considered, it brought them for some time to an Agreement; having personally had a Conference at *St. Germain Laye*, they concluded a Peace, and there the King of *England's* Sons did Homage to *Lewis* for those Lands their Father secured to them by Advance of Instance; *Henry* for the Dutchy of *Normandy*, Count of *Anjou*, and the Office of Grand Seneschal, as the Earldoms of *Maine* and *Touraine*; *Richard* the Dukedom of *Aquitain*; and *Geoffrey* having *Normandy*, owed Homage to none but the Duke of *Normandy*: At the same time *Lewis* prevailed with *Henry* for leave for *Thomas Becket* to return to *England*.

King of  
England's  
Sons do  
Homage to  
Lewis.

1170.

But this Greatness proved not very durable, there was some Rupture almost every Year, the Peace or Truce between them, either concerning the

own proper Interest, or that of their Friends  
affairs. *Lewis* indeed had this Advantage, that  
the Sovereign Lord he had the right of hearing  
Complaints of *Henry's* Vassals, and of making  
themselves their Judge; he had stirred up many in *Aquitaine*  
*Normandy*, but this Year he armed his own Child  
against him; the eldest with his Wife *Margaret*  
returned to his Father's Court, and staying  
some time, had a fancy put into his Head, that  
he was crowned he ought to reign, and to require  
his Father the Possession either of the Kingdom of  
France or Dutchy of *Normandy*: With this Dispo-  
sition, and fretted because his Father had removed  
the evil Counsellors from about him, he stole away  
one Night, and went to throw himself into the  
arms of the *French* King; he was favoured by the  
King, his two Brothers, and all the young Nobility  
were taken into the *French* King's Protection; the  
King of *Scotland* likewise declared for them: But  
*Henry's* Fortune for all this prevailed to the over-  
throw of all his Enemies, for tho *Lewis* had taken  
possession of *Perche*, he durst not keep it, but fled from  
it to *Henry*; add to this his great Success in *England*  
against the *Scots*, and that *Philip* Earl of *Flanders*,  
whom *Lewis* had brought along with him, received a  
repulse at *Rozin*, *Lewis* thought it best to ob-

1173.

have his Son *Philip* crowned; but the young Prince falling ill upon a Fright, for having lost his way in Wood as he was hunting, the Ceremony was put off and performed the following Year. In the mean time the Peoples Superstition increasing towards the Licks of *Thomas Becket* at *Canterbury*, from the Example of King *Henry*, who of his Persecutor became his Adorer, King *Lewis* went into *England*, pray'd upon his Tomb, and left rich Presents behind him.

1179.

At last Prince *Philip* being crowned on *All Sunday*, *Philip* Earl of *Flanders* procured his Niece *Isabella*, *Alix* his Sister, and *William* Earl of *Hainaut* Daughter, to be married to the new King; and treating her as his own Daughter, since he had no Children of his own, he in favour of this Match bestowed upon her all the Country of *Artois*, and the County along the *Lys*. But the Joy of this Festival was hardly over, when King *Lewis* died of the Palsy at Paris the 18th or 20th of *Sept.* at the Age of 63 or 64 Years, whereof he had reigned 43, and was buried at *St. Denis*. He was a Prince not very happy in his grand Design, and too effeminate or mild in his Affairs that required Vigour, but as Pious, Good, Charitable, Just, and Liberal, as any Prince of his time; he can be taxed but with two Faults, the one against Prudence, for divorcing his Wife, and the other against the Laws of Nature for supporting the Rebellion of the King of *England* and his Children against their Father. By his first Wife he had two Daughters, *Mary* married to the Earl of *Campagne*, and *Alix* to the Earl of *Chartres*; by his second came *Margaret*, first married to *Henry* young King of *England*, and then to *Bela* III. King of *Hungary*; by the third *Alix*, betrothed to *Richard* King of *England*, but afterwards married to the Earl of *Pontieu*; *Agnes* married to *Commenius* the Son of the Emperor *Manuel* of *Constantinople*, and a Son named *Philip*.

K. Lewis  
his Death  
and Character.

1180.



have his Son *Philip* crowned; but the young Prince falling ill upon a Fright, for having lost his way in Wood as he was hunting, the Ceremony was put off and performed the following Year. In the mean time the Peoples Superstition increasing towards the Licks of *Thomas Becket* at *Canterbury*, from the example of King *Henry*, who of his Persecutor became his Adorer, King *Lewis* went into *England*, prostrated upon his Tomb, and left rich Presents behind him.

1179.

At last Prince *Philip* being crowned on *All Sunday*, *Philip* Earl of *Flanders* procured his Niece *Isabella*, *Alix* his Sister, and *William* Earl of *Hainault* Daughter, to be married to the new King; and treating her as his own Daughter, since he had no Children of his own, he in favour of this Match bestowed upon her all the Country of *Artois*, and the County along the *Lys*. But the Joy of this Festival was but short, when King *Lewis* died of the Palsy at the 18th or 20th of *Sept.* at the Age of 63 or 64 Years, whereof he had reigned 43, and was buried at *St. Denis*. He was a Prince not very happy in his grand Design, and too effeminate or mild in his Affairs that required Vigour, but as Pious, Good, Charitable, Just, and liberal, as any Prince of his time; he can be taxed but with two Faults, the one against Prudence, for divorcing his Wife, and the other against the Laws of Nature, for supporting the Rebellion of the King of *England* and his Children against their Father. By his first Wife he had two Daughters, *Mary* married to the Earl of *Campagne*, and *Alix* to the Earl of *Chartres*; by his second came *Margaret*, first married to *Henry* young King of *England*, and then to *Bela* III. King of *Hungary*; by the third *Alix*, betrothed to *Ricard* King of *England*, but afterwards married to the Earl of *Pontieu*; *Agnes* married to *Comnenus* the Son of *Manuel* of *Constantinople*, and a Son named *Philip*.

K. Lewis  
his Death  
and Character.

1180.

---

# BOOK VI.

---

## CHAP. I.

*Reign of PHILIP II. surnamed the  
Conqueror, or Augustus.*

**HIS** Prince being advised to pursue the Me- Philip be-  
thods of Justice and Piety, by which his *gins his*  
Father and Grandfather had strengthened *Reign well.*  
their Authority, he immediately undertook *1186.*  
protection of the Church, and with a high Hand  
had reduced the Lords of *Charenton, Beaujeu,*  
*is* and others who oppress the Ecclesiasticks;  
some time he dissolved a powerful League formed  
Nobility against him, published an Edict against  
any, burnt those that were reputed Hereticks,  
expelled all Players, Comedians and Buffoonry,  
persuaded, as *Record* his Historian says, that



them; and this made such an impression upon mens minds that a Man with that Sham-Badg was not only feared but held in Veneration amongst his mortal Enemies.

The Earl of *Flanders* declining now in favour of the Court, the King summoned him to give up *Vermandois* which brought both of them to take the Field; drawing near to one another at *Boves*, a Peace was concluded, upon condition the Earl quitted all *Vermandois* except *Peronne* and *St. Quintin*; and for accomplishing of this Agreement the King called the Bishops, Abbots, Earls and Barons that served his Army, with their under Vassals together, to settle then were the Rights of the *French*, but how much since altered for the worse, is evident to all the World.

To pass over some minute Occurrences at this time not worth relating, I would not here omit the death of *Geofrey* Duke of *Bretagne* coming to wait upon the King, who tenderly loved him, he died at *Champan* leaving one Daughter behind him, named *Alianor* and a Son of three Years old, whom the *Bretons* in memory of the famous King *Arthur* would dignify with that Name: This Prince remained under the Guardianship of his Mother, and the *French* King's Protection, in despite of all the Efforts of *Henry* King of *England* and his Son *Richard*, who made several attempts to seize his Person, and get Possession of *Bretagne*. As for *Geofrey*, his Memory is still very famous among the *Bretons*, because of that Law made in the Parliament, that was called the Assize of *Geofrey*, whereby it was enacted that in the Families of Barons and Knights, the Estates should not be divided equally as heretofore, but that the eldest should have the whole, and confer what he thought fit upon the younger; but since they have proportioned the thirds among all the younger during Life to the Males, and an Inheritance to the Females.

Towards the end of this Year a War broke out between *England* and *France*, wherein *Philip* was killed at *Iffoudun*, and then they came to an Agreement; and on the fifth of *September* in the next, *Lewis* *Philip's* first born Son came into the World, for which *Paris* made great rejoicings for a Week together; and the *Saracens* having now put a Period to the Kingdom

*of* *Salern*, *Henry* and *Philip* were so concerned at they had a Conference at *Gisors* and *Trie*, dved to take up the Cross for the recovery of of those Infidels Hands, in remembrance of they set up a Cross in the Field, and mutually d to leave all Disputes in the same Posture as re till their Return; in order to which *Philip* ish called a Parliament at *Paris*, and raised a lled *Saladin's* *Tithe*. In the Interim *Richard* *Saladin's* on the Earl of *Tholouse*, and *Philip* to disengage *Tithe* rais its all the Places the *English* possessed in *Berry*, ed. used King *Henry* as far as *Normandy*; but 1188. brought a Truce, and *Richard* falls out with *Philip* her, while *Philip* the following Spring conquers *stakes* *di-* Country of *Maine*, and the City of *Mans*, *vers* *places* or, and the City of *Tours*; and at the same *from* *the* in King *Henry's* third Son takes up Arms against *English* her, but not knowing which way to turn him- the Application to *Philip*, who reconciled him and, upon condition that one of them should try him to the Holy Land. Soon after King died, and being succeeded by *Richard*, *Philip* her in Law gave him up all he had conquered, *London*, and the Fiefs he held in *Auvergne*, *Gisors*, and all the *Vexin* for his Wife's Por-

some pernicious Artifice, shewed King *Richard* Letters, which he affirmed to have been written *Philip*, whereby that King offered him all his Force to attack *Richard*, and seize him in the Night, if he would at the same time fall upon him. *Richard* believing the matter to be fact, made a great stir about it, and was mightily exasperated against the offer, upon which he acquainted *Philip*, he could not for certain Reasons marry his Sister, but that he was betrothed unto another. *Philip* dissembling his Resentment, appear'd to be satisfied, provided he would restore those Lands he had given him for her Dowry, and also consented to a Truce for those Countries during the time they should remain abroad. *Philip* hereupon made the best of his Way to the Siege of *Ptolemais*, while *Richard* having seized on the Kingdom of *Cyprus*, for the ill Reception he met there, came not to the *Leger* till about two Months after, and then there were such continual Jars between these two Princes, that they rather retarded than promoted the Siege, tho the Place was at last rendered, upon condition the Garison obtained of *Saladin* the Release of all the Christian Prisoners, and the giving up of the true Cross; but he notwithstanding the same, *Richard* put 7000 of them to the Sword.

*R. Philip*  
*sick, re-*  
*turns from*  
*the Holy*  
*Land.*

1191.

A great many brave Men perished in this Campaign by the Sword and Sicknefs; nay *Philip* himself was afflicted with a tedious Distemper, proceeding as was supposed from Poison, since his Nails and Hair fell out, and therefore he resolved to return home, but first made an Oath to King *Richard*, he would not in the least disturb his Territories, till 40 days after he was certain of his being arrived in *France*: He left behind him with King *Richard* near six hundred Horse and ten thousand Foot, under the Conduct of the Duke of *Burgundy*, where we leave them.

In the mean time *Philip* being returned to *England* and remembering that the Earl of *Flanders* had promised him upon his Marriage with his Niece *Elizabeth* the County of *Artois*, after his Decease, and likewise some part of the Inheritance of that which belonged to her, he directed his March for *Flanders*.

and *Artois*, and got Homage done him for the Counties of *Bologne*, *Ghisnes* and *St. Pol*, which till now had ever held of the Earls of *Flanders*, and extended it as far as *Neuf-Fosse*; and this was the first Cause of the mortal Hatred and Wars that happened afterwards between the *Flemings* and *French*.

King *Richard* also after many heroick Acts and Travels in the Holy Land, being desirous to return home, and not designing to pass thro *Germany*, he was seized by the Duke of *Austria*, and basely delivered up to the Emperor *Henry*, who kept him a Prisoner 14 Months; and when on the matter, *Philip* was no sooner informed of it, he dispatched Messengers into *Germany* to engage the Emperor to detain him as long as he could, and some Months after ungenerously declared War against him; and his Brother *John* under-hand to seize upon the Kingdom of *England*, and at the same time falling himself

in *Normandy*, he took *Gisors* and some Places in the *Vex-K.* *Philip* then proceeding forward with his Conquests, he in January this Year took the Town of *Evreux*, which was bestowed upon *John*, keeping the Castle in his own hands, and went and laid Siege to *Rouen*, but there his labour.

1193.

Queen *Elizabeth* having been now dead for about two Years, *Philip* married the King of *Denmark's* Sister, and as he had lain with her one Night would never touch her again; however he kept her for some time at length

To do no more than mention the terrible overflowing of the *Seine* this Year, which made *Paris* a *Isle of France* fear a second Deluge; we are that the Peace between the two Kings lasted but Months: *Philip* renewed the War against the upon pretence that he had built a Fort in the *Andely* upon the *Seine*, and because he had taken the Castle of *Vierzon* in *Berry* from its own Lord. *John XI.* Earl of *Flanders* joined with *Richard* War, which amounted only to Burnings and Distributions; and the Pope proving an Intercessor to *Richard* for the Liberty of the Bishop of *Dreken* therein, and whom he entituled his dear Son *King* sent him his Coat of Mail all bloody with wounds to the Bearer to ask him, *Behold holy Father whether this be your Son's Coat*: Upon this the deliried.

*Philip continues.*  
1198.

These bloody and destructive Wars did much chief to *France*; but the greatest was, that *Philip*, covetous, under pretence of a Necessity there have a Standing Army, and indeed he was the King of *France* that kept Men in pay: He also himself to make great Exactions upon the People for tithing or taxing the Churches, and recalling them who were the Introducers of Usury: But at the time he was frugal in his Expences, reserving in for a time of need. At length after a War of years, the Pope procured a five years Truce, which *King Richard* having Intelligence, that a Gentleman of *Limoges* had found a vast Treasure, carried it into the Castle of *Chalus*, he presented Siege to it, and was there wounded from a Bow, and died on the 11th of *April*, being succeeded by *John* his Brother in prejudice to *Arthur* the Duke of *Bretagne* who was *Geoffrey's* Son, and than *John*.

*Richard his death.*  
1199.

1200.

In the mean time the Earl of *Flanders* with his lies recovered the Cities of *Aire* and *St. Omer* upon Ascension Day this year, Peace was concluded a solemn Conference between the two Kings at *Vernon* and *Andely*, and warranted by 12 Bishops each side, who made Oath to take up Arms against him that should violate it; and the same was f

confirmed by the Marriage of *Blanche* Daughter of *Alphonso VIII.* King of *Castile*, and *Alienor* King *John's* Sister with *Lewis*, *Philip's* eldest Son, to whom King *John*, in favour of this Alliance, made a Resignation of all the Lands and Places which the *French* had taken from him: Each of them took care to secure their Friends, *John* was obliged to receive his Nephew *Arthur* into Favour, who did him Homage for the *Duchy of Breragne*, and *Philip* pardoned the Earl of *Bologna*.

But before all this had come to pass, *Philip* upon the repudiating of the King of *Denmark's* Daughter, having married *Agnes* Daughter to the Duke of *Amerania*, and *Dalmatia*, Pope *Celestine III.* pronounced a Sentence of Interdiction upon the whole Kingdom, which so enraged *Philip* against the Ecclesiasticks, that he drove the Bishops from their Sees, cast the Canons out of their Churches, put Curates from their Parishes, and confiscated all their Goods: He was not also backward to oppress the Laity with unheard of Exactions, by taking away the third of their Revenues, and Goods: As for the Interdiction, that having lasted now seven Months, the Pope at length upon *Philip's* earnest Solicitation took it off, upon condition he should take Queen *Isenburg* again, and in six Months, six Weeks, six Days and six Hours, he would have the Case of her Divorce decided by his two Legates Philip

ter, to marry *Isabel* the Earl of *Angoulesme's* only Daughter, whom he ravished from *Hugh de la Bruere* Earl of *de la Marche*, to whom she was betrothed; the said Lord sought all the ways he could to be revenged on him for that Injury, and therefore began to hold a private Intelligence with *Philip*, and endeavoured to make an Insurrection in *Poitou*, while his Brother *Rodolph* committed Hostilities on the Frontiers of *Normandy*; but *John* having chastised their Rebellion, and seized their Lands, they address themselves to *Philip*, as Sovereign for Justice: Hereupon the two Kings met near *Gaulon*, where *Philip* in high terms summoned *John* to appear in his Court, that Justice might be done not only upon the Complaint of *Hugh* but also Prince *Arthur*, who demanded *Maine*, *Anjou*, and *Tourain*. *Philip*, to provide for his intended War, endeavoured to accustom the Clergy to furnish him with Subsidies, but all he could get was their Promise to assist him with their Prayers; yet their Lands having been ravaged by some Lords of the Country, the Prelates applied themselves to the King for Redress, and he replied, that Soldiers could not be kept without Money; they understood his meaning, and were forced to make their Purses bleed, that they might be protected. In the Interim, King *John*, summoned the several times to answer the Accusation in *Philip's* Court, endeavoured to gain time, while *Philip*, now well provided of Men and Money, and having a counterpoise in his Kingdom, resolved to push on against him; he therefore gave some Forces to Prince *Arthur* to pursue his Right, and at the same time entered into *Normandy*, where he forced five or six Places to surrender, and received the most considerable Lords of the Country into favour, and particularly *Hugh de Gournay* and the Earl of *Alençon*, who assured him of their Service and their Towns. *Arthur* on his part attacked *Poitou*, and besieged his Grandmother in *Mirebeau*, whither King *John* made such haste that he surprized him one Morning in his Bed, and sent him Prisoner to the Castle of *Falaise*; and after the Death of Queen *Alienor*, having removed him to the Castle of *Rouen*, the poor Prince was cruelly made away with, tho' not certainly known after what manner.

After *Constance* did thereupon demand Justice of *K. John* for that Parricide committed in his Territory upon the Person of one of his Vassals; and in Default of appearing was by the Peers condemned Parricide and Felony, and to lose all his Lands which should be forfeited to the Crown, those that defended them were reputed guilty men. *sentenced to lose his Lands in France.*

1202.

Prosecution of this Sentence, *Philip* this year lost all the *Upper Normandy* from him, while away his time, and was every way betrayed; the next all the *Lower Normandy* was conquered, without striking a Blow for it, and *Rouen* it forty days Siege, was forced to capitulate tender; so that in short *Philip* in less than three became Master of all *Normandy*, which had Dukes of that Nation, (whereof *Joan* was the last) who had governed them about 316 years. At the time *William des Roches* who had quitted his Party to join with *Philip*, secured the County of *Anjou*, *Maine*, and *Tourain*; and *Henry Clareschal* of *France*, conquered all *Poitou*, except *Niort*, *Tours*, and *Recher*; and in 1205. took the Castle of *Loches*, and some Places that were in the Hands of the *English* in *Tourain*.

1203.

1204.

In the mean time King *John* not attributing his misfortune to his Crimes of Imprudence or Neglect,



A Croisade  
against the  
Albigens-  
es.

The Pope all this while being not able to reduce Hereticks of *Languedoc* (as they termed them) upon *Raymond* Earl of *Tholouse* the chief Incomer of them, who had massacred one of his Legates, excommunicated the Earl, absolved his Subjects from their Allegiance, and gave his Lands to the first *Cypier*, but without prejudice to the King of *France* Sovereignty, which brought the Earl to an intire submission, and to give up eight strong Places to the Church of *Rome* for ever; and the following year that he might obtain Absolution, he suffered himself to be scourged with Rods at the Gates of St. Omer Church: However the Croisade preached by the Pope's Order against the *Albigenses* went on, and the Pope engaged therein wore a Cross upon their Breast, and distinguished themselves from such as went to the Holy Land who wore that Badge upon their Shoulders. *Philip* would have engaged himself in this Expedition had he not feared the *English* would land in *Britany*; he went not therefore beyond the *Loire*, but commanded the Nobility that held of him, to follow themselves, and take the Fort of *Garlie*, which they did.

1208.

In the mean time the number of these new-Croisade Soldiers being no less than 500000, they rendezvoused at *Lyons* about the Feast of St. John; thence marching into *Languedoc*, attacked *Beziers*, one of the strongest Holds of the *Albigenses*, and having taken it by Assault, they put all, even above threescore thousand Persons, to the Sword, which so terrified the people of *Carcassonne*, that they surrendered at discretion. Then the Commanders of the Army chose *Simon* Earl of *Montfort* to be their General and Governor of their Conquests, who notwithstanding the Disputes against him, maintained himself by a more than heroic Valour, and conquered *Mirepoix*, *Pamiers*, and *Alby*.

1209.

In those times the School at *Paris* flourished more than ever, and they gave it the Name of an University; and because they thought *Aristotle's* Metaphysics lately brought them from *Constantinople*, had introduced Heresy amongst them, the Council of *Paris* prohibited either the reading or keeping of them.

of Excommunication.

All this while came fresh Troops of the Cross to the aid of *Montfort*, even from *Flanders* and *Germany*, who kept away again within six Weeks or two Months; never the Earl carried all Places belonging to the *Bigenses*, and to some other Lords; which made the King of *Arragon*, of whom many in those Countries had their Lands in under-Fiefs, write to the Pope against it; nay the Earl of *Tholouse* went to *Rome* in 1213, but at his return proposed an Agreement with *Montfort*, which he refusing, the other endeavoured to *Montfort* and himself as well as he could. *Montfort* laid *besieger* siege to *Tholouse*, but being untimely deserted by his *Tholouse* reinforcements, he was forced to raise it, and retire *in vain*. *Châteauneuf*, where in his return he was besieged by 1211. the Earls of *Tholouse* and *de Foix*; but their Numbers were defeated and forced to a shameful Retreat.

The King *John* had been excommunicated the preceding year by the Pope's Legate, yet he laughed at Censures; but he was much surprized to understand, that the Pope by a terrible Sentence had absolved his Subjects from their Allegiance, and that King *Philip* made great Preparations to invade him; which was really so, and all the Lords of the Kingdom in a Parliament held at *Soissons*, promised to assist the King with their Lives and Fortunes; but first he resolved to punish *Ferrand* Earl of *Flanders* for refu-

1212.

War be-  
tween the  
English  
& French.  
1213.

and re-entered, and as soon became Master of *Noyon* and *Lisle*, in revenge of which *Lewis* burnt *tray*. *Philip* goes a second time into *Flanders* to his Conquests, but as soon as he was gone, the *Bologne* took the Field with some Forces out of *land*, attempted two or three Sieges in vain, yetted *Henry* Earl of *Lorain* and Duke of *Brabant* had married one of the King's Sisters, to join him. On the other side, King *John* landed a great Army at *Rochel*, and crossing *Poitou* made self Master of some Places in *Anjou*, and began build the Walls of *Angers*: *Philip* upon this received Son out of *Flanders* to oppose the King of *Eng* whose Soldiers making Excursions to the very urbs of *Nantes*, surprized the Earl of *Dreux* eldest Son, who was got over the Bridg to attack cut his Men in pieces, and took him Prisoner.

French  
successful.

1214. This Year *France* was severely attacked by *John*, and on the side of *Flanders* by the *Em* *Otho*, *Ferrand* and *Rennald* of *Bologn*; but *Lewis* making head against *John*, he was fortunate, as to be forced to abandon all *Anjou*, and new Fortifications of *Angers*, which were pre demolished: Neither was *Philip* less successful the Son, against the Emperor and his Confederates whose Army of 150000 men he encountered on 29th of *July* with less than half the Number. King himself did indeed run a great hazard in his Person, having been beaten off his Horse, trod his Feet, and wounded in the Throat; but at last his enemies were every where worsted, *Otho* put to his Standard being a Dragon with an Imperial over it taken, and the Chariot that bore it broken in pieces, and five Earls among whom were *Ferrand* *Rennald*, with 22 Lords that carried Banners, Prisoners.

*Philip* made a pompous Entry into *Paris*, and the Citizens celebrated the Victory for eight days together; and now the Lords of *Poitou*, that had sided the *English*, finding *Lewis* to be victorious, sent to tender him all manner of Submission, which he went himself with an Army into the Country, and the Viscount de *Tours* the most confident

obtained his Pardon with much ado by the  
son of Peter Duke of Bretagne; the rest were  
lost, and King John who was then at Paternay  
had been taken, had not the Pope's Legate  
asked for a Truce, which could not as times went  
with him, and the same was agreed on for five

Lewis now takes the Croisade upon him a-  
gainst the Albigenses, and went to Languedoc; thence  
to Carcassonne and Beziers, where he ordered the  
Church of Narbonne and Tholouse to be demolished: In  
the time the Lateran Council, notwithstanding  
the excommunications of the Count of Tholouse and his  
barons were there present, adjudged the Proprie-  
ties of the Lands to Montfort, reserving only those he  
had in Provence for his Son, and four hundred Marks  
per year for his Subsistence; from which time  
Montfort took upon him the Quality of Earl  
of Toulouse, and went to receive the investiture there-  
of from King Philip in the City of Melun.

1215.

When Lewis was in those Parts, the English made  
offer of their Crown, which brought King  
John to submit to be Tributary to the Pope, who now  
to divert Lewis from the Enterprize, and desir-  
ing Philip to put a stop to it, but that would not  
succeed so Lewis went for England, and was so-  
crowned in England.

Lewis expelled.

1220, &c.

Philip sick of an Ague.

1222.

His Death.

In the mean time King *John* dying by Poison Hatred of the *English* expired with his Life, and began generally to declare in favour of his Son *ry*; so that for the present *Lewis* had no better expedient than to make a Truce with the young King for Months, during which he returned to *France* to consult with his Father, who would not see him: *Lewis* never he adventured back into *England*, where he found his Enemies Party much stronger than before. His Army was afterwards defeated near *Lincoln*, himself after that Overthrow, besieged in *Le* from whence he was glad upon the Promise of terms to have Liberty to go into *France*; whither *ry* sent Ambassadors to challenge him with his Pro and redemanded the Dutchy of *Normandy*, tho to purpose; so that it was most expedient for the sent to renew the Truce, whereby *France* enjoyed Calm for three or four years. During that time *Philip* applied himself to the walling, enlarging and tifying of Places, building Bridges, making Causeys, the like Conveniencies in all the Cities, that were his Demesnes, the expence whereof he bore himself. Soon after this a prodigious Comet appeared in the Heavens, but I will not say, neither indeed do I believe, it was either the Sign or Cause of a Quarrel that seized King *Philip*, which continuing to vex him for near a year together, did at last bring him to his Grave. In the mean while the Pope and all the Clergy were eager for the Destruction of the poor *Albigenses*, a General Assembly of Prelates and Lords to be held at *Paris*, where *John* King of *Jerusalem*, and the Pope's Legate assisted, and *Philip* as sick as he would needs be there; but he could get no farther than *Mantes*, for his Distemper so increased upon him that he gave up the Ghost on the 25th of *July* in his Place, at the Age of fifty eight Years, and the fourth of his Reign: He left 50000 Livres by Will towards the payment of those he had wronged 10000 Franks to Queen *Isenburg*; ———— to his Son *Lewis* for the defence of the Kingdom, and no other use; 58500 Marks of Silver to the King of *Jerusalem*, 2000 to the Templars, and as much to the Hospital towards the Recovery of the Holy Land; 21000

of *Paris* to the poor Orphans, Widows and Le-  
 and 20000 to *Amaury de Montfort*, for the Re-  
 tion of his Wife and Children out of the Hands  
 of *Albigenses*. He married three Wives, *Isabella*  
 her to *Baldwin IV.* Earl of *Hainault*, by whom  
 only *Lewis* that survived; *Isenburg* Daughter of  
 our King of *Denmark*, who bore him none;  
 ally *Agnes* Daughter to the Duke of *Merania*,  
 by he had *Philip* afterwards Earl of *Bologn*,  
 who first married to *Philip* Earl of *Namur*, and  
 to *Henry IV.* Earl of *Lorain* and Duke of *Brä*-  
 He had also a natural Son, named *Peter Charlot*,  
 was Treasurer of *Tours*, and afterwards Bishop  
 of *Lyons*. Of all the Kings of the Third Race he an-  
 most Lands to the Crown, and most Power to  
 successors, wresting *Normandy*, and almost all  
 held in *France* from the *English*; neither did he a  
 contribute on his Part towards pulling down the  
 of *Tholouse*, whereby he took away the Counter-  
 that ballanced his own Power in the Kingdom,  
 which he more easily brought the Great Ones  
 to honour and fear him, and the People to bear  
 Burdens and Taxes than they had done under  
 predecessors.

was a Prince well shaped and without any bodily **Philip's**  
 defect, saving that one of his Eyes was half obscu- **Character.**



## C H A P. II.

## The Reign of LEWIS VI.

**P**HILIP, for what reason is not  
 caused his Son to be crowned  
 divers of his Predecessors thought  
 thought his Family so well esteemed,  
 no need of such a Precaution to secure  
 him; he was therefore crowned  
 Wife *Blanch*, on the 10th of June  
 the King of *England*, in Quality of Queen  
 being not present at the Coronation, he  
 orders to summon *Lewis* according to the  
 taken at *London*, to make a Surrendry  
 and all the Countries that had been taken  
*John* his Father; they received for Answer  
 had been confiscated by a Sentence of  
 that they pretended to have the Re-  
 he held, so far were they from giving  
 demanded. On the other side, as *Thom-  
 guedoc* easily returned a promise to their  
*mond* Earl of *Tholouse*; he was not  
 able to keep his Station there, but  
 his Right and Title he had to King  
 him High Constable for it, the same  
 Employment that lasted no longer than  
 that we sometimes find Persons on whom  
 conferred two or three times; whereas  
 missing entire Obedience to the Church  
 sufficient Security to the Clergy for their  
 and Enjoyment of their Goods and Brethren  
 Extirpation of Hereticks throughout  
 the Pope hereupon received him to  
 owned him Earl of *Tholouse*. But  
 and Opposition made by his Subjects  
 from making good his Promises, the  
 gate to the King, to persuade him to  
 which he the more readily agreed to,  
 with his Zeal and Interest.

ut waving this Expedition for the present, the King  
 he had conferred at *Vau ou Clair* with *Henry* King  
*Germany*, the Emperor *Frederic's* eldest Son, about  
 the differences between the two Crowns, concerning  
 which they could come to no Conclusion, pursuant to a  
 Resolution, that had been taken to drive the English Lewis suc-  
 fully out of *France*, he entred *Poitou*, won a Battel cessful a-  
 from *Savary de Mauléon*, General of the English gainst the  
*Guyenne*, made himself Master of the Cities of Ni- English.  
 and *St. John d' Angeley*, and generally of all Pla- 1224.  
 as far as the *Garonne*, receiving the Homage of all  
 Lords of those Parts; so that the English had now  
 nothing left but *Rochelle*, where *Savary* bravely defen-  
 ded himself for a long time in expectation of Relief  
 from *England*; and at last being basely disappointed  
 and deceived by the Ministers, who sent him Chests  
 of old Iron instead of Silver to pay the Garrison,  
 was forced to give up the Place; and afterwards  
 returning his old Master, he went over to the King of  
*France*. The rest of *Guyenne* had been gained by the  
 French, if *Richard* Brother to King *Henry* had not  
 landed at *Bordeaux* with a great Army, which rai-  
 sed up their drooping Spirits; he quickly took *St. Ma-*  
*re* near that City, but *Li Reoule* gave him a great  
 repulse; and being informed that the French Army  
 was at the *Garonne*, he went on board again, and left



1226.

with the Viscount de *Tours*, the only one  
yet opposed him in *Poitou*; shortly after w  
Viscount went to *Paris* to render Homag  
in Presence of the King of *England's* Al  
And now King *Lewis* his Army marchi  
*vignon*, and that City refusing them Passi  
resolved not to decamp from it, till he had  
sieged to reason, which he effected at  
them to give up 200 Hostages, pulling d  
filling up their Moats and Grafts, and d  
Houses that had Turrets, being Gentle  
such as they had at *Tholouse* and other great  
From hence the King went into *Provence*,  
surrender'd to him within four Leagues of  
the Weather proving bad, and the King of a C  
that was somewhat tender, he returned h  
his Army under the Command of *Imbert de*

Lewis's  
Death.

The King upon his return was poisoned l  
Grandeess of his Kingdom, whom History  
name, of which he died at *Montpencier* in  
after he had lived nine and thirty years,  
had reigned three and about four Mo  
ried at *St. Dennis* by his Father. T  
of his Piety and Chastity, gave  
ceeded from his too great Continency (f  
did not go with him) and that he chose rat  
than to make use of an unlawful Remedy  
presented to him for his Cure: As he for  
in a Posture me ng great Troubles after  
he to the C and Scale of 12 For

. As for the surviving Daughter *Ifabella*, she became a Nun in the Monastery of *Long-champ*, which King her Brother founded for her.

## C H A P. III.

*The Reign of Saint LEWIS.*

THIS is the third Minority in the *Capetine Race*, and the first wherein a Woman had the Regency; *Queen Blanche* the Queen Mother took it upon her, and *Regent*. much assisted by *Romain* the Cardinal Legate and the Lords, who attested it was the King her Husband's Will it should be so upon his Death-bed. Immediately upon this, she wisely to secure herself, drew the Forces she could together, and then caused *Isabella* to be crowned at *Rheims*; the Duke of *Burgundy*, Earls of *Bar*, *Marche*, *Champagne*, *Strasbourg*, &c. others refusing to assist thereat; but indeed the contrary, they were forming a League, and demanding that the Regent who was a Stranger should give Security for her good Administration, that what had been taken from the Lords during the two

bring them back with joyful Acclamations to  
ty : The Earl of *Champagne* was the Man t  
the Queen this Intelligence, whose Pret  
Love to her she made a Mien to favour.

The King of *England* would needs conce  
with this Quarrel, and promised the Lords t  
and the Earl of *Tholouse* taking this Oppo  
got possession again of all his Places, upon v  
Queen, fearing this Flame would blaze to  
newed a Treaty with the Princes of the  
whereby she put a stop to their farther Proce  
that Year ; and in the mean time confirmed an  
with the Emperor *Frederick*, made a Truce  
land for a Twelve-month, and came to an  
with the Duke of *Bretagne*, who gave his E  
be married to her Son *John*. Thus the Earl  
*louse* being left alone, *Imbert de Bea* j  
ceived a good Reinforcement, he so rav  
Country about *Tholouse*, and dishearte  
to that degree, that both they and t r  
forced to submit upon what Condition ne  
that indeed the Earl was deprived of all his  
cept some small Fragments left him merely for  
And it was ordered they should devolve to  
ter *Jane*, who should be married to the l  
ther *Alphonso* ; that the Earl should pay 17c  
of Silver ; that the Walls of *Tholouse*,  
more Cities should be demolished : For p  
of all which he should give Hostages, and  
time should himself remain a Prisoner ;  
should be an exact Search after Here is  
and that for Penance he should go on  
years against the *Saracens*. The Earl conti  
ner for a short time, had Liberty to return  
accompanied by the Legate who settled  
there, whereby such great Severities were e  
proved to be the Cause of many Massacres  
bles.

*The Re-  
gent's nota-  
ble ma-  
nagement.*

*The Earl  
of Tho-  
louse re-  
duced.*

1228.

All this while the Malecontents, not  
the Government should continue in such  
in the Earl of *Dreux*, Brother to the l  
*tagne*, and *Philip* Earl of *Bologn*, t  
Uncle, to whom they promised

ed now a second time to surprize the King, & have fallen into their Hands, had not the *Champagne* with 300 Horse very opportunely him off: This made the Conspirators in the turn their whole Power against the Earl, and misrepresented him amongst his Vassals, charged with his Enemies against him. The Earl rest, and his City of *Troyes* besieged, the Rest the King to his Relief, and commanded they had any thing to offer against the Earl, would come for Justice to her Court: But they refused to acknowledg her Regency, chose the Lord to be King, which easily broke the Earl of (to whom the Crown had been promised) from it.

He went very well also on the side of *Bretagne*, D. of *Brittany* the Duke both in this and the succeeding Year *tagne do* out to it by the *French* Arms, that he was for- *Homage* st to do the King Homage for his Dutchy, which *France*. *the Bretons*, who pretended they owed but sin- 1229- *age* only, name him *Mau-Clerk*, or the *Wit-*

Earl of *Champagne* was but ill rewarded by the for his good Services; however after all these there ensued a Calm for four years together, was only a little disturbed by the Tumults of *the* *debauchees* and the Scholars belonging

fortunes did not make him much wiser, for he still persisted in his foolish Passion for the Queen, who ruined him, and retired to his Castle of *Provins* to write Songs and Poems, for the entertainment of his amorous Dotage; from which however he was diverted by the Death of *Sancho VIII.* King of *Aragon*, without Heirs Male, who therefore left the Kingdom as next Heir, and Son of his Daughter *Blanche*. About this time the Country of *Artois* was erected into an Earldom-*Pairrie* in favour of *Robert*, the King's Brother, on whom his Father bestowed by his Will: Some place this Erection in the time of *Philip Augustus*, but however it were, 'tis to be presumed to be the first of that Nature. I shall say nothing of the Croisade undertaken at this time, which had no better Success than the rest, nor of the Relicks brought by the Emperor *Baldwin* from *Constantinople* to *France* (who sued for the King's Alliance against the *Greeks*) because I have but little to say concerning such Trinkets: And therefore we'll proceed to observe, that the Quarrels between *Pope Gregory IX.* and the Emperor *Frederick* growing so hot, the Pope sent to *St. Lewis* King of *France*, to propose him the Empire for his Brother *Robert*; but the Nobles opposed the Proposal, alledging it was sufficient for *Robert* to be a King's Brother, who was more excellent in Dignity and Nobility than any Emperor whatsoever.

An odd  
Story of  
Montagne.

It's an odd Story to relate in this Place, that the *De la Montagne*, for so they called the Prince of the *Assasines*, a People that were settled in the Mountain Canton of *Syria*, had dispatched two of his Murderers into *France* to kill the King, but soon after, what Motive 'tis not known, he repented and commanded them by some others, who before they could find them gave the King notice to have a care of himself; and 'tis farther said of this old *De la Montagne* that he bred up a great number of Youths in pleasant and delicious Palaces, and the hopes of eternal Happiness in the other World, if they obeyed his Commands blindfold; and that to make them the fittest to execute his bloody Commands in all Countries, made them learn all Languages. But of this enough.

he will return to the Pope and Emperor, whose Interests were not at all compatible; and therefore Gregory in the Chair, lets fly his Ecclesiastical Thunder-bolts against *Frederick*; and his Legate having called the Prelates of *France* together at *Meaux*, ordered them to go to hold a Council at *Rome*, where they intended to degrade the Emperor, who complained of his in *France*, and intercepting the Bishops in their Voyage, he put them into divers Prisons, and for a while slighted the King's Intercession for their Liberty, which wrought some alteration in that good Correspondence that had for some time continued between the Empire and *France*.

This Year King *Lewis* having assembled the Flower of the Barons and Knights of his Kingdom at *Saumur*, he knighted his Brother *Alphonso*, who had a little before consummated his Marriage with the Daughter and Heiress of the Earl of *Tholouse*, and also conferred upon him the Counties of *Poitou* and *Auvergne*, and all that had been conquered from the *Albigenses* in *Languedoc*; while the Earl of *Tholouse* sought out means under-hand to repair the dishonourable Treaty he had made with the King; and therefore he contrived with *James* King of *Arragon*, now at *Montpellier*, and with the Earl of *Provence*, tho King *Lewis* his Father-in-Law, to get a Divorce from *Sanchia*, under pretence of Consanguinity that he might

1240.

## The Reign of L

thence retreated as far as *X*, and  
 This brought *De la Mar* and  
 submit, who tho she had nired V  
 to murder *Lewis*, yet he pardoned his  
 Husband, and kept only three or four  
 Hands, till he should be better satisfied  
 delity.

1244. Not to enter into a detail of the Jealousy  
 between the *Franciscans* and *Dominic*  
 wrought some uneasiness in *France* as well as  
 we are to take notice that this Year was very  
 the Holy Land, upon which the *Chorasi*  
*Persia* or *Arabia* fell with so much Fury  
 tion, that they laid it quite waste, and ru  
 Holy Places of *Jerusalem*, drowning them in  
 of the Christians: This dismal News w  
 St. *Lewis*, while he lay sick towards the latter  
*December*, at *Pontoise*, where all those ab  
 despairing of his Life, he made a Vow if  
 him to Health, he would go in Person to  
 against those Infidels, which in due time he did  
 plish.

But some other things first intervened,  
 as succinctly as we can. And now *Ra*  
*Tholouse* failing to obtain a Dispensation in the  
 of *Lyons*, for the marrying of *Beatrix*,  
 Daughter to *Berenguer* Earl of *Provence*,  
 concerted; and *Berenguer* now dying, and  
 1245. having constituted *Beatrix* his Heiress, *J*  
*Aragon* caused some Troops to march into  
 to secure so good a Party for his Son: But *Ki*  
 loth to let a Stranger run away with such  
 drove the *Arragonians* out, and by the E  
 Mother's Consent, with that of her Uncle  
*Savoy*, and the Archbishop of *Lyons*,  
 mis'd in Marriage to the King's Brot  
 of *Anjou*, and the same consummated  
 Year.

In the mean time *Jane* Countess of *Flanders*  
 without any Issue by either of her H  
 ands, Earl of *Savoy*, and *Ferrand* of *Portugal*,  
 ceded by her Sister *Margaret*, who  
 two Husbands, *John* and *Baldwin* by b

and *William, John and Guy* by *William de Dam-*  
 which last Sons pretending that *Bouchart's*  
 ought not to inherit, because it had been  
 out, their Father was in holy Orders when he  
 and their Mother, and consequently that the  
 age was null; and those of the first Bed ob-  
 the Mother favoured the last, they had re-  
 to King *Lewis*, who sent both Parties to a Par-  
 held at *Peronne*, wherein it was enacted, that  
 Sons by the first Husband should have *Haynault*,  
 the other *Flinders*.

to return to King *Lewis* his Croisade, the Pre-  
 sons for War and other matters detained him till  
 in this Year, from accomplishing the Vow he had  
 three Years before; and it cannot be written in  
 letters so great as it deserves, how this pious King  
 perswaded that Sovereigns are responsible for the  
 marriages of their Officers, put forth a Proclama-  
 throughout his Kingdom, that whoever had suf-  
 any wrong or damage by any belonging to him,  
 should make it known, and he would give them  
 tion out of his own Estate, which was punctual-  
 formed.

*Lewis goes  
 for the Holy  
 Land.  
 1248.*

done, and the King having constituted the  
 his Mother Regent of the Kingdom during  
 absence, he was conducted out of *Paris* by all the  
 in Procession, and taking his Queen, and his



of *Iconium*, to

He lands  
in Egypt.  
1249.

The King on the  
drawn all his Forces  
Re-inforcement under  
off to Sea, and on the 4th of  
*Damiata* in Egypt, where  
*Saracens* there ready to receive him,  
that they forsook the Town next  
set it on fire in several Places,  
Families and the best of their  
whose overflowing, which infa-  
before the Summer Solstice, hin-  
vancing at that time to take *G*  
back almost to the middle of *August*,  
Idleness, that they grew extremely deb-  
dissolute.

Lewis o-  
verthrows  
the Sara-  
cens.  
1250.

In September the King's Brother  
a new Re-inforcement to him (his Father-  
*mond* the last Earl of *Tholouse* dying in  
time) and the King on the 20th of the  
advanced towards the whole *Saracen* Army,  
about *Massoura*: He incamped on  
*Nile*, called *Raschit*, which was not  
the Enemy gave the Command of the  
valiant *Farchardin*, till the Arrival of  
Sultan *Meledin*, whose Death  
time. At last the *French* having  
two several days gained two  
dels, wherein St. *Lewis*, *Sampson*  
ders against them; but in the first  
too inconsiderately pursuing the flyin-  
City of *Massoura*, was slain. The  
being incamped near *Pharamia* to  
*Melech Sala* the Son of *Meledin*, with  
Army so hemmed them in on all sides  
and the Scurvy reduced them to a misery  
so that the Christians endeavouring to retreat  
*miata*, they were April 5th utterly  
March, and the King himself with  
so and *Charles*, with almost  
taken Prisoners; the King here  
*Sala* took a particular care of him, that  
not only recovered his Health, but they ca

Over-  
thrown  
and taken  
Prisoner.

a ten Years Truce, tho it had like to have no  
 t, for the *Emirs* having murdered the Sultan  
 her, the King was in danger of perishing by the  
 storm: However *Tamartar* being elected Sultan,  
 freed him, and generously confirmed the Treaty,  
 by both he and all the Christian Prisoners had  
 Liberty, and leave to take all their Equipage  
 with them, as also all left them that they held  
 the Holy Land, upon condition they surrendered  
*Suez*, and set the *Saracen* Slaves free, and gave  
 400000 Livers in ready Mony; the Mony was  
 accordingly, and the King was so punctual, that  
 he was informed the *Saracens* had mistold the  
 and taken less than had been agreed on, he im-  
 mediately sent them the rest. The King sailed from  
 to *Ptolemais*, but of above 30000 fighting Men  
 followed him in this Expedition, there were hardly  
 left, a number too small for any Enterprize;  
 ever upon the earnest Intreaties of the Christians  
 those Countries, the King resolved to stay some  
 with them, and in the mean while sent his Brothers  
 into and Charles into France. Upon the News  
 the Captivity of King *Lewis* in France, an Apost-  
 Monk, named *Hungry*, affirming he had a par-  
 ticular Mission from Heaven, went up and down the  
 dom to pick up Men, as he pretended, to go and

1251.

they need themselves 1 fters.  
 was o lin by de ed for five Y  
 St. A got the better at f  
 bei tra erred to *Rome*, his son v c  
 not as Heretical, but as scandalizi to  
 thers, who now got great credit in . C  
 so much the more easily obtained large Priv

But to leave the branglings of these Ec  
 at the beginning of which *Robert de* i  
 the College of the poor Masters of Sor  
 since grown very famous: You mult i  
 St. *Lewis* having been now absent near in  
*France* destitute of a Pilot by the Death of  
 ther, earnestly desired his Return; and  
 King taking shipping at *Ptolemais* on St. *in*  
 he landed at *Marseilles* on the 11th of *July*  
 1254. And now the King of *England* who was  
*Gascoigne*, desirous to avoid a long Voyage  
 got leave of the *French* King to cross *Fr*  
 on board at *Bologne*; he was met by *Lewis* at  
 from whence he conducted him to *Paris*,  
 was treated with the greatest Magnificence  
 Joy and Splendor was so much the grea  
 the four Sisters, Daughters of the Earl or  
 the eldest whereof was married to K i  
 next to the King of *England*, the third to  
*Richard*, and the fourth to *Charles* Earl  
 met here altogether.

And now King *Lewis* having settled  
 Calm throughout his Dominions, applied  
 good and wholesom Laws to regulate all  
 he banished all Oppression and Violence,  
 others by his own good Example, and all j  
 Works, undertook the Protection of the  
 Widows and Orphans, did all he could to  
 the Religion of those times, provided for t  
 of the Poor, the Marriage of decayed  
 the Maintenance of the Church, and au  
 ease of the People, by the Revocation of  
 extraordinary Subsidies and Taxes, which  
 nity or necessity of former times had  
 The Titles of the Chamber of Accounts i  
 mong many other rare and curious thi

K. Lewis  
 returns  
 home.

1254.

K. Lewis  
 his good  
 Deeds.

1256.

spared nothing for the Conversion of Infidels, to this end that he took up all the *Jewish* Children that were Fatherless or in want, and caused them to be bred up in the Christian Faith; that these were the *Baptized*, as those who embraced Christianity when adult, were stiled the *Converted*; that the Duke of *Burgundy*, King of *England*, and some others practised the like in their Countries, and that *Lewis* his Successors imitated him herein till the time of King *John*: Farther, that when *St. Lewis* made progress any where, there was always a Prelate, who was usually the Archdeacon of *Paris*, or some eminent Prelate that followed some days after the Court, making enquiry at the Stations, and in all the Countries and Places they had passed thro, what Injury had been done to the People or their Lands, for which the King made Satisfaction out of his own Pocket, without any Complaint made by the Party aggrieved; but this was not so good as his Brother *Charles* was cruel to the Citizens of *Marseilles*, who not giving him the Obedience he expected, he blocked them up, and forced the Place to surrender at discretion, this Cruel Prince caused several of the principal of them to be beheaded.

In this Year King *Lewis* at an Interview with *James* 1255.  
at *Mompelien*, treated of a Marriage be-

*mon Montfort* Earl of *Leicester* was t  
their King, that they agreed to sub  
nation, for which end he called a Paru  
and pronounced the Sentence in King  
however the Barons found some  
ceptions, and would not stand to it.

We will not enter upon a Narration of C  
of *Anjou's* setting up for, and carryi  
of *Sicily*, nor the Turmoils that did  
proceed and inform you, that the A  
of the Court of *Rome* were c  
1269. that tho the King *St. Lewis* was  
Holy See, yet he this Year made a Pra

to fall upon the Kingdom of *Tunis*, he set  
 s in order at home, left the Administration of  
 ernment in the Hands of *Matthew* Abbot of  
*is*, and *Simon* Earl of *Nesse*; and set out the  
*March* this Year, accompanied with three of  
*Philip*, *Tristan* and *Peter*, his Brother *Alphon-* *St. Lewis*  
*ephew Robert II. E. of Artois*, *Thibauld* King *goes for*  
*re*, *Guy* Earl of *Flanders*, and a great Num- *Tunis.*  
 he Nobility: Having landed with his Army in *1270.*  
 in the Month of *July*, they immediately took  
 le and City of *Carthage*, built upon the Ruins  
 famous Rival of *Rome*, but had nothing now  
 s great but its Name: From hence they mar-  
 d sat down before *Tunis*, where after five  
 time, the excessive Heats, scarcity of Wa-  
 r-Air, and the Fatigues endured by the Army,  
 the *Saracens* continually upon them, bred a  
 ial Fear and Dysentery amongst them, where-  
 at many Persons of Note died, of which *St. Lewis's*  
 were Prince *John Tristan de Nevers*, and *Death and*  
*Pille Bean*, the King's Chamberlain and Fa- *Character,*  
 But what was still worse, the good King him-  
 g seized with a Flux, was some days after ta-  
 ta continual Fever, which put an end to his  
 Labours, by a happy End, the 25th of *Aug.*  
 5th Year of his Age, and the 44th of his  
 He was a Prince of excellent Virtues, but his

ming, Drinking and Women, we Practice as they were yet in t Bo be omitted, that he never interr k I any Persons to Bishopricks and :ys, Liberty of Elections intirely free, of his Ambassadors having bro 'it Rome, that conferred upon him R tion, he was so angry that he .at and for the other Benefices, he ever ite on such as best deserved them, never that were already preferred, unless they fir red their own Living. This King founded a ny Churches and Monasteries; and they : him the Institution of the University and ament of *Tholouse*.

This Prince had eight Children, viz. four Daughters; the first was *Philip* that him, *John Tristan* Earl of *Nevers*, 1 *Alençon*, and *Robert* Earl of *Clermont*; ters were *Isabella*, *Blanch*, *Margaret*, The first married to *Thibauld II.* King the second to the Prince of *Castile*, t 1 Duke of *Brabant*, and *Agnes* to the D of

## C H A P. IV.

### *The Reign of PHILIP III.* *the Hardy.*

1270.

**T**HE Christian Army being i 1 discouraged upon the Death in Spirits were again raised up upon t 1 Brother *Charles* King of *Sicily*, who landed very time the King gave up the Ghost; Flesh to be all taken from his Bones, then was when any died in I reign and that he carried along with h o 2 King *Philip* kept the Bones, which aep *Dennis*. In the mean time C es, IC chief Command, since *Philip* w ip 1 on of *Tunis* with great Vigour; c

his, when their taking of the Place was most incertain, tho not till Winter was over, King's Impatience to return home, and Charles his covetousness of Money, made them give ear to the proposals of the King of Tunis, to whom they granted Truce of ten Years, upon condition he would take the whole Charge of the Expedition, annually pay Charles as much Tribute as he did the Pope, set Christian Captives at Liberty, grant a free Port, and exempt Merchants from paying any Tax, but suffer them to live in Tunis, and have the Exercise of the Christian Religion.

even seemed to be angry at the King's return. The Tunis indeed part of the Ships, wherein Philip was, was not safely at Trapani in Sicily, but Charles was on his Expedition with a dreadful Tempest, which destroyed his Vessels, with the loss of 4000 men. The King of Navarre died at Trapani; the French Queen being big with Child, so hurt herself by a Fall from Horse, that she died at Cosenza; Alphonso, St. Philip's Brother, was taken off with a Pestilential Fever at Sienna, and soon after his Wife Isabella in the same Place: So that King Philip in Mourning for the Death of his Father, Wife and near Relations, after so much Labour and Expence, brought nothing home but empty Coffers, and Coffins for his Father and Dead.





Complaint hereof to King *Philip* the Sovereign Lord of *Guyenne*, he summoned a Parliament to decide the matter, and the same was carried in favour of *Edward*.

Council at  
Lyons.  
1274.

There were a great many things required the calling of a Council about this time, which was to be held in the City of *Lyons*; whither the King came in Person, and where there appeared no less than 500 Bishops, 70 Abbots, and 1000 Doctors and Divines: Besides the Ambassadors of King *Philip* the Emperor *Rodolphus*, and divers Western Princes, there came thither also those from the Emperor of *Greece*, who presented some Letters to him, by virtue whereof they were admitted to an Abjuration of their Schism, and to make Profession of their following the Faith of the *Roman Church*: especially about the Procession of the Holy Ghost. After this the haughty Pope owned *Michael* for Emperor of the East, and forbade *Baldwin* to bear the Crown any longer; the Election of *Rodolph* was hereupon confirmed: Besides, there were several Constitutions made concerning Elections, Provisions, and Residencies of Benefices, with other necessary and useful matters; but for the Indulgencies and Privileges granted unto those that went into the Holy Land, I have no opinion of the Expedition and Design, so I'll leave it.

Philip  
marries.  
1276.

*Philip* tired with being a Widower four years, married to Wife *Mary* the Daughter of *Henry*, and Sister of *John* Duke of *Brabant*. And now *Lewis* the second Son, and his eldest by the first Venter, being dead, *ter de la Brosse*, a Person whom the young Queen did not care for, would needs make use of this Opportunity to ruin her. He was a Man that rose from nothing, having been *St. Lewis's* Barber, was taken into *Philip's* Favour, and so highly preferred by him, having nothing to fear but the too great Affection the King had for his Wife, he found out one to accuse her of having poisoned the Prince: Indeed the Child lost his Life that way, and if we believe one Author of this score, she had been in danger of being buried alive, had not the Duke of *Brabant* her Brother-in-Law, a Gentleman, who offered to prove her Innocency

The Queen  
accused of  
Murder.

bel against the Accuser, who wanting Courage to  
justify his Words, was condemned to be hanged.

There were in the Kingdom at this time three false  
prophets, the Vidame of *Lion*, a wandering Monk,  
and an old Nun, whom *La Brosse* 'twas thought had  
assaulted and instructed to prognosticate somewhat  
that might alienate the King's Affections from his  
Queen; and *Philip* was so simple, that he sent the Ab-  
bot of *Vendosme*, and the Bishop of *Bayeux* to dis-  
cuss the old Nun upon that Subject. Now the Bishop  
who was akin to *La Brosse's* Wife, going before, had  
a private talk with the Nun, in order to inform  
her what to say, and brought the King word, she  
could discover nothing to him but at Confession:  
The King not pleased with this Procedure, sent the  
Bishop of *Dol* and a Templar to her, who returned  
with this answer, that the Queen was innocent and  
faithful to her Husband, and that all that had been  
said of her was false, and nothing but mere Calum-  
ny; so that from hence forward the Queen's Interest  
was much confirmed, and that of *La Brosse* began to  
wane.

In the mean time *Ferdinand de La Cerde* Prince of Cas-  
tile, dying in his return home from *Norwiche*, and  
leaving two Sons behind him, by *Blanch* the French  
King's Sister, whose Name was *Agnes*, and

management was such that there were neither Provisions nor Ammunition to be had for them, only a Party of them advanced into *Navarre*, under the Conduct of *Robert de Artois*. The King was still at *Bearn*, and the *Castilian* to amuse him, demanded a Conference with *Robert*, whereby having made him lose five Weeks time, he suddenly decamped and marched towards *France*, of which the *Castilian* informing *Robert* by a Traitor, he was much surprised at it. Now you must understand that the Suspicion of this Treachery fell upon *Peter de la Brosse*, *Jacobine* delivered into the King's own Hand a Basket at *Melun*, which he said he was enjoined to deliver to a certain Person who died in that City, but the Contents thereof were not known, only that there was a Letter sealed with *La Brosse's* Seal, at which the King upon the reading of it, seemed much amazed, and the same was supposed to have been some Intelligence should give to the King of *Castile*: However it was he was made a Prisoner in the Castle of *Jarvis* *Beausse*, then some days afterwards brought to *Paris* and hanged on a common Gallows; and the Consequence of this was, that all his Creatures suffered by his Fall, but the Bishop of *Bayeux* his Brother-in-law, made his Escape to the Pope, where he remained a long time in Exile.

La Brosse  
hanged.

'Tis not compatible with this Design to treat of Affairs of any other Country, any farther than interfere with those of *France*; and therefore to observe the ambitious Designs of *Charles* King of *Sicily* in respect to *Italy*, the *Grecian* Empire, and the like, we are to observe that this Year he had like to have lost *Provence*; for Queen *Margaret*, *St. Lewis's* widow, and *Charles* his Sister-in-law, disputed it with *Charles* as being the elder Daughter of *Raymond*, and interested the Emperor's Assistance, of whom that Country was held, because of the Kingdom of *Arles*. Nevertheless the matter being fully examined, the Country was left to *Charles*, upon condition of Homage to the Emperor. In the mean time *Edward* King of *England*, with his Queen *Alienor* crossing the Seas, had an Interview with *Philip* at *Amiens*, where it was agreed that King *Edward* should have the Earldom of *Artois*.

1279.

which belonged to Queen *Alienor* of her Mother, was given up to him ; while on the other hand renounced his Pretensions to the County of *Normandy*, but retained 30 Livres on the Exchequer or Court of Judicature belonging to the Province.

1282.  
it was that the fatal *Sicilian Vespers* hapned, the *French* in that Island on Easter day, upon the ringing of the Bell to Vespers, had their Throats cut in a most inhumane and barbarous manner to the number of 8000 People in two hours time. *Charles* then in *Tuscany*, with all the Assistance he could procure, closely besieged *Messina*, which defended it self, till the King of *Aragon* arrived and crowned King of the Island, who finding himself an unequal Match for the King, he cunningly offered to decide this great Contest by a personal Combat between them, assisted by a hundred choice Knights on either side : *Charles* more than wise accepts the Challenge, and *Edward* of *England* who was related to both, undertook to secure the Field for them at *Bordeaux* on the 1<sup>st</sup> of *July* the following year ; so that *Charles* gave his Word of his perfidious Enemy imprudently to the Siege, and agreed to a Truce. When the day was come, *Charles* entred the Field at *Bordeaux* with his hundred Knights, and remained

children before-mentioned to be unjustly put by, and in case of their decease without Issue, *Philip* King of *France* was to succeed, who had indeed some Right already to *Castile* by *Blanch* the Mother of *St. Lewis*; but *Sancho* had artifice enough to maintain himself on the Throne.

*Philip* The Pope having all this while excommunicated *K. Peter* of *Arragon*, and his Legate having caused the *Croisade* to be preached against him, *K. Philip* himself would go upon this Expedition, in order to install *Charles* his second Son in that Kingdom. His Army consisted of no less than 20000 Horse and 80000 Foot. Part of the Infantry were put on board fourscore Vessels, which he took along with him to carry his Ammunition, Provision, and Artillery; and he was attended by *James* King of *Majorca* and *Minorca*, who *Peter* his Brother had dethroned. The Army broke up from *Narbonne* in *May*, and attacked *Perpignan*, which was quickly surrendered to *James*, and received the *French* in. *Elne* was taken by Storm, and therein destroyed, except the *Bastard de Rouffille*, who shewed them a Passage over the Mountains; so that the *Arragonians* who guarded the narrow Passage finding the *French* at their backs, quitted their Post and left them free entrance into *Catalonia*, where they quickly became Masters of divers small Places, and laid siege to *Gironne*. *Peter* used his endeavours to relieve it; but being beaten and grievously wounded in an Ambush he had designed for intercepting the Convoy that was marching from *Rosès*, the Place after two months Siege was given up for want of Provisions; and three months after the Fight King *Peter* died, being succeeded by *Alphonso*.

But the *French* were not so successful the remainder of the Campaign; for they, in order to the firing of Charges (tho imprudently enough) having sent back the Vessels belonging to the *Pisans* and *Genoese* that were in their Service, the *Arragonian* Admiral *Lauria*, taking the advantage of it, fell upon the Remainder of their Fleet, and defeated them all, except such as escaped into *Rosès*.

In the interim the Scarcity of Provision, and Sickness, brought this huge Army to dwindle almost to nothing.

and K. *Philip* himself falling sick, was carried to *Perpignan* in a Litter, where being inform'd, *Gironne*, and his other Acquests in *Catlonia* were recovered by the Enemy, he grew melancholy; and the Agitation of his Journey increas'd his Sickness so much, that he died there on the sixth *Philip's* *Death and* *Character.* *1285.* *October*, in the beginning of the 45<sup>th</sup> year of his, and the sixteenth of his Reign, his Body and his Bones brought to *St. Denys*. If we consider Prince's Qualities, we shall find him to be valiant, liberal, just, and very pious, but too simple, easy to be deceived: If his Conduct, it was not successful in his foreign Enterprizes; but for his domestic undertakings, they could not prove better the benefit of his Kingdom, since it grew rich and thriving by a Peace of fifteen years duration, with-  
holding the People with Taxes, and with maintain-  
ing an exact and speedy Course of Justice. By *Isabella*,  
daughter of *James I.* King of *Arragon*, he left two Sons,  
*John* and *Charles*; the first succeeded him, and the o-  
ther was Earl of *Valois*, and Father of a *Philip* that came  
to the Crown. By his 2<sup>d</sup> Wife, *Mary* of *Brabant*, he  
had one Son and two Daughters; the Son being *Lewis*  
of *Euveux*, from whom sprang the Branch of  
*Euveux*, to which the Crown of *Navarre* devolved  
by Marriage: The Daughters were *Margaret* and

## C H A P. V.

*The Reign of PHILIP IV. surnam  
Fair, King of France and Navarre*

Philip  
crowned.  
1286.

**P**hilip having brought the remainder of the back into *France*, he was with his Queen at *Rheims* on the 6th of *January*; and the having sent several Lords to receive *Edward Eng'nd* at *Amiens*, he was from thence come to *Paris*, where he was magnificently treated, and in the Parliament held after *Easter*, after he went by land to *Bordeaux*; but he forgot not press earnestly that he might have some reparations in *Normandy*, and those Countries which his Father himself had renounced claim to, tho without any and therefore while he was at *Bordeaux*, he received solemn Embassies from the Kings of *Castile*, and *Sicily*, all Enemies to *France*, which gave Philip no small Cause of Jealousy; but for all that Philip's Vice-roy in *Navarre* continued his war against *Aragon*, *Edward* used all his Endeavour to compose the Differences between *France*, *Aragon*, and *Sicily*; and therefore having first conferred with *Alphonso* and *Oleron de Bearn*, he afterwards began his pains of making a Voyage into *Sicily*, to the 1st of *June*; *Alphonso's* Brother, who had seized the

The Treaty was carried on so well, that *Charles* the Late, Son to the late *Charles* King of *Sicily*, was set at liberty, and a promise made that the Earl of *Bar* to whom the Pope, upon his Excommunication of the late King, had given the Kingdom of *Aragon*, should renounce all his Pretensions to it, and that he should give the Investiture of *Sicily* to *James* in possession; for the security of all which he gave his three Sons and fifty Persons of Quality hostages. But for all this, when he had obtained his liberty, and was got into *France*, he exhorted them not to lay aside his Pretensions of Right to the







of Arragon, and going afterwards into Italy, at himself to be crowned King of Sicily by the both on this side, and beyond the *Phare* of *Mes-* and so the War went on between him and *James* rragon with various Success, and the same terminated at last in a Truce for two years.

this while *Don Sancho* King of *Castile* was very desirous to have a Peace with *Philip*, and for that reason would have given him up the two Sons of *Alphonso de Cerda* before-mentioned; to which end he desired to get them out of the hands of the *Arragonians* who kept them. Now the *Arragonians* denying, he entered into a Treaty with *Philip*, to oblige himself to give the Kingdom of *Murcia* to the eldest of the *Arragonians*, and some Lands to the other. Hereupon *Alphonso* returned at liberty, that they might be so much the more dear to him, and continue Enemies to *Sancho*, which he very ill advisedly did, refusing to stand to the agreement made by *Philip* their Cousin-German for peace, and so took up Arms against the *Castilian*, who by making use of the *French* King's Displeasure *Philip* renounced them, had an Interview with him at *Bayonne*, where were made a Treaty, whereby *Philip* was obliged to abandon the Interests of his unhappy Cousins, and that he renounced to *Sancho* all the Pretensions he might have to the Crown of *Castile*. 1290.

the third Child of the same, notwithstanding

this Inquiry, which in it self was just and need was converted into a most odious Robbery.

French  
and Eng-  
lish quar-  
rel.

1292.

The Peace between *France* and *England* had till now, to the great satisfaction of both Nations, when an accidental Quarrel between an *English* man, and one of *Normandy*, upon the Coast of *Gu* where they had gone ashore to take in fresh Water set them at variance, and brought on a kind of War, or rather Privateering; and the *English* had been damaged thereby, *K. Edward*, seeing the no open Rupture, demanded Restitution of the Goods of his Subjects, while *Philip* on the contrary forced him to appear in his Court of Parliament as a Vassal, whither *Edward* sent *Edmund* his Brother. But *Philip* not satisfied therewith, caused him with much severity to be declared contumacious, and ordered his Lands to be seized, in pursuance of which *Robert de Nesle*, Constable of *France*, seized several Castles in *Guyenne*, and even *Bordeaux* it self, the Capital in the following Year. Thus these little Sparks of contention between private Men, broke out into a full War, that may be said to have proved very fatal to *France*, as upon other accounts, so more particularly since it made way for the Overthrow of her ancient Laws and Liberties, and the introducing and establishing divers Burdens and Taxes upon the People, the increase whereof is usually attended with Revolts and Seditions, as it fell out this Year by a great motion at *Rome*, tho at last it ended in hanging the Ringleaders, and the Banishment and Ruin of the rest.

1293.

1294.

In the mean time the King of *England* being distressed for the Losses sustained in *Guyenne*, solicited the Emperor *Adolphus*, and the Earl of *Flanders* in *France*, the first of whom sent a defiance to *Philip* in a haughty Style, to which they made no other Answer but a Sheet of white Paper; and the Emperor upon went no farther than Threats: But for *Gu* of *Flanders*, he being cunningly allured by a Messenger from the King to go with his Wife and Daughter to *Paris*, he was basely imprisoned there. 'Tis true that his Wife had their Liberty; about a year after the Daughter they still detained to break the Mar-

Match between her and the Prince of *Wales*, which  
 would be of too pernicious a consequence to *France*.  
 However *Edward* having two weighty matters before  
 him, which was the Conquest of *Scotland*, and the Philip  
 recovery of his Losses in *Guyenne*, he thought he had *finds K.*  
 advanced the first; and therefore to bring about *Edward*  
 second, he prepared a mighty Fleet, and strength- *a Diver-*  
 ened himself with Friends and Allies: But *Philip*, to *sion.*  
 break his Measures, induced the *Scotch* Homager, al- 1295.  
 ready menaced by his Subjects, to break his Treaty  
 with *Edward*, and make an Alliance with *France*; and  
 to the farther cementing of the same, he promised to  
 give the Earl of *Valois* his eldest Daughter in mar-  
 riage to his eldest Son Prince *Edward*. But still not  
 satisfied here, the *French* King caused an Insurrection in  
*Gascony*, where the People made such Devastations in the  
 County of *Pembroke* and thereabouts, that it broke  
 King *Edward's* Measures; so that he was forced to  
 send a Person into that Country, and for the present lay  
 down the Affairs of *Guyenne*.

At this time, a proud, haughty and imperious Priest,  
 now in the Papal Chair, thought all the Prin-  
 ces of the Earth must submit to his Commands; and  
 more ardently pursuing the Design he aimed at of  
 bringing all Kings to go to the Holy War, he sent to  
 demand both *Philip* and the King of *England*, that  
 they must make a Truce, upon pain of being excom-

the Earl of *Artois* :

by *John* Earl

Brother. It will be to little

Detail of every petty Act

won two signal Victories by the Earls

*Warlike Exploits.* *Artois*. Indeed *Edmund* was by retreat to *Bayonne*, where he died ;

1295, 96. *Lincoln* that succeeded him in the *Cor* having lost many Men before *Dags*, dretreated. In the mean time a most da

*A Confederacy against France.* was forming against *France*, there hav made at *Cambray* by the Interest of the *land*, wherein he engaged the Duke of *Bi* of *Holland*, *Juliers*, *Luxemburg*, *Gi*

*Albert* Duke of *Austria*, the Emper

the *Fleming* himself, who all se

Cartels of Defiance to *K. Philip* ; I no

to much as that from the Earl of *ru*

The Earl of *Bar* began the work by rav

*paigne* ; but his own Country by way

being plundered by the King's Troops, a

advancing into *Champagne*, he was so d

surrender himself to her without making

tions or Defence, and was not released

hard Terms of doing Homage for his E

he ever pretended to hold in free Tenure,

condemned by a Decree of Parliament

Arms in the Holy Land, till the King

recal him.

The greatest Burden of the War fell

into which Country *K. Philip* marched w

inv, to whom the Queen joined Forces, a

subdued the Earl of *Bar*. He took *Li*

of three Months, and *Courtray* and

much difficulty ; while on the other ha

*Artois* won the Battel of *Furness*, w

*Juliers* was so severely handled, it

Wounds. *Adolphus* was detained :

*Germany* by the Imbroilments of the

found a way by the mighty Power of

off the Duke of *Austria*, who brought

him the Duke of *Brabant*, and *Ea*

*burgh*, *Gueldres*, and *Beaumont*.

*French successful in Flanders.*

1297.

who was there in Person, and had his Fleet  
and his Land forces in the Country-Towns,  
rather an Inconvenience than an Assistance to  
him. Besides, we may observe, that the great-  
est in *Flinders*, as *Ghent* and *Bruges*, had been  
making this War, and amongst them a Faction  
shared for the *French*, who called themselves  
*her de luce* Bearers. All these matters being put  
by the Confederates, by the Mediation of the  
Duke of *Savoy* and King of *Sicily*, obtained a Truce  
the 10<sup>th</sup> of *October* till Twelfth-day for *Guyenne*,  
St. *Andrew's* day for *Flinders* only.

In mean time *Edward* making use of the oppor-  
tunity, fell upon the *Scots*, took *John Baliol* Prisoner,  
resolved not to release him, till he had made an  
end of his Wars with the *French*. This done, and the  
Truce expired, he prepared for *Guyenne*; but to  
stop to any further Action, their Ambassadors at  
*Arras* prolonged the Truce to the end of the

and it was agreed the Allies of both Kings  
should be comprehended, and so consequently *John*  
should have been so, but they could never ob-  
tain Liberty; and that all the Places conquered in  
the War should remain in *Philip's* hands during the  
War. It was also agreed that *Edward* should marry  
Bertranda, *Philip's* Sister, and that his Son *Edward*

A Truce  
concluded.  
1298.

*Paris*, that he might treat with the K  
assured him, if within a year he c  
Peace, he should be set at liberty, i  
to the same Place where they had tak  
King ungenerously, without any re  
Uncle had done, detained the *Fl*  
Sons, which so stuck to *Valois*, that  
and went into *Italy*, where he  
the Daughter and Heirefs of .  
ror of *Constantinople*, and the rope gave  
pire, and made him his Vicar over all t  
Territories, hoping thereby to carry on  
a Holy War.

THE T

THE T

—

re to cement a Union, they treated of a  
age between *Rodolph Albert's* Son, and *Blanch*  
daughter of *Philip*, which was not consummated  
following year.

the other hand *Boniface*, growing obstinate in  
sign of an Expedition into the Holy Land, and  
g he had a Right to oblige all Christian Princes  
it leastwise acting as such, he sent the Bishop of  
to King *Philip*, with a charge to exhort him  
Undertaking, as also to summon him to make  
ard good to the Earl of *Flanders*, by setting his  
ter at liberty; the Bishop discharged his Com-  
in such high Terms, and the King was inform-  
t his Discourses upon several Occasions were so  
his to his Person, and conducive to disturb the  
and Quiet of the Kingdom, that he caused him  
ized and imprisoned. This and other Inciden- *Pope and*  
ide their hatred run up high, and the Pope d.f. *French K.*  
d the Archdeacon of *Norbonne* to command at vari-  
ing to set the Bishop at liberty, and let him *ance.*  
there was a Bull, importing that the King was *1301.*  
his Correction for the Sins he committed in the  
ement of his Government, as well as for others;  
he conferring of Benefices did not belong to him,  
at the Regalia was an Usurpation: By another  
e suspended all the Privileges granted by his



revolts.  
1302.

BUT TO LEAVE THESE EMPLOYMENTS FOR THE PRESENT, we are here to take notice that *Flanders* revolted and was as lost the *French*: Those People able to endure the heavy Taxes and Imposts, instigated by their young Governor *James de Châtille*, the Instigation of *Peter Flote*, a violent, and one-eyed Man, they invited in *William*, the Earl of *Fuliers*, and a Daughter of Earl *Robert* to be their Head, whose younger Sons with the Brother *John*, came into the County of *Flanders* to support the defection. The Fire began at *Mons*, and broke out more fiercely at *Bruges*, where the *Garison* being all knocked on the Head, the *Furnes Reroh Rourhaurch* and *Cossell* follow

but Men more, but particularly *Peter Flota*,  
as the chief cause of this misfortune. The King  
gave the loss, and revenge this bloody Affront,  
in Field in Person with above 100000 Men;  
Assurance of the *Flemings*, and the Intelligence  
by the Queen of *England* his Sister, that if  
he led a Battel his own Men would betray him,  
him from proceeding any farther than *Doway*,  
the Autumnal Rains rendered his March very

this War, which was very troublesome in it self, 1303.  
have been much more so, had the King of *Eng-*  
he ought to have done, intermeddled with it;  
his Troubles helped to advance his Affairs, and  
having prolonged the Truce two or three  
with the *French*, he at length converted it to a  
and the Treaty was concluded at *Paris* on the  
*May*, whereby it was stipulated, that *Philip*  
restore to King *Edward* all that he had taken  
in *Guyenne*, and grant him a Patent for the  
Duchy of that Dutchy. *John Baliol* was set at  
but the *Scots* would not own him, and so he  
died, and died a private Man in *France*.  
Courage of the *Flemings* being not to be sur-  
d, their old Earl grown weary of his Imprison-  
obtained a Truce by the means of *Ame* Earl of

the French side of the *Lys*, and the Cities and *Doway*, which were to remain to the King. The Earl had more fully settled matters with him, that the *Flemings* paid down the Sum of 80000*l*. The Earl who was now fourscore years old long enjoy his Liberty, but died, and was succeeded by his eldest Son *Robert de Betune*.

1303.

But before these things were fully transacted, convoked a second General Assembly at *Paris*. *Du Pleffis* offered to prosecute the Pope before Council adhering to the Appeal heretofore against him by *Nogaret*; the King promised to cure the Convocation, and in case *Boniface* should proceed against him, formed his Ap-  
*Du Pleffis* had done: Besides, fearing his People much oppressed with Taxes, and dissatisfied with his Ministry, should chance to fail him in time, he found it necessary, in order to prevent all this, to have Letters or Writings from all the *Princes*, Cities, Corporations, Churches, Religious Prelates, and Lords of his Kingdom, to approve his Design, and concur with him therein. At these Proceedings *Nogaret* was gone into *Italy*, the Pope's Person, under pretence of bringing fair or foul means to the Council, and that he did at *Anagnia* the place of his Nativity, where he had retired for his greater security; but the Citizens of *Anagnia* repenting they had joined with the

occasion, four days after drove the *French* Soldiers out of the Town, whereby the *King* regained his liberty, but soon after died at a burning Fever, and was succeeded by *XL*. who carried things with a better Temper, he dying on the 7th of *July*, 1304. the *French* were a long time before they could elect a new Pope, who at last by the Management of the *King*, the Bishop of *Bourdeaux* was chosen in the beginning of the year 1305, who instead of going to *Italy*, as the Cardinals desired, sent for them, to assist at his Coronation; the *King*, his Brother *Charles*, with a great many Princes and Nobles, besides a multitude of People, being present at the Ceremony; the *King* for some time held the Pope's Mule, but then left it to be carried by his Brother *Charles*, and the Duke of *Bretagne*; the Cavalcade an old Wall overcharged with people fell down, which overwhelmed the Duke of *Bretagne*, and a Brother of the Pope's, grievously hurt. *Charles*, the *King* somewhat lightly, and beat the Pope from the Pope's Head, a Presage of the miseries which the Translation of the See into *Avignon* was to bring upon the Nation, and all *Christen-*

The Pope fixed his Residence at last in 1308 at *Avignon*. Pope set up his other belonging to *Avignon* from *Avignon* but the at *Avignon*.



his Master, did not forget to fill his own Coffers to enrich his Family with more Lands, Imple and Benefices, than a faithful and disinterested servant ought to do; besides which the People mightily aggrieved with the changing of which being made light, weak, and of too small lay, they put too high a value upon it; but in ing to lower it, which made the loss great, the *fiars* mutinied, plundered and demolished the the Treasurer *Barbet*, from whence they went Temple where the King lay, and committed, and Insolencies; but the Sedition being over, many of the Mutineers were hanged. The were indeed observed to contribute to this which was thought to have proceeded from giving a great deal of Money, and their Loss Reduction of its value: However it were, who never forgot an Injury, kept this in mind, was one Motive which induced him to revenge self upon the whole Order. Indeed the vast of these Knights, their intolerable Pride, and disobliging Carriage towards the Princes and Men that went into the Holy Land; the count they made either of the Temporal or astical Authority, their dissolute and licentious pers had rendred them obnoxious and very and supplied their Enemies with a specious to root them out. It was now therefore, upon covery and Confession of some Villains among selves, to which the Greatness of their Crime Desire of the King's Mercy and Reward had ed them, that *Philip* by the Pope's Consent whom he had newly had a Conference at *Poitie* sed them all to be seized on the 12th of throughout the Kingdom, their Estates to be ted, and their Temple with all their Treasur Writings to be posselt for his own use. In the time the Grand Master *de Molay* being writ to Pope to come from *Cyprus*, where he valiantly War against the *Turks*; he with sixty Knights Order was no sooner arrived at *Paris*, but the all seized at the same time, and without delay ally proceeded against, except *Guy Brother*

The Tem-  
plars put  
down.

1307.

John of *Viennos*, *Hugh de Peralde*, and another  
 Royal Officer, whom the Pope reserved to his own  
 use, fifty of them were burnt alive on a slow  
 fire who denied at their Deaths what they had con-  
 fessed on the Rack: Not content herewith, *Philip*  
 at this Importunity, got the Templars likewise sei-  
 zed all the States of *Christendom*, and severely pu-  
 nished tho not with Death in many Places.

As we might take notice of the Death of *Ed-  
 ward the first King of England*, and the Assassination  
 of *Emperor Albert*; also of the decease of *Charles*  
*the first, King of Naples*, with the particulars that at-  
 tended these Adventures; but these being not peculiar-  
 ly Subject, we proceed to shew, that there being

a Council to assemble at *Vienne*, the Pope, to pre-  
 pare the King's Subjects in their pursuit of the Me-  
 rit of *Boniface*, granted them all the Bulls he

Council of  
*Vienne.*  
 1310.

desire for the Justification both of the King and  
 Ministers; nay, for fear *Nogaret* should blow the  
 Pop again, he granted him Absolution. This  
 being done, and the Council opened on the  
 8<sup>th</sup> of *Octob.* the Pope declared it was convoked for  
 the process of the Templars, the Recovery of the Holy  
 Reformation of Manners and Discipline, and  
 the Extirpation of Heresy: *Philip* himself went  
 in *Lent* with a great Court, and assisted at the  
 beginning of the second Session, taking his Seat on the

sons, and in many Particulars; besides, there were *Catalonian* Gentlemen that offered to justify it; but, but none would take up their Gantlets; the Pope and Cardinals made a Decree, that it should never hereafter be reproached for anything he had done against *Boniface*.

1312.

But to say no more of the Proceedings of the Council, we are to observe in this Place, that the *Arch-Bishop* of *Lyons* had for a long time held of the *Arch-Bishop* of *Arles*, who had conferred the Temporal Jurisdiction thereof upon its *Arch-Bishop*; but since the *King* of *France*, taking advantage of the weakness and indolence of the Emperors, who were Kings of *Aragon* by degrees attracted the Sovereignty of that Kingdom to themselves, and the City of *Lyons* began to revolt from them: Now during the War between *Savoy* and *France*, the Citizens fearing they might be forced to have recourse to *Philip*, who gave them a War against whom the *Arch-Bishop*, as thinking himself aggrieved, stirred up the People; and this quickly *Prince Louis Hutin* with an Army thither, took the *Bishop* Prisoner; and he never got off, till he made a Surrendry of his Temporal Jurisdiction to the *King*, tho afterwards *Philip* the Long restored him again.

A new  
War with  
Flanders.

1313.

: Soon after this, *Robert* Earl of *Flanders* needed have his Cities of *Lisle*, *Doway* and *Arras* again, affirming he had paid the Money agreed upon with *Marigny*, who absolutely governed both the Kingdoms: The *Flemings* also refused to disarm the Towns, or to pay either the Principal or the Interest of those Sums they owed the *King*, and so forced him to begin another War. To provide for the War, the *King* summoned the chief of the People, and from a high Theatre let forth unto them the necessities, upon which the Deputies suffered to be persuaded to grant him six Deniers in the pound, beside other more grievous Subsidies; but the *Barons* of *Fleming* and *Normandy* highly opposed, and the rest invoked the Divine Vengeance to overthrow the Author of all these Exactions: 1. Moans and Execrations were so far from doing him any harm, that on the contrary he aggravated

making new Money, of too base an Alloy, Gold and Silver : However the Money being at the King to the Oppression of the People, led with his Army over the *Lys*, and incamped of the *Flemings*; while *Marigni*, who had his own business, took the advantage of the Legates Interposition, and persuaded the King to a dishonourable Truce; and so that great Army, which was about to have conquered all *Flanders*, vanished in smoke.

The disgrace of King Philip was succeeded by one far greater, for *Margaret*, *Jane*, and *Blanch*, <sup>Adultery severely punished.</sup> three of his three Sons, were accused of Adultery; the Wife of *Lewis Hutin*, and the third his Wife, being convicted of that Crime with *Gautier de Lamoignon*, who were Brothers, ~~men~~ Gentlemen, they were by Decree of Parliament in the King's Presence, confined to the *Châteaufort de Andely*, and both the Gallants fled when being brought into the Field of *Maubuisson*, newly mowed, their privy Parts were cut off, their Heads, and their Bodies fastened under the same to a Gibbet : As for *Jane* the Wife of *Philip Long*, after she had been confined for almost a year her Husband was willing to take her for honest, and to live with her again, being happier, or at least as happy as his two Brothers.



*K. Philip  
his Death.*

*Philip* about the end of the year, being seized with a grievous Fit of Sickness, which put a Period to his Life on the 24<sup>th</sup> of Nov. at *Fontainebleau* the 48<sup>th</sup> year of his Age, and 16<sup>th</sup> of his Reign: His Monument is at *St. Dennis*. Prince being on his Death-bed, and smitten with a late Remorse, he took pity on the poor, and put a stop to the raising of the new Taxes, and gave his Son Orders to moderate them, to coin good Money, and to have a care of the Justice and Polity of his Kingdom.

*His Cha-  
racter.*

He had by his Wife Queen *Jane* of *Navarre* three Sons, viz. *Lewis Hutin*, *Philip* the Long, and *John the Fair*, who succeeded one another, and left no Male behind them: He had likewise three Daughters, *Margaret* married to *Ferdinand* King of *Castile*, *Isabel* Wife to *Edward II.* King of *England*, and *Blanche* who died young. He was the handsomest and best shaped Prince of his time; he had a proud and haughty heart, a lively and quick Spirit, a firm and resolute Soul; was magnificent and liberal, and very greedy of Money; severe even to hard-heartedness, and more inclined to revenge than to forgive: the rest, the severe Taxes laid upon his People, and many Exactions wherewith they were tormented, the frequent Change and Alteration of the Coin, and the little Progress he made in *Flanders* with the vast Money he had raised, the absoluteness of his insolent and greedy Prime-Minister, his Proceedings against his Daughters-in-law for Adultery, and his bitter Repentance at his Death for having so much oppressed his Subjects, demonstrate what his Reign and Character were.

## C H A P. VI.

## Reign of LEWIS X. surnamed Hutin.

Son as Philip was dead his eldest Son Lewis  
 succeeded him, tho he could not get to be crown-  
 ed till the 3d of August in the following  
 year as well because he tarried for the Arrival of  
 his Spouse Clemence, the Daughter of Charles  
 King of Hungary, as because the whole King-  
 dom was in an uproar about the Taxes, and alteration  
 of Coin. Now this Prince, tho at full Age, and  
 long employed for many Years in publick Affairs,  
 Charles de Valois his Uncle assumed the Authority,  
 displacing what Officers he thought fit, he put  
 new Creatures into their room; and there being  
 money to be had for defraying the Charge of the  
 Coronation, he took the opportunity to inquire  
 and examine the Officers of the Treasury, and  
 by Marigni, with whom before he had some  
 business, accordingly Marigni being sent for into the King's  
 presence, to give an Account of the Treasury, had

this being tried in an Assembly at *Senlis*, was  
and restored ; and afterwards his Innocency  
more fully appear, in that four Women w  
victed, and punished for poisoning his Predece  
The Truce with the *Flemings* being at an  
the very time of the King's Coronation, he  
Forces together ; and whilst *William* Earl of  
ravaged the Country along the *Scheld*, he laid  
*Courtray*, but the unseasonable Weather esse  
which the *Fleming* durst not undertake, an  
him to raise the Siege ; so that we find nothi  
memorable concerning this France, who in  
the end of *May* began to feel the Effects

K. Lewis

with Child; by his first Wife *Margaret*, Daughter of *Robert II.* Duke of *Burgundy*, he had a daughter named *Jane*, to whom belonged the Kingdom of *Navarre*, and the Counties of *Brie* and *Champagne*; but *Philip the Long*, and *Charles the Fair*, used Pretences to detain them.

When *Lewis* left this World, his Brother *Philip the Earl of Poitiers*, was at *Lyons*, where in pursuance of his Orders, he laboured to make them choose a Bishop to supply the See which had been vacant for three Years; and having got all the Cardinals together, he shut them up in a Conclave in the *Jacobin's* Church, and they had been there some days, when the News of his Brother's Death made him return with all his Family to *Paris*, after he had entrusted the Earl of *Fore* with the Guard of the Conclave, who after 40 days came to no other Conclusion about the Election, but to refer it to the single Vote of *James Dossa* a Cardinal, and Bishop of *Oporto*, who without mincing Matter, named himself, to the Amazement of them, and so it passed, and he assumed the Name of *James*; he was a poor Cobler's Son of *Quercy*, but learned for those times.

France at this time seemed to be at a difficult Passage to the Succession, which was established in favour of the Males, not by any written Law, but by custom only; however because in most if not all

## C H A P. VII.

*The Reign of PHILIP V. surnam  
the Long.*

THE Queen being brought to bed of a Son  
19th of November, who was named *John*,  
same going out of the World eight days after,  
buried in St. Dennis, and in the Funeral Obsequy  
coriared King of *France* and *Navarre*, w  
given some Modern Authors occasion to in  
number of the Kings of *France*, and to t  
*John I.* Hereupon the Dispute about the Crown  
with greater heat than before; *Charles Earl*  
*lois* seemed to favour little *Jane*, as well as t  
of *Burgundy* her Uncle; but the Nobility,  
Kingdom, and the Peers assembled at *Paris*,  
ed the Right of the Males, and gave Judg  
favour of *Philip*, who on the 9th of *Jane*  
crowned at *Rheims*, the Gates of the City  
the same time shut, for fear any opposition  
made to it. Now the Estates being assembled  
where were present not only most part of the  
but also the Deputies of Cities and Corporat  
above all the Burghers, and the University of  
they swore before the Chancellor, to acknow  
no other King but *Philip* and his Heirs Male  
exclusion of Females.

And here 'tis to be observed that *Robert II.*  
*Artois* had had a Sister named *Mahaut*, m  
called *Philip*; the Sister was married to the  
*Burgundy*, by whom he had two Daughters;  
*Philip* the Fair gave unto two of his Sons  
*Philip* dying before his Father, left a Son whol  
was *Robert*, as his Grandfather's was, and to w  
Earldom of *Flanders* of Right did belong,  
Fair adjudged it to *Mahaut*, upon pretence it  
a Masculine Fief, and that according to the C  
those Countries, Representation did not take

Philip  
crowned.

117.

'artial  
'udgment  
f Philip.

about having by force got into Possession during  
agency of *Philip the Long*, the matter now  
to be examined, the Lands sequestred into the  
Hands, and at last very partially adjudged to  
her, whose Daughter *Philip* had married, which  
the occasion of much mischief; for three several  
times less than 18 Months they began a War against  
the Kings, and the same ended as many times in a

In the mean time the Duke of *Burgundy* could not  
insisting upon the wrong done to young *Jane*,  
retaining the Kingdom of *Navarre* with the He keeps  
lands of *Brie* and *Champagne* from her; and *Philip Navarre*.  
to appease him, gave him his Daughter, also  
*Jane*, in Marriage, with the Earldom of *Bur-*  
notwithstanding which *Endes* still persisted so  
upon the Right of his Niece, that the King was  
to marry her to *Philip* Son of *Lewis Earl d'*  
*Orleans*, *Philip's* Paternal Uncle, with the Rights  
and have to the Kingdom of *Navarre*, and the  
lands of *Brie* and *Champagne*.

In the great danger *France* was in after the Death  
of *John* about the Succession, and a cruel War  
inflicted *Scotland* about a matter almost of the  
Nature, after the Decease of *Alexander IV*.  
occasioned the renewing of the Alliance between

Peace with  
Flanders.

1320.

chosen Arbitrator, should go to *Paris* the 1<sup>st</sup> Spring, to accommodate all matters between The Peace was concluded the 20<sup>th</sup> of May, Cities of *Doway*, *Lisle* and *Orchies*, confirmed King's Possession; besides the *Flemings* were thirty thousand Florins of Gold, and swore assist their Earl, in case he contravened the Agreement while the King on his part promis'd his *Margaret* to *Lewis* Earl of *Nevers* and *Rethel*, of another *Lewis*, the eldest Son of Earl *Robert* condition he should succeed his Grandfather Earldom of *Flanders*, in case his Father should die before his Grandfather. Indeed *Robert de C* Earl of *Flanders* his second Son, having at that time accused his elder Brother *Lewis*, as though he have poisoned his Father, *Lewis* was imprisoned though his Servants and Confessor were put to torture, and that they could not make out any charge against him, he was not set at Liberty, but on condition of never returning into *Flanders* again.

A like Frenzy to that we gave an account of time of St. *Lewis*, began to seize the Peasants and Shepherds of this Country for the Recovery of Holy Land, upon the Instigation of a certain Monk put out of his Cure; they rendezvoused in the Clerks at *Paris*, marched into *Aquitain*, from thence to *Languedoc*, massacring the *Jews* and pillaging their Stores, wherever they met with them; Earl of *Foix* pursued them so closely, that he dispersed them.

Lepers  
punished.

Having done with these strange Adventures come now to the Lepers of these times, who were a horror to the World, but also became envied, because of their great Wealth, and though some Distemper did not render them incapable of enjoying their Pleasures; besides, they paid no taxes wherewith the rest of the People were laden whether for these or some other Reasons, they were accused for having by an Agreement with the *Mongols* who had been re-admitted into the Kingdom in the Reign of *Lewis Hutin*, and holding Intelligence with the *Turks*, cast some of their Ordure or Poison into the Wells and Springs, thereby

those that were in health with their foul Disease, or to poison them. Besides which they were guilty several unnatural Crimes, so that great numbers of them were condemned to the Flames, and the rest confined very close within their Hospitals. As for the rest, the Mob did Justice upon them themselves, and put a great many of them, upon which the King banished their whole Race out of his Dominions.

This Year the King's Council having resolved to alter the same Weights, Measures and Coin over the whole Kingdom, they would, under pretence of some licence and Charges they should be at, take the fifth part of the Subjects Goods. In the mean time the Princes and Prelates, who had a right to coin Money, would not suffer the King's Commissaries to go on with their Reform; but they appealed to the States of the Kingdom, and confederated with the great Cities for their Defence; so that the Tax being not raised, the Reglement was laid aside. During these Disturbances, K. Philip laden with the Curses of the People, hated by the Clergy, by reason of his too frequent exacting of the Tenth from them, fell sick of a Mortal Ague, wherewith having languished for five months together, at last he died on the third of January at Bois de Vincennes, after he had lived one and thirty years, and of them had reigned five, and six

1321.

K. Philip's  
Death.



## C H A P. VIII.

*The Reign of CHARLES IV. from  
the Fair.*

1322.

The Mini-  
sters pu-  
nished.

THE Succession of the Males being well established, Charles came to the Throne, and was crowned the 11th of February at Rheims, without opposition, all the Peers assisting thereat, except the King of Land, and Earl of Flanders; and the first work of his Reign was to make an Inquisition into the Maladministration of the late Reign, and punish the Authors of it. Gerard de la Guerre, a Person of mean Extraction, had been the chief Manager of the Tyranny under Philip, and therefore being now taken, he was put upon the Rack, examined, and used so severely that he died in the midst of those Torments. But this did not prevent their dragging his Body thro the Streets and hanging it up on the Gallows at Paris. They then made a general search for all the Farmers, and others who had been any ways concerned in the Revolt, who were for the most part Lombards and Italian, miserable Usurers and Exactors. The Estates of these were all confiscated, and they sent packing into their own Countries, as beggerly as they came from the Throne.

As for Charles, he had been indulgent enough, not putting his Wife *Blanch* to death, who had been condemned for Adultery; but now that he was seated on the Crown, the desire of having Children engaged him to obtain a Divorce from her, under pretence of Consanguinity, and then he married *Mary*, Daughter to the Emperor *Henry* of *Luxemburg*, who was born Anno 1324. in Childbed, and the Infant some time after, he married *Jane*, the Daughter of *Lewis* Earl of *Evreux* his Uncle, for which he obtained a Dispensation.

In the mean time *Lewis* Earl of *Nevers* and *Robert* Earl of *Artois* dying at *Paris*, and his Father *Robert* Earl of *Flanders* soon after, the eldest Son of *Lewis* bearing the Name of *Philip*.

FATHER

her's Name, enjoy'd all those three Earldoms; but  
 his Uncle pretending to be one degree higher to  
 his Father than *Lewis* the Grandson, applied  
 self to the King for the Investiture of *Flanders*;  
 as *Lewis* making haste to take possession, with-  
 holding that Devoir to the King, this so incensed  
 that tho the young Prince was his own Nephew,  
 summoned him before a Parliament, and detained  
 Prisoner. But the Parliament taking this weighty  
 into their Consideration, declared in favour of  
 him, who being set at liberty, did Homage to the  
 King, and took an Oath never to redemand the Cities  
 of *Liège, Doway and Orchies*. The King at the same  
 confirmed the Appennage given by his Father to  
*de Cusfel*, and likewise made an Agreement be-  
 tween the Earl of *Holland* and *Lewis*, who desisted  
 his contending with him for the Isles of *Walcheren*.

And now *Charles* took occasion to complain of *Ed-War be-*  
*II. K. of England*, because he did not assist at his *tween*  
 coronation; and that his Seneschal of *Bourdelois* had *France and*  
 a Garison into a Castle built by the Lord of *Mont-England*.  
 on *French* Ground. Wherefore, after some Ne- *1323, &c.*  
 gotiations, he sent *Charles de Valois* his Uncle into  
*Norme*, who so straitned *Edmund* Earl of *Kent*,  
*Edward's* Brother, in the City *De la Reoulle*, that he  
 red him to capitulate, and return to *England*, to  
 make the King to come to an Accommodation, or

and having mustered up three hundred Persons  
 he carried her back into *England*, where she  
 assisted by the Barons, that the *Spencers* were  
 and put to death, the King himself deposed,  
 Son *Edward* substituted in his stead, who married  
*Isabella*, second Daughter to the Earl of *Haynauke*

But not to digress any farther, divers Bands  
 of Adventurers, whom they called *Bastards*,  
 because their Leaders were so, ravaged *Gayenne*  
 going into *Saintonge*, seized *Xantes*; but perceiving  
 Commanders sent thither by *K. Charles*, were refused  
 give them battle, they retired by night, after they  
 first set fire to the City. *Italy* was all this while

## **§. The Reign of Charles IV.**

227

led this Life on the first of *February*, at the Age  
 of four years, when he had reigned six, and  
 both. This Prince oppressed the People, as his  
 and Brother *Philip* had done, tho he was other-  
 wise a very liberal and gentle Nature, and loved  
 the Counsel of those he thought to have the clearest  
 Views, and most Honesty, having always a  
 Noblemen and Prelates of known Prudence.  
 He divorced from his first Wife *Blanch*, and con-  
 sidered himself to hide her Shame under a Sacred Veil.  
 His second Wife was *Mary*, Daughter to the Empe-  
 ror VII. who having hurt her self when with  
 Child with the Fruit of her Womb; and by  
 that, who was the Daughter of *Lewis* Earl of  
 Artois, he had only two Daughters, of whom *Mary*  
 survived her Father but a few years, and the  
 second which was Posthumous, and called *Blanch*, was  
 married to *Philip* Duke of Orleans, the Son of *Philip*

*K. Charles*  
*his Death,*  
*&c.*

1327.

# BOOK VI

## CHAP. I.

### *The Reign of PHILIP VI. the Fortunate.*

1328. **T**H O our K. *Edward III.* from the Regency during with Child, yet he did not excluded from the Kingdom, cels was brought to bed only of a C agreed that Daughters could not inherit *France*, neither did he claim it for his fisted, that the Sons of Daughters, not becillity of that Sex, were not incapable they ought to prefer him, being a Grandson of *Philip the Fair*, before *Philip* who was his Nephew. The Peers and Great at *Paris*, immediately after the solve this Grand Affair, and both rare Interests with all the Assiduity and Care but the Earl of *Beaumont*, who had a great in that Assembly, siding with *Philip*, at ment Persuasions, the Power of their re Law, but chiefly the aversion the *French* ger, determined them to declare in favour culine Line, and that the Crown belong with which Sentence *Edward*, at least seemed to acquiesce, and for some years by several Acts. *Philip* was crowned at 128th, and was surnamed the Fortunate, had taken his three Cousins out of the way for his coming to the Crown.

Philip de  
Valois  
carries the  
Crown.

Soon after the States of *Navarre* defend them back their lawful Queen, and her Husband, he, according to the Advice





plied with it, tho he still retained *Brie* and *Champagne*, for which he gave an Equivalent elsewhere; and leaving these Princes to go and be crowned at *Compeigne*, we proceed to observe in this place, that at the time of *Hugh Capet*, there was no Reign so much stained with the Blood of War as this same. At the beginnings of it were signalized with the winning of the famous Battel of *Mount-Cassel*; for the great Nobles of *Flanders* having now mutinied against their King, the King, to suppress them, went in person with an Army of 25000 men into that Country. The *Fle-*  
*The Battel of Mount Cassel.*  
 The King going to incamp in a Valley below, they were so bold as to go and attack him there, and appointed three Bodies at the same time to make their way to the Tent, to that of the King of *Bohemia's*, and to the Earl of *Haynault's*, with a design to surprise them; but the King, tho at first he was in great danger, stood bravely to it, and so repulsed the Enemy, that those three Parties not one Man escaped: So that *Flanders* being quelled by this shock of Fortune, submitted to his Mercy, which he did not exercise so much upon this occasion; for he caused several Nobles to be hanged, banished, and their Estates confiscated, and the year after dismantled five or six of his Towns, which allayed their heat for some time, but did not extinguish it.



the Baron of *Bourbon*, this with the Title of a Duke and the other of an Earldom. Then afterward several years *Alençon*, *Euveux* and *Clermont* in *Normandy*, all for Princes of his Blood, and upon such names as were far inferior to the six former Peers but as much above those of the present Age, as Princes of the Blood are above private Gentlemen.

Now upon the first Summons sent to King *Edward* by two Lords dispatched to him for that purpose, according to the Custom of *Fiefs*, he promised to go do Homage to the *French King*, upon which the King of his Territories in *Guyenne* and *Pontieu* were referred, and *Edward* in due time went over to *Amiens*

Edward  
does Ho-  
mage for  
Guyenne,  
&c.

1329.

with a very splendid Court, where, after he had vainly insisted upon a restitution of what had been taken from his Father in *Guyenne*, he did Homage; but was only in outward appearance, since this Religion and other matters stuck so close to him, that he considered weightier things in his great Mind, which appeared in due time.

In the mean while there was an Assembly of Clergy held at *Paris*, upon a Complaint of the Judges made by *Peter Cugniers*, Knt. and Advocate General of the Parliament, touching the Usurpations and Attempts of the Clergy upon the Secular Jurisdiction. The business was discussed in a Council at *Vincennes*, then again in the Assembly of Parliament where *Cugniers* spake notably to the satisfaction of the Nobility, and was answered very eloquently by *Peter Roger* Arch-bishop of *Sens*, and the Bishop of *Autun*; notwithstanding which the Clergy were to have lost ground, and at least a great part of their Jurisdiction, when the King at last, by an Edict the 28th of *December*, maintained them in their Possession, protesting it was his sincere desire to augment the Rights and Privileges of the Church, rather than to fringe or diminish them. For which reason they gave him the Surname of the *Good Catholic*.

*France* being now in peace, *K. Philip*, in pursuance to the Example of his Predecessors, had an inclination to undertake an Expedition into the Holy Land; therefore in his return from a Pilgrimage to *Mary* with a very small Retinue, in pursuance of a

had made to *St. Lewis* Bishop of *Tholouse*, he visited the Pope at *Avignon*, and had some discourse with him, particularly about that Design; in conformity which, towards the end of the Year he summoned the Estates of the Kingdom, and laid before them the desire he had for the Holy War. By their advice sent to the Pope for leave to raise the Tenth of all the Clergy in Christendom, and divers other things, so extraordinary, that he could get no favourable answer, and so this Affair ceased; wherefore we proceed to other Matters.

1330.

After the Death of *Mabaut* before-mentioned, the Earldom of *Artois* fell to *Jane* of *Burgundy*, Wife to *Philip the Long*, and, according to the Articles of Marriage, was given to her Daughter *Blanch*, the Wife of the Duke of *Burgundy*. *Robert d' Artois*, who did not yet forbear his Pretensions to that Earldom, renewed his Suit, and produced some Grants under the Great Seal, which, he said, he had found out by a miracle. He thought the King, who was his Brother-in-law, and so much obliged to him, would not search narrowly into the matter; but *Philip*, concerned for the Interest of his Daughter, who was nearer to him than his Sister, caused those Letters Patent to be examined so nicely, that they found them to be false, and a Gentlewoman of *Artois*, that had counterfeited them, was burnt alive for it. *Robert* enraged herewith.

1331.

He had gained to his Party the Earl of *Haynau* Emperor *Lewis's* Brother-in-law, several *G* Princes, with the Cities of *Flanders*; and to his greater Power in the *Low-Countries*, and on Princes along the *Rhine*, he at a dear rate put the Quality of Vicar of the Empire. King *Philip* the other hand was secure of the Earl of *Flanders*, the Duke of *Lorain*, the Earl of *Bar*, the King of *Castile*, *Scotland* and *Bohemia*, which last was his Brother-in-law, and tight to his Interest from many Obligations. Now the Designs of the *English* not yet formed, gave *Philip* no Apprehensions either, and therefore he prosecuted his Design to the Holy Land with the Kings of *Bohemia*, *Nava* *Aragon*, and a great many Persons of Quality, which the Clergy, who were oppress'd with extraordinary Exactions, did not very much rejoice: At the King might have no seeming Interruption intended Expedition, he endeavoured to settle amongst his Neighbours; he brought the Duke of *Burgundy* to an Agreement with the Earl of *Flanders* and the Earl of *Savoy* with the Dauphin of *Vienne*.

Philip designs to go to the Holy Land.

1333.

A false Doctrine of the Pope.

The same year Pope *John XVII.* having preached at *Avignon*, that the Vision or Joys of the departed Souls departed, and the Torments of the damned were not perfect till the last day of Judgment, endeavouring to make this Opinion pass current the Doctrine of the Church; the Faculty of *Paris* stoutly opposed it: He attempted to get them to own it by two several Nuntios, where one was the General of the *Cordeliers*, and the other a famous *Jacobin* Doctor. But *Philip* not trusting the Pope to be infallible, ordered the Question to be discussed by thirty Doctors of Divinity, who confounding the *Cordelier*, a Decree was then made and sealed with all their Seals, and sent to the Pope, exhorting him to believe those who were better vers'd in Divinity than the Canonists of the Court of Rome. That *John* now perceiving that his Opinion was not entertain'd, said pitifully, to save his Error, he proposed it only by way of Disputation or Argument.

And now *Edward III.* King of *England*, having obtained to a full Majority, prompted by his own

pretensions of Right, and the Favours Formerly conferred upon him by his Victory at *Artois* and recovered *France* by his Sword; in order to he thought it convenient to begin with Command and accused *Philip* before the Pope, for having that Crown from him during his Minority; the Pope exhorted him not to disturb a Prince taken upon him the Croisade, yet the young patient of any farther delay, sent the Bishop to defy King *Philip*, and all his Allies in and did the same, except the Duke of *Brabant*, he would do his part at a time convenient. Sir *Walter de Manny* first begun, by the War on the side of *Flanders*, surprizing the *Mortagne*, and after that of *Thin l' Evesque*, kept for bridling *Cambray*, that appeared to the French. On the other hand, the King of *War begun.* his Lieutenants begun the War in *Saintonge*, the Castle of *Palencour*, for which the Go- lost his Head at *Paris*; and thus King *Philip* edition to the Holy Land being interrupted, and his Forces from *Marseilles*; kept the *Genu-* were the best Seamen in those days, in his th whom and the Assistance of the *Castilians*, Fleet to the Coast of *England*, which laun- Suada, at the Town of *Soulampton*, plun-

Edward  
defies K.  
Philip.  
1336.

strange, this *Arreville* should almost attain the Government of *Flanders*; infomuch that the *Es* self was necessitated to quit the Country, seeing no more than a private Brewer or Beer-Man that Place.

1338. During all this, King *Edward*, who after declaration of War was returned to his own *Kingdom* when he had disposed of matters there, *came* *Sluice* with an Army and Fleet of 400 *Sail* whence he went by Land to *Cologne*, to confer with the Emperor, who confirmed to him the Title of *Roman Emperor*, and promised to attack *France* with Forces of *Germany*, provided he might have *sums* of Money as he demanded. *Edward* *remained* from *Cologne*, lay for him for some time at *Cambray*; then passing the *Scheld* in order to go to *Philip* *Battel*, the Armies incamped near the *Iron-Fosse*: The *French* seemed to be more or in number, but *Philip* would not fight, *Neapolitan* Astrologer had informed him, that ever he ventured to engage the *English*, he should lose the Day, and greatly endanger his *Kingdom*. The remainder of this Year being spent in *Incursions* upon one another; the *Flemings* *seemingly* held the succeeding one at *Brussels*, themselves very forward to acknowledge *Edward* King of *France*, provided he took the Title upon him, and would take care to recover *Normandy* and *Orchies* for them, which stuck much in their *Stomachs*; and wherem, as in other Enterprizes might expect all the *Assistances* they could give. Be this as it will, I find *Edward* had the year by a Declaration forbid any to call *Philip* Name of King of *France*, but only Earl of *Flanders*.

R. Edward takes the Title of France upon him.

1339.

1340.

Edward overcomes the French Fleet.

*Edward* after this passing over into *England*, the *French* found a way to disengage *Edward* from his Interest, who revoked the Title of the Empire, but all they could do was to bring the *Flemings* over, altho they were in *England* by the Pope. In the mean time *John* Duke of *Normandy*, King *Philip's* eldest Son, made a *revolt* in *Haynault*; but *Edward* landing a *fleet* at *Sluice*, overthrew the *French* Fleet that *was*

at Coast with a design to prevent his attempt; upon King *Philip* retired, and sent his Army to their respective Garisons, while *Edward*, elated with the Proficiency of his Arms, sent to challenge him to a single combat, or else to fight with 100 Men on a side, both Armies in a pitched Battel, which *Philip* eluded by answering, that a Lord accepted of no Challenge from his Vassal. Some days after, *Edward* laid Siege to *Tournay*, which made a brave defence, was reduced to great distress, when *Philip* with his Forces made divers attempts to relieve it, tho' in vain; however *Edward* on a sudden agreeing to a Truce, whether by the Mediation of the Widow of *Haynault*, or the desertion of the Duke of *Bra-* *'tis not certain, this saved it: In the mean time Flemings were cut to pieces before St. Omer, and Count de Artois, who commanded them, had much ado to escape there, and afterwards the Fury of the people, tho' at last he got away much wounded, and returned into England.*

*A Truce agreed on.*

Now *John II.* Duke of *Bretagne* dying, upon his refusal from attending King *Philip* in *Flanders*; *John* of *Montfort* by his Liberality secured to himself the best Soldiers, as also the Cities of *Brest*, *Nantes*, *Rennes*, *Hennebond* and *Auray*; then foreseeing his competitor *Charles le Bloss* would have recourse to his Uncle for Relief, he goes over into *England*.

1341.

virtue of a Procuration he had left with one of the Peers at length received *Charles* to do it who with his Friends were immediately getting selves in a posture to put the Decree in Execution the Duke of *Normandy* forced *Chantocéaux* to rendry, and besieged *Montfort* in *Nantes*, w took him Prisoner, and he was confined to the Tower of the *Louvre* in *Paris*; but his Wife *M* the Earl of *Flanders's* Daughter, a wise and glorious Princess, did so bestir herself, that she upheld that sinking Party, but raised it up again by her Heroick Virtue; she retired to *Brest*, fortified Towns, sent her young Son into *England*, a some assistance from King *Edward*, which could not arrive soon enough to preserve *Rennes*, *Hennebond*, whither the Princess was retired *Charles* in the height of his Success, by what 'tis not known, granted her a year's Truce, which she went over into *England*, where she ordered her Affairs so well, that she brought a great Supply back, commanded by *Robert d'Artois* happily by the favour of a great Wind escaped *Gennefe* and *Spiniards* under *Lewis* of *Spain* landed near *Vannes*, which they besieged and took by Assault; but *Robert* having from hence sent the greatest part of his Army to besiege *Rennes*, the enemy attacked him very furiously in *Vannes*, and at last Assault recovered it, *Robert* having much ado to get himself thro a Postern and get to *Hennebond* whence he went over for *England*, and died of Wounds at *London*, detested by all the *French* passionately regretted by King *Edward*, who put him to revenge his Death; and indeed he soon landed in *Bretagne*, where with a vast Resolution laid Siege to *Vannes*, *Rennes* and *Guincamp* protesting he did not intend to violate the Truce with the *French*, but only to defend the Territory a Minor: While on the other hand, the Duke of *Normandy* did not think he infringed it in attacking *Charles de Blois* his Cousin. At length after Warlike Exploits on either side by Sea and Land Armies were so straitned and incommoded they concluded a Truce for two years only

A Truce  
concluded.  
1342.

and the Pope's Legate who brought this about,  
Kings to promise to send to the Pope to *Avig-*  
*here* to determine all their disputes by a firm  
ing Peace,  
rdingly the Duke of *Normandy*, and the *Eng-Cruelty of*  
nipotentiaries met at *Avignon*, and had like to Philip.  
included a Peace; but an unlucky and rash Ac- 1344.  
spoiled all, and overwhelmed *France* with a De-  
Woes: For *Oliver de Glisson*, and ten or  
Lords of the *Bretons* of the *French* Party, ha-  
companied *Charles de Blois* to a Tournament at  
the King upon a suspicion that they held Intelli-  
with the *Engl.sh*, caused them all to be seized,  
onafter beheaded without any Trial, to the A-  
ment of all the World, and Indignation of the  
ty; whose Affections hereupon became so ali-  
from him, that he was but ill served by them,  
he had need of them upon great Occasions.  
ing of *England* resented this to a high degree,  
had like to have done the same to *Henry* of *Le-*  
*Prisoner*, had it not been for the Intreaties of  
rl of *Derby*, who procured him his Life and  
y, upon condition he should go and tell King  
that the Truce was infringed by that Murder,  
hat he was now going to renew the War,  
indeed was quickly done both in *Guyenne* and



seated his Army of ten thousand, took him with 8 or 10 Earls and Viscounts more, after easily took in the Cities *de la Reole*, *Angoulême*, divers others. In the mean time *Montfort* by his Liberty by virtue of the preceding Truce he had besieged *Kemper* in vain, he died at the end of *September*, leaving the management of his Pretensions to his Wife and Son, who was young, but afterwards gained the surname of

1346.

Now there was great reason to put a stop to the Earl of *Derby's* Progress in *Guyenne*; therefore at the beginning of *Jan.* the Duke of *Normandy* and *Tholouse* with an Army of a hundred thousand who notwithstanding their vast number, did in three Months time, than to take two or three try Towns in *Agenois*, and the City of *Angoulême* from whence they fell down upon *Tonneins*, attacked *Aiguillon*, situate upon the Confluence of the *Ole* and the *Garonne*, which proved the most terrible Siege in all this Age. They made three assaults every day for a Week together, then came their Artillery; but at last the Battel of *Cressy* being won, this made the Duke of *Normandy* draw off.

On the 2d of *June* King *Edward* with a 200 Sail, wherein he had 4000 men at Arms, Archers and as many Foot, as well *Irish* as *Welsh* went to Sea with his Son *Edward*, with a Design to invade *Guyenne*; but being put back twice by contrary Winds, *Gefroy* Brother to the Earl of *Harcourt*, a powerful Lord in *Normandy*, who was fled to England, persuaded him by many Arguments to fall into the rich and plentiful Country of *Normandy*. King *Edward* hereupon landing at *la Hogue*, a Place of late very famous for the defeat of the *French Fleet*, resolved to cross *France* to go and join the *Plantagenets*. His Army in the day time marched in three Columns, which joined always in the Night. *Gefroy* and the Office of Field-Mareschal, the Cities of *Bretonne*, *Carentan*, *St. Lo* and *Harfleur* became a prey to him; to which if we add his encountering the *French* Constable of *France*, and the Count of *Tancarville* whom the King had sent to *Caen*, it increased his Victory and Fame, by taking them Prisoners with the de

so men: Thence he continued his march by the  
spricks of *Lisieux* and *Euveux*, ravaged all a-  
the *Saine* as far as *Paris*, but approached not near  
and went and incamped at *Poissi*, from whence  
Philip a Challenge to fight him under the Walls  
of *Louvre*; but having staid there five days, he pas-  
ed to *Beauvaisis*, with a design to retire into his  
country of *Pontieu*, and in his march made a terrible  
ravage with Fire and Sword. Philip hereupon infla-  
med with Revenge, marches in all hast to fight him,  
before he could pass the *Somme*; but *Edward* being  
advise shewn by a Prisoner the Ford of *Blanques*-  
below *Albeville*, he passed there at low Water  
with a force of 12000 men under *du Fay* a *Norman*  
and put them to the rout, and the same Evening  
he incamped at *Cressy*; while Philip next day  
with no less than 100000 men took up his Head-Quar-  
ters at *Albeville*, and the day following which was the  
15th of *August*, he marched out and gave the *English*  
a Battle: Their hasty march of three long Leagues had  
fatigued the *French*, while the *English* were both fresh  
and desperate: The *Genuese* commanded by *d'Orsini*  
and *Grimaldi* were the best of Philip's Infantry, but  
their Cross-bows being made useless by a Deluge of  
Rain that fell just at the beginning of the Battel, and  
their way being blocked up by a shower of *English* Arrows;

*Battel of  
Cressy.  
1345.*

1347.

Calais be-  
sieged and  
taken by  
the Eng-  
lish.

*Agusillon*, the Earl of *Derby* remained at *Field*, recovered all that part of *Guyenne* beyond the *Dordogne*, and having passed that vaged and burnt *Saintonge* and *Poitou*, took *Angely* and kept it, sacked the great City of *Angers* and quitted it, after he had refreshed his army for twelve days together. But to return hence, the *Flemings* having lost their Earl at the battle of *Cressy*, they sent Deputies to *Philip* to his Son their natural Prince, who made a Peace with the *English* by the consent of *King* *Philip*, wherein it was stipulated, he should agree that the *Flemings* should give him Assistance, but for was not to intermeddle with the Affairs of *Kings*. Now the *Flemings* being at King *Edward*'s devotion, they made great Inroads into *Artois*; the other hand young *John de Montfort* the better in *Bretagne* by the Assistance of the *English* for *Charles le Blois* going to besiege *la Roche Montfort* on the 20th of *June* bravely fought with him, and not only so, but took him and his Sons *John* and *Guy*, with most of the *Lothian* Party, Prisoners.

But now to return to the famous Siege of *Calais*, it was in vain that King *Philip* advanced to *Wissant* and that City with an Army of 15,000 men to relieve it; for *Edward* had so fortified his all sides with good Intrenchments, that he had no way to attack him; so that the Besieged

to the greatest extremity of Famine, were forced to surrender on the last day of *August*, after they had held out a Years Siege saving 8 days. The Heroick Generosity of *Eustace du St. Pierre* a Citizen, shall never be forgotten; for King *Edward* much enraged at their long Resistance, would not agree to the Articles, but that they must give up six of their principal Officers, for him to do what he pleased with them; and the Council being unresolved upon the matter, *Eustace* freely offered to be one, and the number being soon completed by his Example, they went out in their Shirts, with Ropes about their Necks, to deliver the Keys to King *Edward*, who with much difficulty was perswaded by his Queen to save their Lives; however he turned out all the Citizens, even to the Ecclesiastics, and repeopled it with Natural born Eng-

A Truce being concluded hereupon between the Kings, the Lord of *Montmorancy de Charly*, who commanded the French Forces in *Artois* and *Picardy*, thought however it might not be amiss to recover *Amiens* in the Interim; and therefore having held some Intelligence with *Aimery de Pavia* a Lombard Captain of that City, he listned to them only with a Design to surprize them; and having given notice of it to King *Edward*, who was desirous to be concerned in the

the want of Money put the King up  
Officers of the Treasury, and particularly  
*Des Essards* was condemned to pay 10  
Florins, which at last was moderated to  
but then to stop Peoples Mouths, who  
Complaints of the Violences offered them,  
ment of the Treasury was committed to  
as many Abbots, and four Knights, and all  
Usurers called *Lombards* expelled the  
the principal Lottery-Money they lent  
and confiscated to the King's use, worth  
about 400000 Livres, but their Use-Mo  
two Millions was remitted to the Owners.

This Year Queen *Fane I* daughter to *K*

determined in 1343. to make a Donation to Philip of his Dominions of *Dauphine*, and adjacencies, on condition that all their Privileges be entirely preserved, that his Country should be incorporated in the Crown of *France*, and the King's eldest Son should enjoy it, and bear the Arms of *Dauphine*; for which the King gave forty thousand Crowns in Gold, and ten Florins Rent-charge to be levied on that

Not content herewith, *Hubert* confirms the this Year, and then retired into a Convent of monks, where he took on him their Habit; the

1349.

by sacred Orders bound him to the Church, he might retract what he had done, and he was at length honoured with the Title of Bishop of

*Liège*. Next Year *Philip* had likewise either by

1350.

or the Engagement of *James* of *Aragon* King of *Castile*, the Counties of *Roussillon*, and *Cerdagne* were

acquired, and bought of the same Prince the County of *Montpellier* in *Languedoc*, which the House of *France* held by way of under-Fief of the Crown

for the Sum of 120000 Crowns of Gold. The Wars were also now prolonged in *June*, between

the Kings of *England* and *France*, for three Years

Months after *Philip* fell sick at *Nogent le Roy*,



Negotiations than in Battel, har  
 Subjects, suspicious, vindictive, and one  
 himself to be too far transported by t  
 Passion. By his first Wife *Jane* he  
*viz. John* that succeeded him, and  
*Orleans*, who died without Issue ; 1  
 named *Mary*, who was married to *J*  
*burg*, Son to *John III.* Duke of *Br*  
*Blanch*, he had a posthumous Daughter na  
 died at *Beziers* in 1373. as they were co  
 to *Barcelona*, to be married to *John D* or  
 eldest Son to *Peter IV.* King of *Ari* : 7  
 her Mother survived her Husband ;  
 which she spent in perpetual Widowhood.

---

## C H A P. II.

*The Reign of JOHN I.*

1350.

**K**ING *John* with his Wife *Jane* of  
 been crowned at *Rheims*, September 20,  
 his publick Entry into *Paris* on the 17  
 following, sate in the Court of Justice,  
 two eldest Sons, with some other Princes  
 and made a shew of reforming the whole  
 This Prince being indeed of mature Age,  
 approved Valour, and besides having his Fat  
 before his Face, and four Sons that  
 to draw their Swords, it might pr e  
 Regulation of things, and a flourish 3 t  
 he on the contrary being subject to tne  
 with his Father, as being too violent ;  
 to take Revenge, having but little Princi  
 a slight regard to the miseries of his di  
 he fell into greater misfortunes, and such  
 by him to his dying Day. But to be m :  
 the Blood wherewith this Prince ushered  
 was a Prefage, if not the Cause of his  
 and much more likely than the proc  
 that appeared this Year ; for 1

*Prefages  
 of an ill  
 Reign.*

stable of *France*, and a Prisoner of War to the  
*list* ever since the Battel of *Cuen*, having made  
 six Voyages into *France*, to procure his own and  
 his Liberry, the King was perswaded by some  
 persons, whether true or false, that under those Pre-  
 texts he was hatching some Designs in favour of the  
*list*, in pursuance of which the poor Gentleman  
 seized by the Provost of *Paris*, and privately be-  
 headed without any form of Law, in the presence of *The Constable behead-*  
 Duke of *Bourbon*, and seven or eight Lords more, *ed.*  
 to whom it was given out he had confessed his  
 treason; his Office was conferred upon *Charles de la*  
 the King's Favourite, his Earldom of *Eu* on  
 and *Artois Robert's* Son, of whom so often mention  
 been made, and that of *Guisnes* on *Jane* his own  
 Daughter, who was first married to the Duke of  
*Normandy*, and afterwards to the Earl of *Estampes*, of  
 the branch of *Eureux*, from whom sprung the Earls  
 of *Princes of the Blood*.

At the same time *John*, not to seem inferior to the  
 Kings upon their Institution of the Noble Order of  
 the Star, instituted, or, as some will have it, revived  
 the Order of the Star, in a famous Assembly held in  
 place at *St. Oyn* near *Paris*, and ordained that  
 as those Knights did formerly wear the Star  
 on their Helmets, or hung it about their Necks,  
 so should now have it engraven on their Cloaths.



tho they had only two Women at the Head of  
were perpetually in Action, and fought despite  
and the Bretons valued themselves much, that they  
in a pitched Combat between thirty of the  
Men, under the Command of the Lord *De B*  
*noir*, against as many *English* under *Richard*;  
get the Victory, and that afterwards *Du* t  
should singly engage *Brembo* and kill him.

1351. This Year *Charles de Blois*, who had been :  
while Prisoner in *England*, was released upon b  
som, for the securing of whose Payment he left  
his Sons for Hostages, and he forbore to take u  
till the Debt was discharged. In the mean ti  
Lords who had been taken Prisoners in their  
upon *Calais*, having been discharged, they car  
the War with the *Mareschal De Beaugen* at *S*  
and having on a time surpris'd the *Lomba*  
betrayed them, they caused him to be quarter

- I find very little of any thing that is materia  
1352. Year; but in the next, tho *Charles* King of i  
married *Jane* one of the King's Daughters,  
ceased not from pursuing his Pretensions to the  
of *Brie* and *Champagne*, as also *Angoulesme*: T  
stable *Charles d'Espagne*, on whom the King  
ferred that Office, would have dissuaded him  
and give any reasonable satisfaction; but the o  
sisting discontented, retired to his County of  
where understanding the Constable was in h  
of *Aigle*, he as basely as boldly with 100 He  
him there on the 8th of *January*, scaled the

1354. and stabbed him in his Head; after which  
the Insolence to own the Fact, to justify him  
R. Charles of Navarre Letters to King *John* and his Council, and  
the Barba- good Cities of *France*, to raise Forces, to se  
rity. Towns, and solicit all the neighbouring F  
enter into a League against *France*. Notwith  
all this, the King dissembled and flattered  
that he might draw him to *Paris*, but he refused  
unless there was an Equivalent made him  
and *Champagne*, and he could hold the  
of *Euveux* independent of all other ex  
King, and had a full and free Absolution for  
murder'd the Constable, besides a very con

of Money, and the King's second Son for Hostage. Upon these Securities he appeared in the Parliament of Paris on the 3d of *March*, where having craved King's Pardon in a studied Speech, intermixed with Excuses and Complaints, the Constable, only for form sake, had Orders to seize him; but he was presently discharged upon the request of the two Queens Dowager of *Charles the Fair*, and *Philip de Valois*. The Pope's Legate made him a grave Remonstrance, and for all the King declared him absolved of all the crimes charged upon him; tho for all this he continu'd uneasy and discontented, and they had much ado to pacify him. Neither were they without trouble from *Gaston Count of Foix*, who was married to the King of *Navarre's* Sister, and whom they sent Prisoner to the Chastelet at *Paris*, because he refused to hold his hands off *K. John*, they being perhaps those he held of the *English*; but he soon obtained his liberty, upon condition he should go into *Guyenne*, and there command the *French Army* against the Prince of *Wales*. For you must know that the Truce was no sooner at end, but that young Prince, invested in the Dutchy of *Aquitaine* by his Father, made Incursions into the *French Territories* as far as *Beziers* and *Narbonne*, without any opposition from the *French Generals*, the Earl of *Foix*, *Charles de Bourbon* Constable, and *John de Clermont*, more superior in Force to the Prince, but too much

1355.

that Tax-  
Laid.  
1356.

ing of a Fund for this purpose, they were fain to that Tax upon Salt which had been put down besides laid eight Deniers per Pound upon all Merchize, and a certain yearly Tax upon every Man come, whether the same arose from Lands, Be or Offices; nay the same was extended to Salari Servants Wages. Now these excessive Subsidies Seditions in many Places, especially at Arras, the Marechal d'Endreghen going in amongst under a notion of pacifying the Tumult, seized a hundred of the Ring-leaders, of whom twent their Heads cut off.

In the mean time the King of Navarre crea the Disturbance he could in the Kingdom, tho the Dauphin cunningly allured him to the Co Roan, together with the Earl of Harcourt, Brothers John and William, the Lords of Cler ville, Maubue, des Preaux, and some others; at day while the Dauphin was entertaining of th at dinner, K. John came in at a Postern well; seized them, and putting Harcourt, Gr. ville, A and Doublet, into two Carts, he carried them o the open Fields, and there without any Form o caused them to be beheaded. That done, he se King of Navarre under a strong Guard to the G. ult. and d'Andelus, from whence having been ed into divers Prisons, and often menaced with he was conducted to the Castle of Arleux in the try of Cambray.

ing of  
avarre  
prisoned.

Now this violent, and I may justly say, tyr Procedure of K. John was attended with very Consequences; for Philip the King of Navarre's B and Grey Brother to the Earl of Harcourt, wt a good man, Places in Normandy, invited the into revenge their Quarrel; so that the Earl of and the Duke of Lancaster, with 4000 men be War in that Country, whither K. John g person, he drove them back as far as l' Aigle, a ing dispersed their Troops in the Woods, laid Breteuil, a small Place, that yet defended it the space of seven weeks. Indeed the smallest in these unhappy Times fortified themselves so put a stop to the greatest Armies; and they took

and even their Villages with Works or Walls  
of the plundering Soldiers ; and this only served  
the same time to prolong the War, and ruin  
the people, by being Places of retreat to Robbers and  
Highways.

To pass over these things, we now come to the  
famous Battel of *Poitiers* ; for you are to under-  
stand that while K. *John* was drawing all his Forces  
to *Chartres*, he was informed, that *Edward*  
the Prince with 12000 men had ravaged *Quer-  
pergne*, *Limosin* and *Berry*, and was marching to  
the same in *Anjou*, *Tourain*, and *Poitou*. He re-  
solved to cut off his Retreat, and for that end marched  
on along the *Loire* ; upon which the Prince  
on the way to *Tours*, thought it best to retire by  
the river ; but this he could not do so speedily, before the  
Army overtook him within two Leagues of *Poi-  
tiers* where he thought fit to intrench himself among  
the woods and strong thick Hedges, for his better Se-  
curity. Here the Cardinal of *Perigord*, the Pope's  
Legate, went from one Army to another to prevent  
their coming to Action ; and Prince *Edward* now in the ne-  
cessity of his Affairs, offered to make satisfaction for all  
damages he had done in his march from *Bordeaux*,  
to give up all his Prisoners, and not to bear Arms, ei-  
ther himself or any of his Subjects, for seven years a-  
cross France. But the King being already elated

the main Body of the *English*, who came out Trenches, and charged them in that Conflict the four Sons K. *John* had in this Battel, three were a little too soon carried by their Governor of the Fight, together with 800 Lances; and a plausible pretence for other Cowards to follow. There was only *Philip*, the youngest of the four, obstinately resolved to run his Father's fortune fought near his Person. The King indeed acted part of a valiant Prince, and many that were with him did the like; but not being seconded by his daftardly Troops, and beginning now to sink under the weight of the *English* Fury and Prowess, he and his Son *Philip* yielded themselves into the hands of *de Morebeque*, a Gentleman of *Artois*, in the train of the *English*, and whom K. *John* for some other reason had banished out of his Dominions. They will not own they lost above 6000 men in this day, but of them there were eight hundred Gentlemen, particularly the Duke of *Bourbon*, the Duke of *Constable*, the *Mareschal de Nesle*, and above 100 more of good Quality fell this day. On the other hand, *Edward*, a young Prince as Courteous and generous as he was Heroick and Valiant, treated with the greatest Respect, as if he had been his Father, waited on him at Table the same day, and endeavoured to allay the sense of his Misfortune by the most obliging Behaviour and Expressions he could. But to make sure work of it, and fear lest this day this Royal Captive might be snatched out of his hands, and withal observing his Soldiers were full of Plunder, that they seemed at present uncapable of any Service, he directed his March for *Boulogne* carrying K. *John* and his Son, and a prodigious number of Prisoners along with him.

The Kingdom upon this sad disaster being without a Head, all things were in utmost confusion. *Charles* the Dauphin at first took upon himself the authority of Lieutenant, and believing it was the duty of the Estates to provide for the Government of the Kingdom, and the Redemption of the King, he called them together at *Paris*, and proposed the said business unto them; but instead of Assistance, he met

K. John  
taken prisoner.

An Assembly  
of the  
States.

but Complaints and sharp Remonstrances of Male-administrations: They would debate none in his Commissioner's Presence, insisted that the Mayor and others might be turned out, that the Duke of Navarre should be set at liberty, and that he should be influenced by a Council they should choose for him: Upon which Conditions they proposed to maintain 30000 men, yet so as that they should receive their Pay from their own hands. In mean time they erected a Council for the Government of the Kingdom, whereof the Bishop of Bourges was President, and appointed Commissioners of the Treasury: But the Dauphin being not able to bring them to any thing else, he made use of some Arguments to break up the Assembly, and upon differences obliged the Deputies of the several Cities to return home.

Things being thus confused, every one thought it a good time to recover his Right: The Nobility began to make Alliances with the Cities; but the Dauphin found a way to prevent it. The Cities on the other hand grew jealous of the Gentry; so that to recover what they had from being plundered by the Soldiers, they began to fortify themselves, especially at Paris, to which City, besides Repairs, they added new Works; of which enough.

own to some other Affairs, and leave us to consider

he had been in his own Court ; but  
ning of *April* they carried him into  
there was so much Honour and Respect  
if he had only passed thither upon a  
ness to King *Edmund* : They made him  
try into *London*, mounted upon a w  
Ensign of Sovereignty, and the Prince  
his Side, on a small Nag (tho, let the *F*  
say what they will, there was  
Triumph) the *Savoy* was assigned n  
where he was visited by the King, C  
and had all manner of Liberty allowed  
time the Pope's Mediation preva l fo

save the Duke's Oath, which was that he  
 & the Town with nine more of his Compa-  
 nions at his Colours for some Hours should be fix-  
 e Gates; and to conclude this Treaty, they  
 uce between the Parties that was to last till  
 360.

mean time the disbanded Soldiers committed  
 of Robberies, and extremely afflicted the  
 while the Persons who were impowered by  
 to administer the Affairs of the Treasury,  
 covered their Design was not so much to dis-  
 aves, as to have a share in the Profit them-  
 somuch that their Corruption did very much  
 their choice, and consequently the Authority of  
 : The Dauphin, to whom this was an advan-  
 ing also strengthened by the arrival of the  
 Foix and Armagnac with a great many of the  
 at length shook off their Tutelage, and ob-  
 Bishop of Laon to retire to his Sec. But im-  
 upon this, the King of Navarre having  
 t Liberty by some of his own People, who  
 Walls of the Castle wherein he was detain-  
 returns and assumes a greater Power than be-  
 ie Dauphin was very apprehensive of the Ma-  
 f that Prince; however he did, at the Im-  
 of the Council and the Queen Dowager,  
 a safe Conduct to go and reside at the Abby



was next day received into the City, and  
 phin and he had an Interview in an indiffer  
 where the Bishop of *Laon* President of the Cou  
 Provost of Merchants, and even the Univer  
 pressed the Dauphin so home to give that Pri  
 faction, that he was feign to agree to what he  
 however when he would have gone into his ow  
 with a design to take possession of them, Ki  
 Governours therein refused him or his Cou  
 Admission.

1358. Hereupon the King of *Navarre* began a ne  
 and indeed had the *English* given him any con  
 Assistance, he would have overwhelmed the  
 Kingdom: But having dropt an Expression  
 Speech to the People, *that he had more Right*  
*Crown of France than those that contended*  
 they withheld their hands, and enabled him  
 protract the War to a great length, that so ea  
 ty weakning one another, both of them at la  
 be forced to submit to the *English* Yoke that  
 signed for them.

Now the Zeal of the Provost of the Merch  
 the publick Liberty, meeting with too great  
 tions, degenerated into a pernicious Faction ;  
 mark of distinction was a kind of Particoloured  
 consisting of red and blew, which he bestowe  
 the *Parisians* for a new-years Gift, who being  
 and wavering in their Affections, sometimes  
 ded the Dauphin, then turned about to the  
 gistrate, and many times they became indiff  
 either. But now the Estates being held at P  
 third time, the Dauphin thinking to master  
 drew some Forces about the City ; the King  
*varre* had also some Troops that kept the Field.  
 incommoded the City very much, and both  
 threw the Fault upon one another ; whereupon  
 cel a Money-changer belonging to the Treasury  
 sacred *Baillet* Treasurer of *France* ; but being  
 out by force from *St. James's* Church, whither  
 retired for Sanctuary, and ordered to be hanged  
 Bishop of *Paris* resenting the Outrage supposed  
 done to the Church, excommunicated those that ha  
 led out *Marcel*, who getting loose, and three the  
 Trad

men in their particoloured Hoods, he entred Dauphin's Palace, and caused the three Persons to be taken him out of the Church, who were the *Schall de Clermont*, the Seneschal of *Champagne*, the Provost of *Paris*, to be murdered in his presence. Not content herewith, he compelled him to own his fault in an Assembly of the States held at the *Aux* and in Parliament; to suffer the *Navarrois* to enter the City, and to give him Lands and large Summe for the damages he had sustained; notwithstanding the other Cities refused to concur with him in any thing otherwise than for the King's Ser-

vice. When the King of *Navarre* had tarried some time in the City, and thought he had sufficiently secured himself, he was no sooner gone out of the City for the management of some of his Affairs, but that the Dauphin Dauphin made Regent. In no time, caused himself to be declared Regent made Regent. In Parliament; after which all Acts passed under his name without any mention made of the Kings, the little Seal *du Chastelet*, which they made use of in his absence, was laid aside, and they had a Great Seal purpose made for the Regency. The Dauphin would be no longer at the Mercy of the *Parisians*, the General States, but thought it better to hold Particular ones: Those of *Champagne* at *Vertus*,

English  
massacred  
by the Pa-  
risians.

it, unless they would deliver up twelve of the  
tineers, they united again as firmly as ever  
close to the King of *Navarre*. On the  
the Dauphin's Friends, having got some  
mong the *Parisians*, and insinuating that  
*Navarre* had introduced some *English* among  
they barbarously massacred a great many  
Strangers; but *Marcel* to save the rest clap  
Prison, and then let them make their Escape  
withdrew to St. *Dennis*, from whence they  
venged the Death of their Companions, upon  
*Parisians* they could light on: Hereupon  
fully against the Inclination of the King of

le ; but as the Dauphin's Friends were extremely  
 ant, one *John Maillard* and *Pepin des Essards*,  
 were the principal of them, contrived their Bu-  
 so well, that having got their Friends together,  
 in the nick as *Marcel* was to put his Design in ex-  
 on, they slew both him and his Followers before *Marcel*  
 could get the Gates open : This done, they drag-<sup>killed.</sup>  
 his Body thro the Streets, and his Death was at-  
 with the Massacre, Execution and Banishment  
 any of his Friends ; after which the Face of Af-  
 was wholly changed, the Particoloured Hoods  
 burnt, and on the 24th of *August* the Dauphin  
 fled to *Paris*.

At the King, greatly enraged for the Death of his  
 ods, protested he would never be at Peace with  
 Princes of the House of *Valois*, neither did he any  
 own them for Sovereigns ; and therefore having  
 in all his Forcers together, he sent to defy the  
 him, blocked up *Paris* both by Water and Land,  
 called *De Buch* and *Robert Knolles* an *English* Com-  
 er to his Assistance : This *Knolles*, notwithstand-  
 the Truce, made great depredations every where ;  
 now having been forced away from before *Troyes*  
 Count *de Vaudemont*, he went and joined the  
 of *Navarre*, in hopes to plunder *Paris*, about  
 a time they burnt the City of *Montmoency*. The

English  
have a  
great Ar-  
my in  
France.

this Answer, raised a formidable Army, composed  
near 100000 men, and getting together a  
1100 Sail, he landed at *Calais* with his  
who began to march into the Field, altho  
was far spent; but they could do no extra  
Feats, being not able to take either *St. Omer*,  
or *Rheims*, where 'tis supposed *Edward* tho  
have been crowned King of *France*; next  
his Arms prevail against *Chaulons*: *Burgund*  
redeemed it self from being plundered for  
Florins, and some Provisions for the Army  
*Noyers*, but *Brie* and *Gastinois* were ravaged  
ever King *Edward* about the latter end of *1346*

the Circumstances, and therefore the 'Pope's Legats, and the Dauphin's Commissioners continually besought the King's Camp, to solicit a Peace, tho from time to time without any manifest Effect; but one being incamped in the Country of *Chartres*, there arose such a Storm of Hail accompanied with Thunder and Lightning, that it hurt a great many, and slew above a thousand Horses. *Edward*, as the Historians say, looking upon this as a Warning from Heaven, and turning himself towards *St. Mary Chartres*, that might be seen at five or six Leagues distance, he made a Promise to conclude a Peace, to which the Duke of *Lincaſter* and divers other Lords heartily pressed him, because of the ill State of his Army: Accordingly the Commissioners meeting on the first of *May* at *Bretigny* near *Chartres*, and treating in the Name of the two Kings eldest Sons, they concluded the Peace in eight days time; whereby the King of *England*, besides what he had already in possession, had all *Poitou*, *Saintonge*, *Rochelle*, with the County of *Aulims*, *Angoumois*, *Perigord*, *Limousin*, *Navy*, *Agenois*, and *la Bigorn*, given him in full Sovereignty; besides *Calais*, the Countries of *Oye*, *Guise*, and *Pontieu*, and three Millions in Gold for King's Ransom, payable at three several Terms; in the first of which, he was to be brought to *Calais*,

*Peace be-  
tween  
France &  
England.*

God at *St. Dennis*, where he received the King of *Navarre* into favour; and on the 13th of *December* made his publick Entry into *Paris*, whereat the Citizens expressed their Joy by a Present of Plate, of thousand Marks value. But for all this the extreme necessity he was in for Money to pay his Ransom made him stoop to a weakness, supposed to be dishonourable to his House, than even the Treaty of *Britigny* it self, which was the selling his Daughter *John* Viscount of *Milan* for 600000 Gold Crowns in Marriage with his Son *Galeas*. And here by way we are to take notice, that tho the French Crown descended in Sovereignty to the Eldest only, yet younger Children had Lands assigned them, which were entirely theirs, and descended to the Daughters as well as to the Sons; wherefore the King never kept his Kingdom more entire, and prevent future membring, inseparably united to the Crown. 1361. Dutchie of *Normandy* and *Burgundy*, with the counts of *Tbolouse* and *Champagne*.

Re-Unions  
made.

Now *Philip* the young Duke of *Burgundy* died about this time without Issue, that Branch being extinguished; *Artois*, the French Count, *Baudouin* of *Auvergne*, went to some of his Kindred by the Female side: But the King of *Navarre* laying claim to the Dutchy of *Burgundy*, as being the Son of *Jane* Daughter of Queen *Margaret*, the Wife of King *Lewis* the first, and eldest Daughter of Duke *Robert*, the first of *Endes* IV. Duke of *Burgundy*; King *John* took it, under colour of his being akin one Degree nearer, as being the Son of the second Daughter of *Robert*, whereas the King of *Navarre* was but Count's son to the eldest.

But to leave it in dispute who was in the right, come now to remark, that the Soldiers of both Parties upon the Peace did not evacuate the Places with much Trouble, but continued to commit a great many Depredations and Robberies, as during the War the *Gascons* and *Bretons* overrun *Anjou*, *Poitou*, *Tourain*; and those Troops called *Tard Venu*, Late Comers, having done the same by *Champagne*, *Burgundy*, *Misconnis* and *Lyonnois*, they fought and defeated the Count *De la Marche* near *Lyon*.

Evil seldom comes alone, for those that raised the  
 Taxes and Gabels tormented the poor People no less *The Mis-*  
 these Robbers; and the Burden and Oppression *eries of*  
 so heavy, that a vast many Families left the King- *France.*  
 to seek for more quiet and easy Habitations; *1362.*  
 however it might fare with these, there was no  
 to be found against the Pestilence, which for  
 8 Years growing worse and worse upon the various  
 of it, seized on all sorts of People both in  
 and Country, so that there fell by it this Year  
 more than nine Cardinals and seventy Prelates in the  
 Court, and above Thirty Thousand in *Paris.*  
 At the same time the *Jews* were recalled into the  
 dom.

In the mean time *John* for the better regulating his  
 Government not only forbid his Subjects from making  
 upon one another for their own particular Quar-  
 but also prohibited all Duels and Challenges; yet  
 notwithstanding all this, he durst not take notice of  
 the War that was renewed between the Earls of  
 and *Armagnac*, for fear it might offend the King  
 and, to whom they were Vassals for the Lands  
 in contest between them. We should have taken  
 notice before that the difference about the Succession  
 of *Bearn* had given birth to this bloody  
 War, that *Gaston* who died in 1289. had by *Mate*  
 wife of *Burgundy* four Daughters. *Constance* the



finding he could not bring the Parties to an Composition, he made a Decree for settling and relating their Pretensions, which *Margaret* & of *Faix* would not obey; that the Death of the youngest of the four, occasioned new that *Philip* King of *Navarre* endeavoured to between them, but nothing could stifle their civilable Animosities, or prevent them, as they from seeking all opportunities to destroy each and so we leave them.

Whilst they were endeavouring, tho with different Success, to have the Garisons & K. *John* would go and visit Pope *Innocent* at and tho he heard by the way of his Death forward, and assisted at the Coronation of his *Urban V.* who at the same time preaching of Croisade, the King agreed to be Generalissimo Expedition, and the Kings of *Cyprus* and took upon them there the Badg of the Cross for purpose; but the Affairs of the Kingdom in suiting with such an Enterprize, the same was from being put in execution, that it was not assented to or countenanced. The King at he took possession of the Dutchy of *Burgundy*; but tarried there, the People made him so positively stand that they could not live without a Prince sided amongst them, that he vacated the Re-uni of the Dutchy to the Crown, and conferred *Philip* his youngest Son, to hold it for him his Heirs lawfully begotten. Neither was quite spun out, before the King taking shipping *legn*, sailed over for *England*. The occasion Voyage not proceeding from his Love to with whom he had been familiar, when there but upon notice that the Duke of *Anjou* his second and one of his Hostages, had made his Escape generous Prince would repair that Defect, as he had no hand in it; he intended also to King *Edward* if possible, to undertake an Expedition to the Holy Land.

*Charles* the Dauphin, to whom his Father the Regency on this occasion, presently found attacked by his Cousin the King of *Navarre*

1363.

K. John  
goes for  
England.

tensions he had to the Dutchy of *Burgundy*; before having rashly sent him a Defiance before an Army ready to back it, he lost the Cities *tes* and *Moulon*, which were taken by *Gues-*  
*cl* Valour was already raised much above the Standard. In the mean time King *John* after conferences with King *Edward*, wherein he hoped accomplished all his Affairs, was about the  
of *March* surprised with a Distemper that end to his Days, on the 8th of *April* in the  
after he had lived 52. Years, and of them 13 and 8 Months; his Son the Duke of *Berry*,  
as *Philip* of *Orleans*, and *Lewis* II. of *Bourbon*,  
the Earl of *Eu*, all Princes of the Blood, heard  
Groans, and closed his Eyes. The King of  
made him a most magnificent Funeral, fur-  
the Grandure of the Deceased, and his own  
ty; his Corps was afterwards carried into  
and deposited at *St. Dennis*. He was esteem-  
eye and liberal a Prince as any of his time;  
same Root that produced these Virtues, did  
bring forth Pride and Scorn to follow any  
himself than his own, attended with Prodigality,  
ation, and that Violence which exposed his  
ns to many Devastations, and his own Person  
Mercy of his Enemies: But we must not debar

*K. John's  
Death and  
Character.*



own Names, and the Duke of *Anjou* represent  
Duke of *Guyenne*. Indeed Historians have  
reason to say of this Prince, that never any  
ed so little, and yet did so many Exploits in War  
and from the very beginning he shewed that  
were not invincible. Now the King of *Nor*  
*Montfort* not having been comprehended in the  
of *Bretigny*, their People continued the War  
the *English* and *French* sided with them; the  
and all that sided with them being commanded  
*Capitain de Buchs*, who was beaten at *Cocherel*  
clin from an advantageous Post, and taken.  
The King thinking by kindness to gain him

A cruel War in the Countries on this side, Count of *Montbeliard* fell upon *Burgundy*, of the House of *Navarre*, who laid claim to the Duchy; but *Philip* of *France*, upon whom his Father *John* had bestowed it, made not only a resistance, but expelled the Earl out of *Burgundy* and carried the War into *Montbeliard*, then to *la Charite*; and *Lewis d'Euureux* not being strong enough to raise it, he retreated to *Neufchâtel*, which made the Besieged capitulate on the 15th of *July*; and the Duke by the King's Orders was readily agree to Terms, that so he might be able to assist his Cousin *Charles* of *Blois*, who was still in Contest with *Montfort* for the Duchy of *Burgundy*: At last came on the Battel of *Auray*, The Battel was fought on the 19th of *September*, for *Montfort* with the Assistance of *John de Sault*, under the Command of Sir *John Chandois*, laid Siege to that place, *Charles* supported by his Brother *John* undertook to relieve it; and the Armies met on the 29th of *September*, the Battel was very obstinate and bloody to an extreme but at length *Charles* lost the Day, the Duke and his Life, for it seems the Lords of *Burgundy* agreed amongst themselves, that in order to put an end to that tedious Quarrel, they would certainly kill him that was vanquished. The Duke of *Burgundy* who died lamented even of his

upon condition he should have the Lordship  
pelier in *Languedoc*, which was given him.

*Peasants  
troublefome.*

All this while *France* was more or less  
with the revolted Peasants of the *Faquerie*,  
Year being re-inforced with some Companies  
*ditti*, as I may call them, marched even to  
but they were quickly hunted out from thence  
most of them destroyed by the Emperor &  
and other *German* Princes; however they were  
rated by the *English*, that they might not  
help upon occasion, and there were not Forces  
besides totally to suppress them; but *Gues*  
found out a way to carry them all into *Spain*

raised an Army of King *Charles*, under the Command of the Count *De la Marche*, or rather *Guesclin* to support him; these Troops consisted of great numbers of noble Volunteers, even out of those Counters under the Obedience of the *English*; and the King fearing they might approach near *Avignon*, gave them 200000 Livres with Indulgencies, but the King of *Aragon* gave them Passage, and the Dutchy of *Britany* to *Guesclin*, and before they entered *Castile* recovered all those Places *Peter* had taken from them and delivered them up fairly to him. Now upon the Arrival of *Henry* all the Nobility of *Castile*, not one single Knight, abandoned the Tyrant, and all of them cried out, *Long live King Henry*, and opened their Gates to him; so that in short he was crowned King at *Burgos*, about the end of *March* Year; that done, and his Friends rewarded, he was supposing all secure, discharged most of his Forces for the easement of the Subjects.

1366.

In the mean time the Tyrant having made his escape, he got by Sea to *Bayonne*, to implore the Assistance of the Prince of *Wales*, who beginning to grow weary of the growing Fame of *Guesclin*, promised to follow him, and personally to engage in that Service.

The King of *Aragon* knowing the Passes to be well guarded, the Prince had no other way to

1367.

Charles's  
designs a-  
gainst the  
English

...and particularly the Lord de ...  
the Tenants to make Complaint to them, w  
carried to the Prince, and making some Rem  
thereupon, he rejected them in a very offer  
ner; upon which they had recourse to the  
*France*, who entertained them for five or six  
in the same humour, expecting a proper Ca  
to declare himself. In the mean time he w  
all things in order to this Purpose, and by h  
making sure of the *Gascon* Lords and *German*  
he by the like Bait and Management of  
drew the Soldiery into his Service, and the  
ness of the States to give him a Subsidy did n  
contribute to his Designs. Now when Ch

lord. At the same time Charles would  
 not with some Complaints which he sent him,  
 would have brought things to a Negotiation:  
 returned him Words for Words, not thinking  
 it was so near, or that he durst attempt any  
 while the Duke of Berry and other hostages  
 England; he took himself to be absolute Some-  
 Sayour, by the Treaty of Arras (and so he  
 by he was, whatever pretences the French might  
 the contrary, who alledged he had not dis-  
 his Soldiers, and had besides committed divers  
 acts, and therefore had vacated the Treaty,  
 not remain still a Vassal to the French Crown.  
 his pretence it was that he sent to declare War Charles  
 him; after which having assembled his Parlia-  
 they made a Decree, whereby for Rebellion, <sup>or a</sup>  
 not and Disobedience, they declared all the <sup>land</sup>  
 the King of England held in France forfeited <sup>England</sup>  
 forfeited. Proceedings are made since we have  
 me by a Secretary of the Court: in our own  
 they being both of them Princes of an very  
 of Tempers, since they loved War and Con-  
 and had deep designs for them, so they  
 were to hazard their Persons much as the cas-

if King Edward was not so much as the



French  
prevail.

signy, and then to make those that were sub-  
ject to him, the more willing to suffer their  
losses, and other Inconveniencies of the War.  
The Arch-Bishop of *Tholouse* also by his Persuasion  
trigues, recovered above fifty Cities or Cast-  
les, and amongst others that of *Cahors*.  
The King of *England* would have practised some such  
policy in his part also, and sent a General Pardon to  
all the *French*, with an Oath he would raise no new  
Taxes; but all this could not reclaim their  
and preingaged Minds to return to their Duty.  
The *French* made divers Incursions into *Guyenne* as  
the *English* did into the neighbouring Count-  
ies of which they took *Montpellier* & *Castell*.

*Andais*, who was unfortunately slain in a Ren-  
Chandols  
near the Bridg of *Lansac* in *Poitou*; tho by a slain.

Reinforcement of brave *English*, the *French* not  
freed their Prisoners, but to save their Lives, be-  
isoners to those who were theirs just before.

*Charles* to divert the *English* Arms from his  
ors, undertook to raise an Army, and so land  
Soops in *England*, under the Command of his  
*Philip*; but as they were ready to go on board  
er, News was brought him that *John Duke*  
after was landed at *Calais*, and made Incur-  
to the *French* Territories; upon which he was  
to quit his Design and turn his Arms that way.  
seeing him in the Field, posted himself upon  
of *Tournehim*, between *Ardres* and *Guisnes*,  
incamped over against him, as tho he would  
hem him in, but he had not been long there,  
he grew sick of the undertaking, and disbanded  
ry; which gave *Lincaster* an opportunity to o-  
the Country of *Cuux* as far as *Illofleux*, and  
the same in his return by the Country of *Pon-*  
here he took Prisoner *Hugh de Chastillon* Com-  
of the Cross-bows, who in the King's Name  
ed on that Country.

*English* at the same time by the mighty Power  
ney, excited the Dukes of *Geldres* and *Fuliers*

to the same purpose, and they took the opportunity

English  
ravage  
France.

into *Guyenne*, and given the Command of  
about *Picardy* to Sir *Robert Knolles*, the  
sting of above thirty thousand men, who  
for throughout *France* even as far as the  
they ravaged *Vermandois*, *Champagne* and  
stroyed all round *Paris*, and made the  
Trumpets to eccho in the very Gates of the  
While nothing could move the wise King  
the *French* Historians expresse it, tho  
would hardly be thought so at this day, to  
ny thing, nor let one Soldier go out to opp  
however *Guesclin* was made Constable at  
had a few Soldiers assigned him only to

As the King of Navarre in an Interview with  
Hes, he did thereby a most important piece  
to his Country, in a manner that might  
he might have done the French a great deal  
of, by introducing the English into France  
he had the possession of Calais, and so  
was also into the Country of Flanders, which  
is now: But he was sensible of the danger  
how to keep his French not to let it be  
stage, for this he had made a Treaty the  
ear, he still desired the possession of the  
his Artifice, and which interest might be  
to it, when he had the same time and was  
with the City of Calais, which was  
a possession; upon which Commission he  
the English Interest, when it would be  
to his advantage not to have done so, and  
no measure to continue in the possession  
of Flanders, whose main Interest was Trade  
by regard to their own Trade, the French  
de a League with the English thereby to be  
Commerce, which was more advantageous  
on thence than from the French.

After the Confable of France had recovered  
Perigord and Languedoc from the English, the King  
Wales, tho he could not use but a few Troops  
Troops together at Calais, and had some other



much aſtoniſhed at it, but much more at it  
of the *Captal de Buch*, who marching to the  
City of *Soubiſe*, at the Mouth of the *Cave*  
hemmed in by the *Spaniards*, whoſe Fleet be-  
bout that Coaſt, and the King by no Ranſom  
change could be induced to ſet him at Liberty

In the mean time the *Rochellers* could not  
with the *Engliſh* Humour, and therefore they  
how to withdraw themſelves from under the  
ence, and the *Spaniards* therefore kept nigh  
their Deſign: The Caſtle was the only Obſtacle  
wherefore the Mayor having treated the *Com-  
mander* at Dinner, delivered to him ſome Letters ſign-

lieve their Memoirs, a General Pardon for had demolished it before the Treaty; besides which got a great many Privileges and Immunities, they held to the last Century, but of that more

the Constable of *France* at the same time pursuing conquest of *Poitou* and *Santagne*, laid Siege to, which thus far capitulated, that the Lords and therein should put themselves, their Lands, and that under the King's Obedience; unless *K. Edward* or his Sons came with an Army before *Michaelmas* to fight the Besiegers; and Hostages were given accordingly. *Edward* was no sooner informed of this, than he put to Sea himself with four hundred Sail, but winds proved so contrary that he could not have one single Gale for six Weeks; during which the time elapsed, and the Place delivered up: This was attended in the Surrendry of *Saintes*, *Angoulesme*, *St. John* &c; and generally all the Country even to *and Blay* submitted.

*French successful*

John de Montfort Duke of *Bretagne*, much vexed at the Prosperity of the *French* and the defeat the *English* Interest, for his better Security re-some *English* into *Brest*, *Conquet*, *Kemperlay* and *Land*; but his Lords who were very potent got each his own to send some Troops thither to ex-

from thence marched and ravaged *Artois*,  
*Champagne*, *Fores*, *Beaujolais*, *Auvergne* and  
and descended into *Guyenne* instead of *goin*  
*tagne*, as *Montfort* hoped and expected. But  
*French King* would never adventure to fight  
yet by his Generals he ordered his matters  
they were much incommoded and harassed, so  
one third of them, it was thought, got to *Bo*  
and at the same time the Duke of *Anjou* made  
advantageous Irruption into the upper *Guyenne*  
he took divers Places, then of great Consider  
Importance.

1373.

But which way soever things went with the

usual Solicitations of the Pope set a Negotiation, for which an Assembly was held at *Bruges*, whither they deputed the nearest Princes Blood, and the greatest Noblemen in their Names: The Treaty lasted two Years with an equal Charge; and there was first a Truce agreed Year, to commence in *May*, upon the Condition thereof the Dukes of *Lincafter* and *Bretagne* came into *England*; but *Bretagne* being not committed therein, *Montfort* returned thither with his Army, and was so successful, that partly by force and otherwise he recovered *St. Malo*, *Rennes*, and seven or eight Places more; while the *Navarre's* Brother *John d'Euureux* ravaged every all about *Kemperlay*; near unto which King built a Fort for securing his Retreat, he and some Lords of *Bretagne* besieged there, but by hastening to his Relief they drew off, and were again besieged in *Kemperlay*; where being at the point of being exposed to his Mercy, they could little expect, as being proclaimed King and Rebels by him, they were very fortunately delivered by a second Truce, wherein they were comprehended; and so we leave them, and address ourselves to another matter of a different Nature and proceed any farther.

Truce between  
France  
and Eng-  
land.

1375.

ought the Minority of the Kings of *France*



War with  
Success.

Countries of *Berry, Auvergne, Bourbonnois* & *nois*; one was dispatched into *Guyenne*, and into *Bretagne*, whilst he kept the fifth near him as a Reserve to assist any of the others that stand in need of it; they were commanded Dukes of *Burgundy, Berry* and *Anjou*, Otho the Constable; and all of them proceeded with much Success, that the *English* could preserve none of Importance, but *Cilak, Bourdeaux, Bay* *Cherburgh* in *Normandy*, which last was sold to the King of *Navarre*.

Now this King's eldest Son, named *Charles* himself was, having a great desire to see the King;

opportunity, to form a Conspiracy in  
 and poison the King; having therefore pick- *A Conspi-*  
 most crafty and wicked Men he could to *raze against*  
 young Prince thither, amongst whom were *Charles*  
 Chamberlain, and *Du Tertre* his Secretary,  
 the same time so unadvised as to send the  
 ers of his best Places in *Normandy* thither.  
 Ign being discovered, or perhaps prevented,  
 and the Officers were seized, the first re-  
 Prisoner five Years, and the others were  
 ed till they surrendered the Places wherein  
 nanded; but for *Tertre* and *La Rue* they  
 ided, and soon after an Army was sent into  
 , that took all that belonged to the King of  
 except *Cherburgh*, which after a long Siege  
 by no means take from the *English*.

*Jayenne* the Duke of *Anjou* put them very  
 t, where the taking of *Bergerac*, and the  
 a Battel near the City of *Aymot*, where  
 the *Gascogn* Barons were taken Prisoners,  
 him Master of all the Places above the  
 and *Garonne*. Indeed there were three things  
 ordered the *English*, that made them lose  
 mted Courage, Strength and Understanding;  
 he Minority of King *Richard*, another a  
 gue which very much depopulated the

Now there having been two Popes chosen  
time, first *Urban VI.* and then *Clement VII.* a  
Man; *France* after several Assemblies of  
learned of the Clergy, Prelates and Nobility,  
to the last, so did the Kings of *Castile* and  
the Earl of *Saroy*, and Queen *Jane* of *Naples*  
the other Powers of *Christendom*, viz. the  
*Navarrais*, *Flemings*, *Italians*, the Emperor, and  
of *Hungary*, all from different Interests, on  
other, only *Peter* King of *Aragon* remained  
*Clement* at first was in a condition to stop his Ad  
he took the Castle of *St. Angelo*, and defeated  
*Romans* in *Rome* it self, whereby he became *N*

and Revelations, besides strong Arguments, on that the Dispute could never have been decided by way of Cession, which was to oblige both to abdicate the Papacy.

He took no more into the Broils of this Apostate it was in *France* looked upon to be a kind of Illion in the Earl of *Flanders* to own any more than what King *Charles* did, for which he had an ill Will, and more still towards the Duke of *Bretagne* who encouraged him therein; besides happening that the *Fleming* by the Advice of the Duke had stopt one of *Charles* his Envoys, as he was thro his Country for *Scotland*, to excite them to break the Truce with the *English*, he complained of it to the *Fleming*, and resolved to drive the *Breton* out of his Territories;

The Earl consulting his People thereupon, and being assured of the Assistance of no less than 200000 men, if he was attacked, he refused to comply :

the Duke of *Bretagne* voluntarily leaving Sentence and going for *England*, the Places of his Kingdom did but aggravate his Crime; and so the King Duke of *Bretagne* ordered him to be summoned to appear in Parliament, judged by his Peers, and upon default of that he was the 9<sup>th</sup> of *September* attainted of Felony, his Lands as well in *Bretagne* as elsewhere in his Kingdom were confiscated, for his having defied

exercised more Severity towards some of  
was agreeable to his Nature ; but here his P  
led him, for his usage did but strengthen  
Interest, and bring those over to his Ser  
were at that time the best Commanders in  
Army ; he durst not even upon this occasio  
of the Valour of his Constable, who would  
be supposed, very willingly have drawn his  
the destruction of his Native Country ; an  
he rather chose to send him into *Guyenne*, to  
Places from whence the *English*, and certai  
Vagabonds by their Connivance, ravaged th  
of *Auvergne* . This brave Man. when he

at whatever discouragements the King had met in *Bretagne*, he was so far from giving his Enter-  
 prise over, that he had resolved to pour in all his Ar-  
 my upon them, when he was constrained to quit the  
 Field and all his Designs with it. *Charles* the Bad  
 some years before caused some Poison to be given  
 the Violence whereof a Physician of the Emperor  
*Charles IV.* took off, by an Issue in his Arm; but that  
 being it took away his Life in the Castle of *Beaune*  
 the *Marn*, on the 16th of *Septem.* in the 6th  
 year of the 17th year of his Reign, and the 44th of  
 his life. His Tomb is to be seen at *St. Dennis*, and  
 his Heart was buried in the great Church at *Roan*, be-  
 cause he had been Duke of *Normandy*. He confirm-  
 ed the Law concerning the Majority of his Successors  
 at his Death-bed, left the Government to *Lewis*  
 of *Anjou* his Brother with a Council, and the  
 Guardianship and Education of his Son *Charles* to the  
 Dukes of *Burgundy* and *Bourbon* with an express Com-  
 mand to take off the Imposts, to make some Agree-  
 ment if possible with the Duke of *Bretagne*, and to  
 marry his Son into some Potent Family in *Germany*.  
 He was a Prince in whose Conduct there appeared  
 a Solidity of Judgment, and a wonderful clear-  
 ness of Wisdom and Understanding, a great deal of  
 Moderation and Goodness, much Frugality and Oe-  
 conomy, and yet magnificent and liberal upon occasi-

*K. Charles*  
*his Death*  
*and Cha-*  
*racter.*  
 1380.

two Sons; - Charles who succeeded him, a Duke of Orleans, besides six Daughters, who were very young.

---

## CHAP. IV.

*The Reign of CHARLES VI  
some surnamed the Wellbeloved.*

THE Reign of Charles the Father was,

together hurried *France* into an Abyſs of Miſeries; under the Dominion of Strangers. Some Jealous about the Government ſet the King's Uncles odds from the very beginning: The Duke of *Anjou* Regent, diſpoſed of all Offices and Com-  
mands, which the Dukes of *Burgundy* and *Bourbon* not able to bear, they would have the King crown-  
ed; but he alledging on the contrary it ought not to till the King were fourteen years of Age, an Af-  
ſembly of Nobles was held thereupon, wherein *John* *Morant* Advocate General of the Parliament, ſuſtained the Duke of *Anjou's* Cauſe, and *Orgement* contrary. Now this Conference having only hear-  
ed them the more, both Parties armed; *Paris* was ſurrounded with Soldiers who lived at diſcretion, but the Lords of the Council mediating an Accommodati-  
on both Parties referred it to Arbitrators, who agreed the King ſhould be forthwith crowned, then receive Homages and Oaths of his Subjects, and that all ſick Acts ſhould go in his Name; for which pur-  
poſe the Regent was to emancipate him, that the Duke of *Anjou* ſhould continue Regent, and the other have the Guard of the King's Perſon, with the Revenues of *Normandy*, and three or four Bailiwicks for his maintenance. They further agreed to chuſe a Council of Twelve to reſide at *Paris*. where by a

*Civil*  
*Broils.*



formed of it, but he packed up his Aulx, and to *Avignon* with vast Treasure, amassed by the Pockets of the whole Nation.

But whatever good order they might suspect to the Treasure of the late King; the *Anjou*, leaving the Constable *Glisson* to our King to be crowned at *Rheims*, staid some day and seized the Treasure he had hid in the *Melun*, having forced the Chamberlain with the young King had entrusted the Secret, to show where it lay, which prompted his Courage to take the unfortunate War of *Italy*, where he was with the Flower of the *French* Nobility. Thence he overtook the King upon the Way, and the Coronation was performed the 4th of Nov. where the Lay-Peers were present but the Duke of *Burgundy* who being the first of all, was adjudged to be the Duke of *Anjou* his elder Brother and who not submitting to it, but sitting next to him at the Coronation-Feast, the *Burgundian* bolded himself between and took the upper hand of him. Here a Proclamation being made, that the Estates were remitted, pursuant to the Will of *Charles* they were forc'd in a Month after to settle new taxes especially upon *Paris*, because the Duke of *Burgundy* seized the Royal Treasure, as aforesaid, and would not make use of it for the payment of the debts or support of the King's Family. Upon this a Mob was up, with a Candler at the head of them, forced the Provost of the Merchants to go to the King to demand the Revocation of them: But the King appeased with fair Words and Promises by the Chancellor, another Rabble next day fell upon the Houses and Offices, tore their Accounts and Registers afterwards assaulted the *Jews* Houses, plundered and burnt their Writings, haled their Children to the Church to be baptized, and would have beat out the Brains of their Parents, had they not taken Sanctuary in the *Chastelet* Prison.

Tumults in  
Paris.

But to look a little back, and take things along; the Earl of *Buckingham*, afterwards *Gloucester*, landing in the Month of *July* with his Army at *Calais*, not in *Guyenne*, as some

he crossed *Picardy* and *Champagne*, and bold-  
 near *Troyes*, where the Duke of *Burgundy*  
 is the General Rendezvous of his Army,  
*Gastinois*, *la Beaufe*, *Vendosmois* and *Main*, to  
*Bretagne* to that Duke's Assistance: He passed  
 the same day that *Charles V.* went into ano-  
 world; but the News of his Death allayed the  
 of the *Bretons* to the *French*; so that when  
 he laid Siege to *Nantes*, they basely declined  
 according to Promise, which forced the  
 to march and find out the Duke at *Vennes*,  
 he mightily perplexed with them on the one  
 and the Revolt of his Subjects on the other,  
 importorily insisted upon having matters made up  
 ere, he was at last necessitated to make a Peace,  
 he *English*, and renounce their Alliance, as al-  
 such Cautions as should oblige him to make  
 a Treaty.

mean time the young King was not educated  
 able to the good Instructions of his Father,  
 rding to the Inclinations of his Age and airy  
 ion, in hunting, dancing and the like Diversi-  
 and this Prince hapning one day to be hunting  
 crest of *Senlis*, a large Stag was roused, which  
 he not pursue with his Dogs; but taking him  
 they found a Copper Collar gilt about his  
 A strange  
 Story of a  
 Stag.

Treasurers, who governed him, resolve  
that the great Cities took up Arms to oppose  
were somewhat appeased by *de Villiers* and  
who were much in favour with the People  
would by no means give way to the raising  
new Taxes, for the Citizens took up Arms, &  
at the Gates, and made some Companies kee  
venues leading to the City free : *Aaron* was  
forced for the present to dissemble, and wait  
Heats were grown cold. Now it hapning th  
ing year, that after they had published the fir  
those Imposts at the *Chastelet*, one of the  
Officers demanded a Denier of an Herb-w

Same Night, and fled to *Burgundy* his Native Country; he had been condemned some Months before at Prosecution of the Clergy to end his days between Walls, for Crimes of Impiety and Heresy, and was regarded to be a bitter Enemy to the Scholars and Arts of the University.

The Sedition at *Roan* which hapned the same time called the *Harelle* or *Herd*, wherein the Mob took a Merchant, and by force gave him the Title of King; then leading him triumphantly about the City, compelled him to declare that all Imposts were abolished: The King was advised to punish the Mutineers, and at the same time to keep up the Customs; he went therefore with *Roan*, and going thither in Person he caused a Gate to be beaten down, that he might enter by that Breach; then commanding all Arms to be carried into the Castle, he put a great many of the most factious of them to death; afterwards set up the Imposts, besides other Taxes and Duties upon them: But to compass their ends the more easily against the *Parisians*, they pretended to give up to the Intercession of the University, and a Deputation of some honest Citizens, who went to wait on the King at *Bois de Vincennes*, and to consent at last to the Suppression of the Imposts, and pardoning all Riots committed by the Mutineers; only, that

Anjou &  
adopted  
Heir of  
Naples.

of Hungary, to send him *Charles de Durai*  
the Peaceable, to take possession of that King-  
dom, as being the nearest of the Males, he  
Investiture: This Prince lay indeed under ob-  
ligations imaginable to Queen *Jane* or *Joane*,  
he was designed to be her Successor, but ex-  
cessive Ambition for a Crown made him ungrateful  
the Queen hearing of his coming with an  
intent to dethrone her, had recourse to France he  
was proclaimed King, and adopted the Duke of *Anjou* for his  
presumptive Heir in 1380. King *Charles*  
after the Example of *St. Lewis*, would have  
nothing, to establish his Brother upon the Th

Now those Succors which the Duke of *Anjou* was  
 conducting to Queen *Jane's* relief, being useless, and  
 useless by that time established in the Kingdom, the  
 he was hesitating whether he should pass the Moun-  
 tains or no; when Pope *Clement*, who had no other  
 than this to dethrone *Urban*, engaged him by so  
 many Allurements and Advantages, as plainly mani-  
 fested he cared not whether he ruined the Church  
 in her Spirituals and Temporals, provided he  
 could but compass his own ends. The Duke therefore  
 towards the close of the last Year having certain In-  
 telligence of the Queen's being besieged, as aforesaid,  
 ordered his Forces to march towards *Provence*;  
 the Pope invested him in the Kingdom of *Sicily*, and  
 crowned him at *Avignon* on the 30th of *May*: *Jane*  
 indeed had been dead eight days before, but as that  
 was not known for a long time, he gave him only the  
 title of Duke of *Catabria*: Hereupon the *Provesals*  
 were not satisfied with, or consenting to the Duke's  
 coronation, much less would they own him for their  
 sovereign while *Jane* was alive, so that it cost him  
 many Months time to reduce them; but that done, he  
 grievously burdened them with all manner of Taxes  
 and Imposts, as he had done the *French*, and then march-  
 ed into *Italy* with thirty thousand Horse, being accom-  
 panied by *Charles VI.* King of *France* with 15,000 Foot.

*Anjou*  
*crowned*  
*King of*  
*Sicily.*  
 1382.

It's here to be first observed that the Earl of *Flanders* being at ill Terms with his Subjects, and especially the Citizens of *Ghent*, he laid Siege and the Inhabitants of *Bruges* did him all the Se they could against it, who being reduced to necessity, they did on the first of *May*, by the vice and under the Conduct of *Artevelle*, march to the number of five thousand Men, and on the day appeared resolutely before *Bruges*. The blinded with Revenge, instead of starving them might have done, chose rather the same day to them Battel; he had only 800 Lances with him, the number of the Citizens amounted to 40000 yet they made so little of it that the *Ghentois* sently routed them, and entring Pell mell with into the City, took and sacked it, and slew the principal Tradersmen, who were their mortal mies; the Earl himself had much ado to escape *Liste*, while this miraculous Success brought all Cities in *Flanders* over to the *Ghentois* Faction, *Audenard*.

The Earl hereupon had Recourse to the King his Sovereign, by the Interest of the *Duke of Burgundy* his Son-in-Law; and *Artevelle*, now *Paramont*, desired the Assistance of the King of *England*: The *English* moved slowly, and so lost an advantageous opportunity; but those that were of *Charles* his Council complying with the humors that young Prince, which were conformable to the Interest of *France*, resolved to bring down *Artevelle* which seemed to be the Spring-head of all those lar Disturbances. Having therefore taken out St. *Denis* his Standard, named the *Ori Flamme*, with the Ceremonies, he took the Field about the beginning of *September*, and made his general Rendezvous at *Arras* where he had an Army of 60000 Men, among which were 12000 Men at Arms, and almost all the greatest Officers, and Lords of the Kingdom. *Artevelle* who had besieged *Audenard* about two Months, left 15000 Men there to block it up under *Ducloux* and from thence marched with forty thousand Men with a Resolution, tho he had no Horse, to give the *French* Battel; the first Encounter was upon the

the *French* twice gained the Bridg of *Camines*; the second was near *Ipres*, where *Du-Bois* lost 3000 Men, and was himself wounded; but the third provoked a general Battel between *Roseck* and *Courtray*, where *Artevelle* incamped with so much Presumption and Confidence, that he commanded his Men to give quarter to none but the King, whom he was to send over into *England*, while he proceeded to make Conquest of all *France*: However they said upon observing the Strength and excellent Order of the *French* Army, he would have declined to hazard his Person in the Engagement, under pretence of bringing 10000 Men more to join them; but this his not allowing of, the Battel was fought on the 11th of *November*, wherein the *Flemings* kept very close together, but did not fight with Vigour and Bravery, so that the *French* Horse bearing hard upon them, they had not Elbow-room enough to lay about with much Force: In short, there were near 10000 of them slain, either in the Fight or Pursuit, amongst whom was *Artevelle* himself, whose Body hardly be distinguished in such Heaps of dead Men.

*French*  
make a  
great  
Slaughter  
of the  
*Flemings*.

The Courage of the *Ghentois*, much depressed by this Blow, was revived afresh by *Du Bois*, who brought some Forces from *Bruges*, and by the Approach of Winter, which hindered the Conqueror from be-



C. Charles young Prince by their Instigation most severely c  
 his severe ed those Cities, by putting great numbers of  
 oppressions. to Death, by Proscriptions, Revocations of  
 leges, and heavy Taxes. Hereupon the *Paris*  
 proud, but less courageous than the *Ghentois*,  
 out armed to meet him in the Plain of St. Den  
 the number of 30000 Men, with a shew of  
 their Respects to him, tho in reality it was to  
 see their Strength; however they did both too  
 and too little hereby, for they returned ever  
 home upon his Command, upon which he  
 their City as a conquered Place, caused their G  
 be taken off, their Barricadoes broke down, too  
 their Chains and all their Arms, the Provost a  
 chants, and Sheriff's Officers, and afterwards a  
 many of their Lives, who were either drowned,  
 ed or beheaded: Not content herewith, all the C  
 of both Sexes were ordered to appear in the  
 Yard, where the King sitting on his Throne whi  
 raised very high, the Chancellor *D'Orgemont* s  
 unto them their reiterated Crimes in such harsh  
 and terrible Expressions, as seemed to requir  
 all to prepare for Death; upon this they all pro  
 themselves on the Ground, the Ladies with dish  
 Hair, the Men beating their Breasts, and all  
 out for Mercy; the Dukes of *Berry* and *B*  
 fell upon their Knees before the King, who a  
 had been moved by their Intreaties did with h  
 Mouth pronounce their Pardon, and chang  
 Punishment they deserved into Pecuniary Mul  
 Fines, there being not only one half of their  
 taken from them, but the Court taking advan  
 the present Terror, resettled the Imposts, and  
 them with unexpressible Extortion and Rig  
 The other Cities were treated much after d  
 manner, and these vast Sums went almost  
 into the great Mens Pockets, who soon squa  
 them again away by their Prodigality, did  
 fort justify those Commotions which they so  
 chastised.

In the mean time the *English* sensible, tho t  
 of the Fault they had committed, in not more  
 supporting the *Ghentois*, as soon as the Truce

resolved to assist them. Now Pope *Urban* his Warlike Trumpet every where against *mentines*, and preaching up a Croisade in *Eng-* whereof *Henry Spencer* Bishop of *Norwich* himself the chief, he landed with an Army at

but instead of attacking the *French* he fell *landers*, pretending that Country belonged to *France*, who was a *Clementine*; his taking *Flushing*, and winning a Battel near that Place 2000 *Flemings*, brought a Terror upon the whole *Y*, after which being re-inforced by the *Ghentois*, laid Siege to *Ypres*; but King *Charles* re- with a great Power into *Flanders*, put them hard to it, and at last shutting them up in *Bour-* they had the good Fortune, by the Media- of the Duke of *Bretagne*, to obtain honourable, and so returned home, which wrought In- in them to a Peace; so that Commissioners g on both sides, at the Village of *Lelnighen* in *Calais* and *Bologne*, the Duke of *Lancaster* have *Ghent* comprehended, and the Earl of *York* opposing it, the Conference ended only in a from *October* till *St. John's Day* in the follow- ar, and the *Ghentois* were to have the Benefit

The Earl of *Flanders* dying soon after at *St. O-* and being succeeded in all his Dominions by *Philip I.*

*A Truce  
between  
the Eng-  
lish and  
French.  
1384.*

self, that after the Duke of *Anjou's* Departure *Italy*, the Dukes of *Berry* and *Burgundy* engrossed the publick Authority, especially the last of them, who finding he was not able to make head against the Parties to fulfil a Vow he had made, to go to the *Land*; he went with the Count of *Harcour* and others into *Africa*, to signalize themselves against the *Moor*. In the mean time the King of the lesser *Armenia* descended from the Blood of the *Lusignans*, flying from the cruelty of the *Turks*, who had made a *Conquest* of his Kingdom, and kept his Wife and Children in Captivity, came for Relief into *France*, where he was honourably entertained while he lived.

But to return again to the Affairs of *Naples*, we left the Duke of *Anjou* struggling for that Kingdom. *Charles De Duras* and his Generals managed his Affairs so well, that having cut off all the Duke's Vision, and either following or flanking him so, as to hinder his fighting of them, they reduced him to want even of all necessaries, nay of very little, insomuch that this Prince who had carried away the King's Treasure had no more left him than a Coat of painted Cloth, and a Silver Bowl to live in: Indeed he had sent *Peter de Craon* into *France* for Money and Succors, but this faithless Friend had no haste to return, for staying at *Venice* for his pleasure, the unfortunate Prince at length weary of living, sunk under his own Grief, and died the 21<sup>st</sup> of *October*, 1384 tho others will have it to have been on the 21<sup>st</sup> of *September*, the Year following, the unhappy Remains of the Duke's Army perished by Famine and Want, except a few that dispersing themselves into small Parties, retired into *France* begged their Way thither, and received more injuries and opprobrious Words than they got for Bread.

Anjou unsuccessful  
and dies.

1385.

Now the Truce with the *English* being expired, the King who began to take cognizance of his Affairs, held a great Council in order to consider whether the same ought to be continued: It was indeed in the Interest of the Duke of *Burgundy* for the sake

*Flanders*, to have a Peace with the *English*; but to interpoise his Power, and flatter the young King's will, they resolved on a War, and even to carry it to the Enemies Country; to which end they fitted a great Fleet at *Sluce*, and sent to the *Scots* to persuade them to a Rupture also with *England*; but for all this vast Expence the Design came only to this, that Admiral *De Vienne* went with 60 Sail for *Scotland*, from whence in conjunction with the *Scots* he invaded the *Northern English* Borders, tho with no great matter of Advantage or Success; but indeed the Admiral's Head and Heart were filled with another passion than that for War, which proved much more inactive, and that was Love to a Lady related to the King, at which he was so incensed that *De Vienne* found his best way to make his escape with utmost diligence.

In the mean time it plainly appeared by the Methods whereby the King's Uncle governed, they had added to suck the very last Drops of the Peoples Blood; the Clergy that they might secure somewhat for their own Substantance, held an Assembly, wherein they resolved, that their Revenues should be divided into three parts, one to be for the Maintenance of the Church, another for Ecclesiastical Persons, and the third for the King, without any mention made of the Poor, who rose by the Decrees and Precautions of the

1386.

began to hearken to Proposals of an Accommodation and so they returned under the Obedience of the Duke of *Burgundy* their Lord, who quite wearied with this tedious War, which ruined all his Country, he granted them a Pardon for all that was past, and confirmed all Privileges, upon condition they would renounce Leagues, and that the first that should violate Peace should forfeit his Life and Estate: A Truce was likewise renewed between *France* and *England* for some Months. But now after five or six Years of civil and petty Wars, the Council resolved to attack the *English*, not only in *Guienne*, but also even in their own Island; for which end they made the most considerable Preparations of Men, Warlike Engines, Ships, that had ever yet been seen; they bought or hired all the Vessels they could light on, from the Havens of *Sweden* to those of *Flanders*; they fortified a City of Wood which could be taken in and shelter themselves upon their landing. King *Richard* went to *Sluice* to review his Arm, and Navy, consisted of nine hundred Ships; but the Duke of *Berry's* Envy and Jealousy retarded the Progress, he would needs break the Design because he was Projector of it; in order to which he made *John* wait for him till the 14th of *September*, when they began to be boisterous, so that the Forces divided into Quarters; part of this numerous Fleet was scattered by Storms, and the *English* picked up the rest that were wrecked or straggled.

There was no Reason all this while to the Duke of *Bretagne* too much, because of his too great Obligations to the *English*; wherefore they watched every motion of his with great exactness, but he to justify himself laid Siege to *Brest*, they still kept as a Curb upon *Bretagne*, yet when they were in a manner at the last Gasps, the Duke of *Lancaster*, who was going with some Forces to *Spain* to assist them to raise the Siege. *Lancaster* after this his Voyage to *Castile*, which Kingdom he had won in right of his Wife, he quickly conquered *Castile* itself, and struck such a Terror into the rest that *John* made some Overtures of Peace to him.

the Treaty out for a time, in expectation of the  
*such* Succours, who failing him, the Treaty was a-  
 dd to, and the Duke of *Lancaster* sealed it with  
 Marriage of his two Daughters, one to the King  
*Portugal*, and the other to the *Castilian's* eldest

and now at last by a just Vengeance from Heaven,  
 the Wicked King of *Nivarre*, who had blown  
 many Flames, and burnt so many Entrails with  
 violent Poisons, was most cruelly burnt up himself ;  
 having caused his Body to be wrapped in Sheets  
 ed in Spirits of Wine and Sulphur, to corrobo-  
 his natural Heat, decayed with his Debauches, Charles  
 by some Accident or other took Fire, and burnt *the Wicked*  
 to the very Bones, of which he died on the 1st of *his Death.*  
 May this year, being succeeded by his Son *Charles* 1387.  
 Noble.

at to return again to the *French* Designs against  
*English*, tho the last vast Preparations came to no-  
 g, yet the Constable *Cliffon*, and the Admiral *de*  
 he had so filled the King's head with an Expedi-  
 for that Country, that they set all hands now on  
 for the prosecution of it. Indeed the Conju-  
 re was very favourable ; for all that Kingdom was  
 combustion against *K. Richard*, because of his ad-  
 ing mean Persons to the highest Places of Trust,  
 let a matter is, which his Uncles could not endure :

The Affairs  
of Bre-  
tagne.  
1388.

cil; *Cliffon* went thither with his Retinue, Duke after Dinner conducting him to see his *l'Ermine*, which he was building by the Sea caused him and *Beaumanoir* to be seized in the and commanded *Bavalan* the Governor to throw by night into the Sea: Now the faithful discourse of *Bavalan*, gave the Duke his Master time to and the Intercession of the Lord *de Laval* got him his Liberty, upon condition of paying 100000 and the surrendering of three Castles; but he would not forgive as the generous Duke had done so King *Charles* much resenting this Affront of his Prime Ministers, sent for the Duke to give account for what he had done.

The King went on purpose to *Orleans*, Duke having made them wait for him a long time sent to be excused: *Cliffon* pleaded his own defence, accused him of Treason, and threw down his sword which no body would take up. On the other side the Duke by the advice of the Barons, went to *Paris*, where by the favour of the Dukes of *Burgundy*, he was kindly received by them and in some measure made Friends with the Country by restoring him both his Money and Castles.

About this time *William* the Earl of *Juliers* and Duke of *Gueldres* by his Mother, the Dowager Duke *Renault* I. having some contest with the Duke of *Burgundy*, who supported the Dutcheis of *Brabant* whom he was to succeed, in the detention of the Forces of *Gueldres*, which *Renault* had otherwise engaged; the *Burgundian* employed the Forces of *France* against him; whereupon this petty Duke traitorous and magnanimous, but rash herein, was forced to declare War against the King of *France*. The King falling on a sudden into the Country of *Flanders*, the Father to divert the Storm disowned the Son for Peace by the Mediation of the Arch-bishop of *logne*, and offered Homage: Hereupon the Duke quitting his Territories, and marching into *Gueldres*, the young Duke persisted a Month longer in his obstinacy; but at last the Duke of *Burgundy* persuaded him to submit, he went to wait upon the King, who owned the Challenge, tho sealed with his own

ted, and referred the difference between him  
the Dutchess of *Brabant* to his decision; but he  
it renounce his Alliance with the *English*; yet  
such noble Presents made him, as proved a Temp-  
to the rest of the *Germans* to become tight to  
rench Interest.

ing *Charles* having now attained to the Age of  
13 Years, he declared upon a Motion made by the  
pos of *Lion* in Council, that he would take the Ad-  
tration of the Government upon himself, and that  
charged his Uncles therefrom; he kept the Duke  
leaves his Brother, and *Laon* the Author of this  
oil, near his Person, as also the Duke of *Bourbon*,  
Berry and *Burgundy* withdrew with discontent, Charles's  
the sudden death of the Cardinal of *Lion*, which first Affs  
ed soon after, was held in the opinion of many of Govern-  
effect of their resentment. Now when the King ment.  
began to take cognizance of his own Affairs, the  
Face of the Government looked with a better  
enance for some little time: He made choice of  
Council, wherein three Citizens, viz. *la Riviere*,  
*Guian*, and *de Montague* had the best share; after  
he took off all the new Imposts, displaced the  
king and cheating Officers put in by the Princes,  
ired the Provostship which he had newly restored,  
Monvoenat the Advocate, a wise, honest and coura-



*Bretagne.* But to leave this Affair, the Ear  
to do him Homage, and make him his Heir  
Duke of *Bourbon* with the Earl of *Derby*,  
*English* and *French* Gentlemen, at the request  
*Genuese*, to sail to *Africa* and besiege *Carthage*  
we must shew you that the King's good Ge  
did not last long; the way to have continu  
batement of Imposts, had been to have retre  
expences of the Court, and the Avarice of  
sters, but both of these rather increas  
shing, their Exactions were renewed: Inde  
nest Hermit the succeeding year went to the  
required him in God's Name not to consel

pass over the particulars of *Louis* the King's great Purchases, wherein were included the of *Blais* and *Orléans*, besides the Dutchy of which the King against all the Remonstrances tizens conferred upon him; we must note, that the principal ground of the mortal ween the Houses of *Orléans* and *Burgundy*, from their Contests for the Government: It have lain dormant for sometime, but now it gain; for the Duke of *Orléans* pretended to ministration, as being the highest Relation, years old, but the Estates met at *Paris*, gave it of the Duke of *Burgundy*.

1391.

from whencesoever it proceeded, or whose ver it was, the Treaty between the Duke of and *Gliffon* was broken: The Duke was much d that *France* should support his own Subjects im, and make a private Gentleman equal to son this the King sent for both of them to but the Duke was so far from complying, that red his antient Alliances with *England*, which : King dispatch the Duke of *Berry*, *Peter de* s, and divers other Lords to him, in order to of the Correspondence he held with Stran- ; coining of Money, and making his Subjects r Oaths to him and against all others. Now

would needs have the Honour of procuring  
Audience from the King, who did them Ju-  
redress their Grievances. Indeed the Privile-  
port and Countenance the Kings of *France* a-  
forded from the time of *Lewis* the Gros to th  
University, the infinite Number of Students  
sorted thither from the remotest Parts of *Eu*  
strict adherence of the whole Body of the  
them, to whom they were a Nursery and S  
and the Authority their Faculty of Divinit  
quired to judg of Doctrines, and matters relati  
unto, had rendred them so considerable, that  
fused and difficult times they were called to

Lord of *Joze*, as he was coming from the King, assisted by twenty Ruffians he had got together for that purpose, he assassinated him in *St. Catharine's*, and after that made his escape out of *Paris*, *Wounds* were always left open, since the time the he had caused them to be taken down upon his from *Flanders*. These Wounds did not prove to the Constable, but were the ruin of *Craon*; the Assassimators were discovered, taken and be- *Craon re-ined.*  
*Craon's* Estate confiscated and bestowed upon the *Orleans*, his House turned into a Church-yard *in Greve*, and his stately Country Seats sold; so that he could save nothing but his Per-  
 son into *Bretagne*, to that Duke who kept him secretly concealed: However the King some years after gave him his Pardon, upon the Intercession of the *Orleans*. In the mean time when the he began to recover of his Wounds, both those of his Friends, and such as were no ways concerned the King to punish the Attempt, upon the Duke was commanded to deliver up the Assas-  
 sin, and he denying him to be in his Country, the King, contrary to the Inclination of, and Argued by the King's Uncles, who urged that this was a private Quarrel, which ought to be legally tried by the ordinary Course and Methods of

Posture of the Lance, the Apparition or Fantasy of his threatnings came afresh into his mind; so his Fancy was disturbed, and he imagining the going to give him up to his Enemies, and being those that were about him to be Traitors, this put him into so violent a Fit of Rage and Fury, that he struck about, and slew all without Consideration. At last he fell into a Swoon: Insomuch that it was thought best to carry him bound in a Chariot to Orleans, where Witchcraft and Poisonings were indeed so frequent those days, that it was believed his Malady proceeded from some such Cause. He recovered his Senses the third day, and by degrees his Strength, but not the full vigour of his Understanding; so that in order his Uncles resumed the Government, and brought him back to *Paris*, seized upon the three *Orléans* favourites, who after three Months Imprisonment, by the continual fears of being led to Execution, obtained the King's Command set at Liberty, and the greater part of their Estates restored to them, but were left red for ever incapable of holding any part in the Government. The Constable was so terrified, as to make his Escape to his own Country of *Normandy*, where by the assistance of the Duke of *Burgundy* and his other Friends, he most bravely defended himself against that Duke, while the Princes conferred peace upon *Philip* of *Artois* Earl of *Flanders*.

An odd  
Accident  
at Court.  
1393.

On the 29th of *January* this year, when the Marriage of one of the Queen's Ladies was celebrated, while the King and some young Lords were present in Masquerade clothed like Bears, the Duke of *Burgundy* holding a Flambeau in his hand in order to light their Faces, accidentally set Fire to the Tapestry, which with some kind of Glew was fastened upon the walls; so that the Hall was presently in a Flame, full of Screeks, Astonishment and crowding about the King. Some cried aloud, Save the King, and the Duke of *Burgundy* covered him with her Gown so well, that it served him from the Flame. The *Parisians* murmured at the Duke of *Orleans* for this thing, as if it had been designedly done, so that he durst not stay in the city several days; and to expiate that Fault the best he could, he founded a Chappel at the *Celestine*.

never it fared with the Duke upon this occasion; King who before the Accident was pretty well recovered, was discomposed in his Health thereby; not long after, thro the Vigour of his Age and Constitution, he recovered so well again, that his Majesties having a meeting at *Lelingham*, between *Arundel* and *Guisnes*, to treat about a Peace with the King of *England*, in whose behalf the Duke of *Burgundy* appeared, they perswaded the Duke to go to *Abbeville* to satisfy himself, in respect to the good of his Health: But the King on the 20th of *June* fell into his Frenzy again, which held him till the 10th following, and all that ever they could do did not recover him, but his Distemper lasted as long as his Life, not continually, but at several times and that worse and worse; tho in his best Interests it hurried him into great Debatches and Disorders; they did not know well who to lay the blame upon. The *Jews* were now the seventh time constrained to leave the Kingdom or their Religion, and become Christians.

Now the Schism still continuing in the Church of *Rome*, and Pope *Boniface IX.* being willing to come to a sort of Accommodation with *Clement*, the University of *Paris* insisted that in order to the facilitating the same it was necessary both Competitors should

*Continu-  
ance of  
Schism in  
the Church  
of Rome.  
1394.*

Kingdom, in which Assembly it concluded, that a Cession was the method ; wherefore the Dukes of Burgundy, with Ambassadors and some Deputies of the University, went to Avignon, to propose the Expedient to fifteen Cardinals there was but one that they therefore urged him to agree to it, it by a thousand Wiles, and so wearied with Evasions and Delays, that they returned as did not as much as take leave of him ; he stopped their Mouths, and pacified them by giving them Power to raise another Treaty.

In the mean time, upon the Remonstrances of the prudent and considerate People, who saw the Consequences of Gaming, ever attended with a multitude of other Evils ; the Council prohibited all sorts of Sports, but the Game of Cards and Cross-Bows. Now the Courtiers who were usually a very idle sort of People, were much offended at this Prohibition, as if it had been an A weight, and much to their Prejudice, never left off their Intrigues till they had it repealed. But to pass over the vanity of the People, we must here remark, that King Richard King of England, and his Uncles the Duke of Lancaster and Gloucester, having fatal Jealousies for one another, the King thinking to fortify himself against them, married by Proxy Isabella King Charles's Sister, but seven Years old, and at the same time the Marriage was prolonged for 24 Years.

K. Charles mad. 1395. King Charles had now been pretty well for some time, but he relapsed again into his former Temper ; he appeared for some days cured, at other times he would cry out that he was pricked with a thousand Bodkins ; he would not know his Name and Quality, and could not content his Wife, but would suffer himself very much to be governed by the Dutches of Orleans ; for so reason the common People were persuaded he had bewitched him ; indeed the Duke lay under the Imputation of seeking to ruin the King with Magicians : The less credulous

ough imagin she charmed the King with somewhat  
it was a more natural Spell, not unlike to those  
herewith the Duke governed the Queen's Mind;  
never it were, her Husband fearing the Resentments  
the giddy Multitude, sent her for a time to *Chasteau-*  
of upon the *Loire*.

King *Charles* in his best Intervals laboured with all  
might to re-unite the Church, as did other Princes, but  
cunningly eluded all their Endeavours. And  
at this time it was that the Seignior of *Genoa*,  
her than submit to the Dictates of *John Galeazzo*  
Count of *Milan*, put themselves under the French  
Obedience, and transferred to him all the  
invested in them: However the King's Commis-  
sion left the Government to the *Doge*, after he had  
the Power and Dignity into their Hands,  
they gave it a little while after to *Boucicaut*. Nei-  
are we to omit in this place that the 27th of  
was appointed for the magnificent Interview  
the Kings of *England* and *France*, upon the Fron-  
of their Territories, between *Ardevs* and *Calais*,  
the Truce was confirmed; the King of *England*  
ried the Daughter of *France*, gave up *Brest* to  
Duke of *Bretagne*, and *Cherbourg* to the King of  
*Norrc*, who three Years afterwards sold it to the  
King.

1356.

at this time having granted Succors to the



self to pay; and the same being made good. Months after, they were all set at liberty: *John of Nevers* arrived in *France* about the end of the following; and 'tis said *Bajazet* was so far from any Oath that he should never make War against the *Turks*, that he exhorted him to take his pleasure and promised he should ever find him in the way to give him any satisfaction; but the Earl of *Arundel* during his Imprisonment amongst the *Turks*, of *Sancerre* a Marechal of *France* was honoured with his Office of Constable.

1397.

King *Charles* was now the fourth time seized with a Fit of his Malady, and that more severe than ever before; he recovered it again, tho he was afterwards troubled with it, at least three or four Years; while *Richard II.* King of *England* so mad as he, cut off his Uncle the Duke of *Gloucester*, the Earl of *Arundel*, and divers great Men as he also banished his Cousin the Duke of *Hereford* Son to *John of Ghent*. Duke of *Lancaster*, into *Exile* and began himself to reign after a very Tyrannical manner, the Consequence whereof, so far at least as to this History, we shall touch upon in its proper place and proceed now to shew that the Emperor *Wenceslaus* King of *Bohemia*, for what reason is not certain, had a fancy to visit the Court of *France*, and King *Charles* went to meet him as far as *Rheims* in *March* and received him with as much Magnificence as he could; but he quickly discovered his Brutality, for the very second day having invited him to supper when the Dukes of *Berry* and *Bourbon* went to fetch him from his own Lodging, they found he was drunk, and taking a Nap to refresh himself; he then treated him the next day, and the Entertainment and Jollity had lasted longer if *Charles* had not been seized with a Fit coming upon him, which brought him to *Paris*; however he left the Duke of *Gloucester* to keep the Emperor company, and conferred with him about the means of putting an end to the Schism in the Church.

Emperor  
Wenceslaus in  
France.

Now the King's Council being weary of his playing fast and loose, as before hinted, they followed according to the Advice of a great Astrologer

the Abbots and Deputies of the University, that the whole Kingdom should be withdrawn from under Obedience, till he should condescend to the Cession asked to him; and that in the mean time the French Church, conformable to her antient Liberty, should be governed by her Ordinaries, according to Canons. *Bennet's* Cardinals approving of this, followed him and retired to the new Town of *Avignon*; he stood it out, and having got some *Arragonians* for his Guard, secured himself in the Castle of *Avignon*, which the King ordered the Mareschal of *France* to besiege; he managed his business so, that the Siege in a few days must have yielded for want of Provisions, when he received Orders from Court, to turn the Siege into a Blockade, and suffer Refreshments to be carried into the Place: It was *Bennet's* Skill and Money that had gained some of the French Men of *France* to his Interest, who contrived for him.

And the *French* History about this time as contains the King's Mind was, who had still his lucid Moments, and therefore 'tis difficult to make any Collection of the Incidencies that have succeeded: I perceive the *French* continually jealous of the *English*, their Affairs were never a whit in better order than their own; for the Earl of *Perigord* who was betrayed by them, was forced in his Castle of *Mon-*

1399.

IN THE YEAR OF WHICH LEONOR OF CASTILE WAS  
from being King, as the Emperor *Wenceslaus*  
graded of his Imperial Dignity in the oth  
these things being digressive, we'll return agai  
our own Limits.

Emperor  
Emanuel  
in France.  
1400.

This Year the Court of *France* received *Em*  
Emperor of *Greece*, who came to give the King  
for the Assistance he had from him against  
mies, and to desire more : He was indeed un  
tained, and that was all he could obtain by  
Annual Pension for his Subsistence ; he tarried  
two Years in *France*, but when News was  
him of the Defeat and taking of *Bajazet* by *T*  
the King forced him to go. After his Departure

one another out of that advantageous Post :  
 the Duke of *Burgundy* resented it very highly,  
*Orleans* would have the Duke of *Bretagne* put  
 off all, who was his Cousin-German and last  
 To which we may add, that the frequent  
 lios between their Wives, exasperated them  
 than their own true Interests ; the Duke of *Bur-*  
 being the elder, Heiress to a vast Estate, and  
 ded from very noble Blood, despising the other,  
 in reality had been much beneath her, had  
 been considered as the Wife of the King's  
 brother : *Orleans* had then the upper hand, and  
 management of the Publick ; and the *Burgundian*  
 unwilling to relinquish his share, both of them  
 air Friends together, and *Paris* was beset with  
 as ; the Duke of *Orleans* had brought in the  
 of *Guelldres* with 500 Men at Arms, and the  
 dian was not inferior to him ; but the Queen  
 the Dukes of *Berry* and *Bourbon* becoming as  
 sors, reconciled them at least in outward Ap-  
 pe.

King was at that time in his Fits, but when  
 recovered *Orleans* obtained of him, that when  
 as ill he should have the Government of the  
 m, which he imprudently began with new  
 is, that rendred him odious to the People ;  
 ch that *Burgundy* returning to Court found

1402.

France re-  
stored to  
Pope Ben-  
net's Obe-  
dience.

1403.

But not to forget Pope Benet all this while we left blockaded in the Castle of *Avignon* a way to make his escape with the Host and some Letters from the *French King*, who had promised never to forsake him; the Count this was, That his Cardinals were immediately ciled to him, the City craved his Pardon King of *Sicily* made him a Visit; whereas of *France* was much divided about the business Subtraction from under his Obedience; the *Berry, Burgundy* and *Bourbon* insisting that they should persevere therein, but the Duke opposed it, and the Clergy of *France* assented to it. Add to this, that the King of *Spain* declared by his Ambassadors he would not stay in short so bestirred themselves with King that he restored the Kingdom to the Pope Benet, to which all the Universities agreed, that of *Paris* at last: And indeed all this was brought about by the Duke of *Orleans* his security for Benet's good Intentions, who settled at *Avignon*, fortified it, got some Soldiers to the City, and quartered more in the Neighbourhood to support himself by his Power.

France  
afflicted.  
1404.

At the same time the Princes as illly agreed in other matters as they did about the State of *Orleans, Berry* and *Burgundy* daily contended for the Government, and agreed in no one thing but laying new Taxes upon the People, whereof each of them had their Shares, tho' the Odium was the first, for this as well as for the Schism in the Church. But this was not all the misery of the Kingdom, for indeed poor *France* was throughout visited with divers Rods of Affliction; sometimes with parching Droughts, at other times with great Inundations; sometimes with violent Storms and Pests, often with Contagious or Epidemical Diseases. Nay there hapned so great a Mortality in the year 1399, that they were faine to forbid all burials: And now there was another so rise, that away an infinite number of People, in the year 1400, *Philip Duke of Burgundy* died of it, April 20th in *Brabant*. This Prince without being

D. of Bur-  
gundy's  
Death and  
Character.

not Estate in Lands of any in his time; but  
 infirmity, and the excessive Expences he was at  
 occasions, had so much impoverished him,  
 Wife renounced the Administration, and de-  
 is Belt, Keys and Purse upon his Coffin. He  
 e Sons, John that succeeded him in the Dutchy  
 nies of *Burgundy, Artois and Flanders*; An-  
 le of *Brabant*, and *Philip* Earl of *Nevers*;  
 ur Daughters, *Margaret* married to *Albert*  
*Bavaria*, Son to the Emperor *Lewis*, from  
 me an only Daughter named *Jacqueline*, of  
 ore hereafter; *Mary* married to *Amé* VIII.  
 Duke of *Savoy*, and afterwards made Pope by  
 of *Felix*; and *Catherine* the Wife of *Leo*-  
 Duke of *Austria*; but *Bonna* died unmarried.  
 he Duke of *Bretagne's* Children had not been  
 bred up in the Court of *France*, but *John*  
 went to take possession of the Dutchy, and  
 himself more a *Frenchman* than his Father. In  
 time *Richard* II. King of *England* having  
 dered by his Successor's Order; they were  
 concerned at it in *France*, but yet cunningly  
 ned to turn the great Affection *Bourdeaux*  
 one had for that Prince, into an hatred a-  
 ing *Henry*; tho they were so strictly tied to  
 ish Interest by their intercourse of Trade,  
 it would not be perverted from their Obedi-

Hostilities  
between  
English &  
French.

and *Guyenne*, which the *Bretons* and *Normans* vowed to retaliate; while at the same time the Constable of *France* cleared all the neighbouring *Bourdelous* of a great many petty Castles; they gathered large Contributions in *Guyenne*; the Earl of *Marche* Son to the Duke of *Bourbon* like in *Limosin*; but this last by his too long delay in that Relief he should have carried *Glyndŷŷur* a *Welsh* man, that made War against the *English*, and a very beneficial Diversion for France.

The publick Treasure being now quite exhausted the Duke of *Orleans*, who was a Gulph that could satiate, he called a Council, and gave out for raising new Subsidies. *John* Duke of *Burgundy* had taken his Father's place, publicly opposed, gained the Love of the *Parisians* by it. His Majority of Votes inducing him to a Compliance with the rest, they laid new Impositions under the name of raising great Forces: The Princes had agreed that no one to touch a Penny of it without their Consent of the rest; but *Orleans* for all his engagement, scrupled not to go one Night without Power thither, and took away the benefit, and after that went to the Pope at *Avignon* to labour in the King's behalf, to labour a re-union of the Church, according to his Promise.

Dauphin  
married,  
&c.  
1405.

In the mean time *Lewis* Dauphin of *France* Duke of *Guyenne*, married *Margaret* Daughter of *John* Duke of *Burgundy*; and *Philip* John's Son was betrothed to *Michelle* the King's Daughter; this while both the Court and City of *Paris* were offended at the too close Union between the Duke of *Orleans* and the Queen, especially since the Duke *Philip* the Hardy Duke of *Burgundy*, whom they dreaded, and also because they took the management of the Government entirely to themselves, oppressed the Kingdom with their violent Exactions; the Queen, they said, sent one part of it into *Italy* and employed the other in all sorts of Prodiges; whilst the King's Children had but a pitiful Education and himself was left to rot in his own Ordour without any care taken to undress him or change his

King neglected.

were indeed not only hated by the People, but the Dukes of *Burgundy* and *Bretagne* retired from the reason of whose absence being understood the King in a lucid Interval, and how general the Complaints were against the Queen and his Brother, thought it necessary to call a General Assembly, and sent the Duke of *Burgundy* to come thither: The Duke thought it not fit to go without a good Guard, for his own Security, as because he knew the Duke of *Orleans* had a Design to seize upon the Children, and prevent the double Alliance he had contracted between his and them. Upon the Duke's Arrival, the Queen and *Orleans* took the Duke of *Burgundy* and withdrew to *Melun*, having left Orders to the Duke of *Bavaria* the Queen's Brother, to carry the Dauphin, and even the Duke of *Burgundy's* son to the Castle of *Ponilly*; while the *Burgundian* arrived at the *Loivre*, mounted his nimblest horse, and being attended by a good Guard of brave men, passed without any stop thro *Paris*, and with such haste that he overtook the Dauphin at *Juvis*, and brought him back to *Paris* in spite of the *Burgundian*. This Rupture was attended with Justifications on the *Burgundian's* part, who gave his reasons for what he did before the King's Council and University, and for his Reproach, and the drawing together

*A Rupture  
between the  
Princes.*



own Head, therefore in stead of protest  
endeavoured by all means to appease him  
and the Duke of Berry, Duke of Anjou,  
Sicily, went to Amiens to confer with him;  
went with a good Guard, his Wicked Act  
no Security but Force, and there he pro-  
turn to Paris and justify himself before the  
vided they kept no Guards at the City Gate.

In the *Interim* the Dutcheſs of Orleans,  
*Blous* when her Husband was assassinated, came  
with her three Sons, Charles, Philip and  
whom the eldest was not above fourteen, to  
Complaints to the King; but finding little Success  
the disconsolate Widow knowing her Husband  
derer was returning, she went back again  
Children to *Blous*, and left the Duke to come  
in Feb. this year, at the head of 800 Germans  
armed from head to foot, only they wore  
Helmets: He was received by the Queen  
with all Demonstrations of Confidence, but  
not prevail with him to own the Murder  
only he gave a Commission for it to John P.  
delier, and Doctor in Divinity, who was to  
rator; and having obtained Audience for him  
great Hall of the *Hotel de St. Paul*, the Duke  
Divine endeavoured before the Princes and  
make it appear, that the Duke of Orleans was  
very way a Tyrant, and was guilty of the  
*Lesse Majestatis* both Divine and Human; that  
once bewitched the King, another time com-  
murder him, and once endeavoured to have  
sed by the Pope; that therefore his Death  
and necessary: But it was not the Monk's  
that did the Work, it was fatal Necessity, a  
of Danger that induced the Council to give him  
in Writing that abolished the Crime, and im-  
ance reconciled the Duke to the Queen; but  
mere shew and nothing of reality, as you'll  
and by.

D. of Bur-  
gundy ac-  
quitted of  
the Mur-  
der of Or-  
leans.

1408.

But we are first to shew, how the King was  
deavouring to put an end to the Collusion of  
Popes, and therefore he resolved to publish a  
for Subtraction the 15th of May: In the

*Benedict* having Intelligence of it, sent his Bulls *vis*, forbidding him to do so upon pain of Excommunication; but those that brought them, who were *Lupi*, and a Groom belonging to the Pope's *Chamber*, having delivered them to the King and the *Count of Berry*, were immediately seized; upon which Council sat three days, and having heard the *Orations* and Remonstrances of the University, the King caused a Penknife to be stuck into the Bulls, and the Rector of the University afterwards cut in

Hereupon the Subtraction was published, and the person that brought the Bulls tried and sentenced to be drawn upon a Sledg twice about the Palace; then mounted upon a Scaffold, where being adorned with Paper Mitres, and clothed in long painted habits after the *Dalmatian* Fashion, upon which his Arms were fastned, they were severely reprimanded by a Divine, and then led back to Prison, as Prelates and Clergymen that took their part were also sent to Goal. Upon this news the two Popes pretended to be going to *Savona*, fled each his own

*Benedict* by a Gally to *Catalonia*, and *Gregory* by a Ship to *Sienna*, where at present we must leave them, and resume therefore the Thread of the *Burgundian's* proceedings; when he was returned again to *Paris*, the Dutcheff of *Orleans* supported by the Queen, came

ter, the *Orleans* Party en t  
instead of falling upon a  
cause now more to consult to  
Ruin: The Queen not be ing ne  
went from thence on the 13th of  
the Duke of *Bretagne* her Son-in-law, a  
with her to *Tours*.

The Duke being informed of all t  
*Parisians*, soon got to *Paris* with 4000  
Foot mounted behind them, where  
with great Joy, and they sent for  
King to desire him to return. *Wia*  
*land* offered to accommodate matters, an  
Negotiation was set on foot, which bei  
ced, the Widow of *Orleans*, a haughty  
Princess, died with Grief for it; so that  
were necessitated to make a Reco liath  
Father's Murderer, and the sa s'con.  
the end of *March* at *Chartres*,  
Queen, and the Princes being on a S  
the Cathedral, but pallisadoed rou  
People from seeing what they did,  
fell upon his Knees before the King, pra  
his Advocate and then by himself to lay  
pleasure, and receive him into his Fa  
the Murder, all that he said was, th  
justify himself: The Princes that were br  
in like manner, and joined their Req  
addressing himself to the Princes or  
fired them to forgive what was past, a  
Revenge in their Hearts, upon which  
embrace and promise to be Friends to one  
for the farther cementing of this  
riage was agreed on between the  
*Burgundian*, and *Philip* Count of *Verms*,  
the three Brothers.

Reconciled  
to the  
King.

1409.

The Peace being thus concluded, i  
to *Paris*, and the *Burgundian* to the  
whence he came back in *July*, and to  
stration upon him; and to give so  
the People, by shewing his dissi  
procured the Council to cite the *Pla*  
most of whom got off for Money

Superintendent his Life: He was the Son of a mean <sup>Montai-</sup>  
 Citizen of *Paris*, whom the King's Favour, without <sup>glue put to</sup>  
 Merit of his own, had raised to the Office of <sup>Death.</sup>  
 and-master of his Household, and his Brothers to be  
 Bishops of *Sens* and *Paris*; besides that his Ambi-  
 tion had prompted him to marry his Son to a Daugh-  
 ter of the Constable *d' Albret*, and his Daughters to  
 the greatest Lords of the Kingdom: Tho he had been  
 serviceable in negotiating the Treaty of *Char-*  
*bourg* yet the Duke of *Burgundy* and King of *Na-*  
*varre* conspired to ruin him, because it was his Ad-  
 vice that the King should be carried to *Tours*; where-  
 upon he was charged with divers hainous Crimes, and  
 took their Opportunity, when the King, who had  
 madness for him, was in one of his Fits, to have  
 seized by the Provost of *Paris*, examined by  
 Commissioners of Parliament, and cruelly tormented  
 on the Rack; but tho all his Sufferings could not draw  
 Confession from him, he was beheaded, just before  
 he voluntarily owned he had imbezeled the  
 King's Treasure. At this examination of the Officers,  
 it was ordered that all the Receivers should make their  
 account before the Earls of *Marche*, *Vendosme*, and  
*Barrai*; and that till they had done so, nothing should  
 be allowed without Receipts and Vouchers: The  
 Officers were also all turned out, and the manage-

Tuition ; but required that they should govern by Advice of the Dukes of *Berry* and *Burgundy*, last usurped all the Authority.

1410.  
Bird-fighting.

We find in Historians, that there were not bloody Battels fought betwixt Birds of all Sorts amongst the smallest, as Sparrows and the like Domestic Fowl were not free herefrom : And supposed to have proceeded from certain maddies spread in the Air, which pricked and drove them to that degree as to fall foul upon one. It was this Year also that the Storks in *Hainaut* observed to league with the Herons and Pies, in Battel to the Ravens, who in their Flocks had and Choughs ; but the former gained the Victory like manner some Crows or Ravens in the *Colleege*, having insulted over a Falcon, and in the Eggs in its Airy, there were seen the next that very place a vast number of Birds of both kinds, who fought most obstinately, till they betook themselves to flight, after a very greater.

But to leave this Airy way of fighting, thought to have been good Advice, in order to ending of all Discord asleep, to employ all the *France* in a War against the *English*, under the pretence of revenging King *Richard's* Death, Nobility went about it with much Resolution, Envy which other Princes had to the Great Duke of *Burgundy* who sat at the Helm, the Design : For about the end of *Aug.* the *Berry* and *Bourbon*, having made a League with the House of *Orleans* and the Duke of the Earls of *Alençon*, *Clermont*, and *Armagnac* were all his Friends, they sent to make their Oath of the King ; and hereupon every one armed to the King's Command to the contrary signified on they went with their Levies, the *Burgundians* to little purpose offered them Peace, did not part make use of the King's Authority to sum *Arrienchan* to appear, and put tenthousand *Paris*, while the Duke of *Berry* and the other took up their head Quarters at the Castle of *Paris* and began the War : The Neighbourhood of

men up by two hundred thousand Infantry Soldiers, that about the end of November when all Parliaments were confined, both Parties were notwithstanding come to an Accommodation, and it was agreed the Duke of Burgundy should go out of France, and the Duke of Berry not go into it, that they should nominate some Lords to take care for them of the Government, and the Dauphin's Person, that the King should choose a Council of twelve Persons at good will, whose Names he should communicate to them; that all the Princes should withdraw with their Troops, and that none of them should return near the King, unless commanded by Letters under the Great Seal, and writ in Council.

The Burgundians sincerely obeyed, and immediately retired; but the Duke of Orleans and his Party began immediately to make new Leagues, while the Queen and Duke of Berry remained neutral, but refused to Mediators. The King talked high, and commanded them to disarm; the Burgundians lay quiet and obedient, but the Princes of Orleans with Sword in hand demanded Justice for the Death of their Father. But after many Letters and fruitless Negotiations, Orleans sent a very sharp Challenge to the Burgundians, and answered in the same Terms: The King had ordered the Queen and Duke of Berry, who were at Mevn, to mediate a Peace, and sent Persons thither that

Nov.

Brake.

1417.

Party, and these wore a white Bead and a Cross with right Angles; and the *Burgundians* who bore St. *Andrew's* Cross. The best of the Citizens of *Paris* inclined to the first, the common People to the second; from whence proceeded many Murders, Plunderings and Proscriptions, according as the Success varied on either side: The *Burgundian's* Party was the strongest, having the King, the Dauphin, Duke of *Guyenne*, and City of *Paris* on that side, so that they displaced the Provost of the Merchants and imprisoned and banished several of the adverse Party. In the mean time the Forces under the Duke of *Orleans* ravaged *Picardy*, and seized upon *Meleherry*, upon which they perswaded the Duke of *Guyenne* to oblige the King to recal the *Burgundians* to his Assistance, who embracing the opportunity, entred with sixty thousand Men into *Picardy*, sieged and took *Ham*, yet could proceed no further for the Contest about the Plunder of that Place generated a mortal Dissension between the *Picards* and *Flemings* whereof the Duke's Army consisted; insomuch that the Duke of *Orleans* approaching near with his Forces, the *Picards* forsook the other, the *Flemings* withdrew, the Duke tho much against his Will along with them. But it fell out luckily for him and his Troops, that the greedy Desire the Enemy had after the Plunder and Spoil of *Paris*, prevented them from pursuing and

*Paris* blockaded up by the Duke of *Orleans*. The Duke of *Orleans* thought themselves so cool of taking *Paris*, that they had already agreed on respective Shares in the Spoil; when the Duke of *Burgundy* returned with a Relief of *English*, broke through the midst of his Enemies, and on 30th of *October* got into the City, where he was received as the Deliverer of the Kingdom. After which the Enemies Party declined, *St. Cloud* was soon

in them with the loss of nine hundred Gentlemen, by Blockade they raised themselves; and having drawn all their Forces together at *St. Dennis*, they created in disorder over the Bridges which they had over the *Seine*, all the misfortunes that attend a routed Party fell upon them; for the victorious *Mundiac* caused them to be excommunicated and proscribed, pursued every way, sold their Effects, ransomed all their Friends and Servants, turned *Albret* the Constable, *Hugueville* the Grand Master of the Cross-Bows, and *De Rieux* the Mareschal, to the way for the Count of *St. Paul*, *Rambures* and *May*, to come into their Places: Besides all this, all the neighbouring Cities about *Paris* entred into the same Interests; *Orleans* alone sided with the *Prin-*  
*ce of Guyenne* and *Languedoc* submitted, and re-  
turned the Government of the Duke of *Berry*.

The *Orleans* Party being now reduced to a despair-  
ing state, and finding themselves ruined, even in those  
places where they had been strongest, they entred  
an Alliance with the *English*, upon Terms very  
honourable to *France*; so that King *Charles* being re-  
covered again to his Health, and finding the Treaty  
went on, vowed their utter destruction as his great-  
Enemies: In pursuance of which he set up his  
standard of *Orléans* against them, went in Person  
against the Duke of *Berry* in *Bourges*, and marched *K. Charles*

1412.



Picards forsook the others  
the Lake tho much again  
But it fell out lock, & I  
the greedy Desire to  
and Spoil of *Fare* pre  
Farristher-firing them; for the  
ed up for up that great City, to  
Celestial. St. Cloud, by the Treas  
fired the Houses of such  
Factor; in retribution  
Entchery, already mentio.  
Castle of *Wicpate*, which  
Berry.

them having surrounded the *Bastile*, *Tarleton*  
 went and pushed their City Banner *a Party*  
 to the Duke's House, who appearing *and*  
 to appease their Fury, *and*  
 said, that they were come thither  
 to remove those from about him who  
 had his Youth with evil Counsel  
 which the Chancellor desiring  
 gave in a List, wherein he  
 was the very first, and they forced  
 him over; an Example not un-  
 usual in our own Age and  
 that was then the Month in a  
 List to proceed, they at the  
 open, and after a strict  
 of twenty Persons, of which  
 of *Bar* the King's Cousin,  
 cellor, and *Le Ruyere* his  
 carried Prisoners to the  
 very next day *Effendi* sur-  
 and himself to the Duke of  
 very close in the *Chasteler*,  
 of a Design to have carried  
*Guyenne* away. The Uni-  
 the factious People: The  
 such bold Attempts, tho  
 that the Duke of *Guyenne*  
 and *Correption*.

tage. The Treaty having been ratified at A they carried the King, whom they found to relapsing to his old Distemper, to *Ardun*, and thence when he was somewhat better to *Paris*.

Now the University and honest Citizens the only Members of the State that were not corrupted, observing that the Great Men, as were in Offices, desired no other than the continuance of those Troubles, that so they might have a better opportunity of fleeting the People; besides unless the same were prevented, they had undertaken to conquer *Guyenne*; they the King, who ever had a good Inclination to reform the Government, that so he might be better enabled to oppose them. Upon this therefore he called a Convention of Notables towards the end of *January*, where the King thoroughly represented and set forth all the disorders in the Administration of the Revenue, the Judicature, Chancery, choice of Officers of the Mint; and such as were found guilty were removed; nor even the Chancellor *Corbie* himself were Commissioners chosen out of the three to reform the State in all these Particulars: neither could the Princes nor others in Power be obliged to be honest, they must have been losers by it, especially those that were the Dauphin or Duke of *Guyenne*. Indeed the Dauphin Prince, who was but sixteen Years of Age, was castical, inconstant and debauch'd; besides, he was brought up in all manner of Licentiousness and as to Gaming, Women, Feasting, and vain dissipation which was still worse, in Maxims of irregular government. The Sycophants put it into his Head to be absolute Master of *France*, *Paris* must be disarmed and the Citizens disarmed, whom he might burden with Taxes as he pleased; it was by such Advice that he seized on the City of *Paris* which the Citizens being alarmed, the Dauphin under hand exasperated the People and company of Butchers; and having got ten or twelvethousand Men together, with *Troyes* a Champion for the Head of them, they ran all about the

A Convention  
of  
Notables  
called.

1413.

Dauphin's  
Character.

part of them having surrounded the *Bastile*, <sup>Tumults</sup> some of them went and pitched their City Banner <sup>in Paris,</sup> at the Duke of *Guyenne's* House, who appearing <sup>and the</sup> at a Window in order to appease their Fury, <sup>effects of</sup> *Troyes* him to understand, that they were come thither in resolution to remove those from about him who had corrupted his Youth with evil Counsel otherwise; upon which the Chancellour desiring to be named, they gave in a List, wherein he put his own Name to be the very first, and they forced him to read it aloud twice over; an Example not unknown to which we have had in our own Age and Country, in a Person that was then the Mouth in a Corner of the Nation. But to proceed, they at the same time beat the Gates open, and after a strict search carried away above twenty Persons, of which the first were the Duke of *Bar* the Kings Cousin, *Mailly* the Duke's Chancellour, and *Le Riviere* his Chamberlain, whom they carried Prisoners to the *Châtelet*; upon which the very next day *Effrards* furnished both the *Bastile* and himself to the Duke of *Bourbon*, who kept him very close in the *Châtelet*, because he had been accused of a Design to have carried King and the Duke of *Guyenne* away. The University refus'd to join with these factious People: The Nobles of the Blood abominated such bold Attempts, tho' they were not so much concerned as the Duke of *Guyenne*.

content with this Insolence, obliged the King was going one day to *Nostrredame* to put on Hood; and two days after went to the *St. Paul*, and by his Spokesman *Parvilly* in the King's Presence the Imprisonment of the *Guyenne's* Servants, and named many more yet to be rooted out; then addressing himself Duke, he required them to be delivered up, all the Intreaties he could make they took great many more, not only private Gentles likewise *Lewis* of *Bavaria* the Queen's Brother several Ladies that belonged to her, to the *Duchess of Guyenne* and the Countess of *Charolais*, who accused as Instruments of most pernicious and dissolute Actions at Court.

Severe  
Executions.

Indeed the Duke of *Burgundy* was not grounds charged with adding Fuel to this fire, in effect he could not govern these hot Spirits: In the mean time all were forced to yield to this Torrent, the King submitted to allow them to bring their Prisoners to a Trial, to go to *Paris* in his white Hood, and publish Orders for the Abuses, touching his Revenue; to displace the Chancellor *Co. brie*, and to deliver up to execution a man belonging to the Duke of *Guyenne*, and *Effards*, whose Heads were chopped off; while *Guillebert* the Duke's Chamberlain, to avoid so great a misery, beat out his own Brains with a drinker or was slain by *Jacquille* a Captain of *Paris*; but however it happened, they dragged them to the Gallows, as one in Despair and guilty of

This violent Government could not last long, the King privately agreed with the confederates, the King's Name was made use of, and the Duke of confirming the Peace of *Chartres* that was fully executed, made them enter into a Compact with them at *Verneuil*: Their Deputies being come to wait upon the King at *Paris*, tho' they did all they could to stop the Negotiations, could not prevent so good a Work from going on, bring matters about, an Interview was proposed between the Dukes of *Berry* and *Burgundy*, the sentence by Deputies concerning the other

the better sort of People, together with the  
and Parliament, inclined to an Accommo-  
Indeed the *Burgundian* had but little Stomach  
promising to himself but a slender Advantage

However the Peace was concluded on the *A Peace*  
*August at Pontoise*, and the King agreed the *made.*  
bould come and wait upon him at *Paris*.

g done, *Guyenne* at the Head of the honest  
of *Paris*, of whom he had got above thirty

Men well provided together, marched thro  
ts; upon which the Heads of the Seditious  
who held the *Bastile*, *Lowvre*, Palace and  
all, quitted those Places and withdrew; then  
freed the Prisoners, changed the Sheriffs,  
the new made Chancellor, and restored the

*Corbie*, who gave them to *De Marle* the  
dent. The Duke of *Burgundy* thinking him-  
not too safe, and having got the King one day  
hunting, he suddenly took leave of him, and  
bidding *Paris* adieu hastned to *Flanders*,  
the Retreat there was an absolute Revolution

etc. And the Duke of *Orleans* got so much  
King's Favour, that he would have him always  
in his train, and wear the same Clothes as himself;  
the Duke of *Burgundy's* Creatures were re-  
and many of the Seditious executed or banish-

the proceedd farther to make the Decla-

The Bur-  
gundian  
retires, and  
the Conse-  
quence of it.

1414.

fore *Paris*, tho the King had forbad him to go upon the Penalty of high Treason; where the King made a thundring Declaration against him, retreated with much confusion, every body after him, *Stop the Traitor, Stop the Murderer* upon the King went to *St. Dennis*, set up *Flamme*, and summoned the *Ban* and *Arrière Ban* against him, he took *Compeigne* upon him, and *Soissons* by Force, the same being miserably defended, and *Bournonville* who had defended it to the last had his Head cut off. The Duke of *Burgundy* was undoubtedly in great Consternation, and still more when the *Flemings* refused to submit but sent Deputies to the King to tender him Obedience: To which we must add, that the Duke of *Bourbon* by the Duke of *Bourbon* increased his Astonishment, he sent the Earl of *Nevers* his Brother, then the Countess of *Hainault* his Sister, to the King, and after that the Duke of *Brabant* his other Brother, who made several Journies to Court, to endeavour to appease his displeasure; but nothing less than the Confiscation of all his Estate. It was for him the King fell ill again; for taking a little rest in that Interval, he got into *Arras*, whither the King brought the King to besiege it; but the Place made an obstinate Defence, and being perhaps increased thereunto by the Advice of some of the Burgundians, and the French Army growing tired and weak with Sicknefs, the Countess of *Hainault* laid hold of an opportunity, and so earnestly solicited the Duke of *Guenee*, who had now all the Authority, that he consulted the other Princes he granted a Peace to the Duke of *Burgundy*: And the Articles were made the 16th of October at *Quesnoy*, which bore hard on the *Burgundian*, for five hundred of his Men were excluded from the Indemnity; several belonging to the King, Queen and Dauphin favoured him, were to be removed; he himself not to come near the Court without the King's Order under the Great Seal, and by the Advice of the Council: And it was added, that for the Honour, his Colours should be pitched within the Walls of *Arras*, the Governor displaced,

Peace between the Burgundian and the French King.

obliged to take an Oath of Fidelity to the

have taken no notice of what the *English* did  
Sea and Land these two years last past, as  
no great Importance; however we must ob-  
at they conquered several Places in *Guyenne*,  
Assistance of the Earl of *Armagnac*, and the  
*Albret* who sided with them, because they had  
ished from Court. There was such Animosity  
the two Nations, as would admit of no Peace;  
Henry V. now King of *England*, sought to  
Alliance with the *French*, for his better Sup-  
ainst the unruly humour of his Subjects, and in  
this year his Ambassadors were sent to make  
res, and require *Catherine* the King's Daughter  
lage for that Prince, agreeing to a Truce for  
r. In the mean time the Treaty concerning  
ce and Match was continued, and three or four  
Embassies passed on either side: The *French*  
the King of *England* 800000 Florins in Gold,  
up to him fifteen Cities in *Guyenne*, and all *Lo-*  
a Portion to the Princess *Catherine*. Henry  
eed seem to hearken to these Proposals; but  
king greater Thoughts in his Mind, he demand-  
ething new every day to hinder the concluding  
His real Design was to prosecute the Right of



Henry V.  
Lands in  
France.

Takes  
Harfleur.

ces were ready, he made no scruple to declare his Intentions, and when he had writ Letters full of Threats and Promises to the King, whom he stiled Cousin Charles of France, he imbarked and sailed for *Harfleur*, at the Mouth of the *Seine*, with thirty thousand Men at Arms, thirty thousand Archers, and all other Necessaries in proportion, and laid Siege to *Harfleur*; the Place made a brave defence, but was at last taken by Assault and sacked, perhaps not without some secret Correspondence, or at least the Advice or Baseness of the French Generals, who took great care to relieve it; however the whole was laid upon the Constable d'Albret.

But tho this Success was considerable to the English, yet having lost a great many of their Men in their Attacks, by Diseases and Want of Provisions, they were forced to keep close together, and reduced to great Straits; insomuch that King Henry, having for three Weeks together kept along the Coasts, he was forced to move in earnest, and his March towards *Calais*, cross the Country of the Earldom of *Flemish*, and the Lands of *Vimeu*, with design to pass the *Seine* at *Blanquetaque*: The French Army, who were as yet but a confused Multitude, and fed in haste, durst not attack them in their own Camp (so strange they were so ill provided) but when King Charles, who was come in Person to *Rouen*, with fourteen thousand men at Arms, and all the Nobles of France, except the Dukes of *Guyenne*, *Berry*, and *Burgundy*, it was resolved they should not give Battel to the English, who being much tired, and otherwise in an ill Condition, and seeing they were four times stronger than themselves, and consequently fearing they should be utterly lost, came to an Engagement, they thought it the most advisable way to send to offer them Reparation of the Damages done by them since their last Invasion of France. But the hot-headed French, refusing a reasonable Offer, and grown nothing wiser from their Losses to the distressed and desperate English, advanced the next day being the 25th of *Octob.* and presented them Battel. The first Charge they committed, was in not strongly guard-

over the *Seine*, whereby they might have run-  
 Enemy; Whereas instead of that, they went  
 to them on the other side of the River, and  
 themselves at *Agincourt* in the County of *St. The Battel*  
 short, much the same Causes, that made them of *Agin-*  
 Battels of *Cressy* and *Poitiers*, made them to court  
 id here; I mean the Necessary and desperate  
 in the *English* were reduced to on the one hand,  
 nothing of the bravery of their Prince, and  
 and Discipline of his Soldiers; and on the  
 and their own violent Precipitation, the Confu-  
 sion they fought, all the Commanders striving  
 the head; besides a Grand Fault in the ill Or-  
 der of their Van, which was drawn up so close, that  
 the first Ranks had room to stir; to which  
 added the Inconveniency of the Soil, that was  
 slippery with the Rain, and withal so deep, that  
 it led to the mid-legs in Mire. The Field of Bat-  
 tle strewn with the slaughtered Bodies of 6000  
 to 1600 of the *English*: And amongst the  
 of the first were the Earl of *Nevers* and the  
 of *Brabant*, Brothers to the Duke of *Burgundy*,  
 the of *Alençon*, the Constable d' *Albret*, the  
 of *Bar*, the Mareschal de *Boucicaut*, the Admi-  
 ral *Pierr*, Archbishop of *Sens*, Brother to *Mon-*  
 tmorency, mentioned to have been beheaded, and

ed away to entertain a Mistress; they prom Satisfaction in this last point, the other he co obtain, but had expresse command not to appro save only with his own Servants; but this be no means adventure to do, since he found all he were imprisoned, his Soldiers hung up where were met with, and the Count of *Arma* greatest Enemy sent for to take the Office of ble upon him; however he staid a while was, to see the Event of things in that critical ture.

Dauphin's  
Death.

Indeed the Evils of the Government chiefly from evil Counsellors, who from pre rels promoted Differences between the Pri plunged the young Duke of *Guyenne* or *Dauphin* you please to call him, in all manner of Deb of which the University and Parliament m Complaints, and moved that Prince so much promised a greater Regularity; but soon a lick of a Looseness, he died on the 25th of without visible Marks of Poison: His second *John* Earl of *Tourain* being next in Succession, ving married the Earl of *Haynault's* Daughter carried him into that Country, from whence *Frenchmen* wished his return to inform himself Affairs of the Government. In the mean time the Peoples Affections, and to shew he was a man, he commanded both sides to lay do Arms; upon which the *Burgundians* took the nity to retire home from *Lagny*, being much that his Enemies should deride and call him *Lagny*, not much in hast.

1416.

In the *Interim*, the Emperor *Sigismund*, be rous to procure the Peace of the Church, mongst Christian Princes, made a Journey into and then into *England*, but without Success, the Constable refused the Truce for four years he had proposed between the two Crowns. Emperor was magnificently treated at *Paris* lowed, if he pleased, to take his Place in *Paris* but they did not relish well that he should occasion assume the Authority of Knighting; however it was about this time that he

of Savoy into a Dutchy, which last now be-  
 come looked upon as a more honorary Title,  
 as before they were esteemed equally eminent.  
 Grace being rejected as aforesaid, France had mis-  
 fortune, the Constable was defeated *The Calami-  
 ties of*  
*France.*  
*Harfleur* by the *English*, and the Siege raised,  
 each Fleet beaten; the *Burgundians* made conti-  
 nuous incursions into its Territories; the Duke of *Berry*,  
 was the only Person most likely to allay these  
 wars, died; the King of *England* landed a se-  
 nate at *Tonques*, and took divers Places in *Nor-*  
 mandy; besides all which, both Parties strove to make  
 alliance with him, but the Duke of *Burgundy*  
 lost Industry and Forwardness, being enraged  
 to be put out of the Government; and the  
 Duke of *Mayenne* his Cousin, to get a Support for the  
 Duke of *John* his Son-in-law, whom the *Orleans* Fac-  
 tion would deprive of his Right, in order to advance  
 the Duke of *Pontieu* his younger Brother before him;  
 on the other hand, the new Governor rendered him-  
 self more odious by new Exactions, without a-  
 nymity, Equality or Justice, laid upon the Cler-  
 gy as well as Laity, for which the *Parisians* heartily  
 desired the Duke of *Burgundy's* Return, and indeed  
 a Conspiracy discovered to have introduced *A Plot dis-*  
*covered.*  
 for which the principal Parties lost their

John the  
Dauphin  
resisted.

the Dauphin at *Compeigne*: But not being able to obtain the return of the *Burgundian*, he threatened to carry the Dauphin home with him; upon which John had thoughts to detain him, till the Dauphin was given up, but he having private notice of the King's design, made his Escape; however these villanous People abused themselves of the poor Dauphin, by another more wicked way, which was to give him Poison, which he died on the 14th of *April*.

Upon this his Brother *Charles*, a sworn Enemy to the House of *Burgundy*, succeeded to the Title of Dauphin and Duke of *Tourain*; as also to a Right of inheriting the Crown, to the great Joy and Satisfaction of his Father-in-law the Duke of *Burgundy*, who was much suspected to have had some hand in the removal of the two eldest Brothers out of the Kingdom, to make way for his Son-in-law; however his Joy was not long lived, for he died in *August*. The King's Person, the Dauphin and the City of *Paris* were all this time in the hands of the Duke of *Armagnac*, the Queen only was some Countenance to his Power; but her Family living with Liberty and Licentiousness, it was easy for them to fill the King's Head with Jealousies against her; insomuch that he commanded one *Bourgeois* taken thence and thrown into the River, as being concerned in those Intrigues, and then he confined the Queen away as it were in the Nature of a Prisoner at *Tours*, for which she could never forgive him, and the Dauphin her own Son, the same having been done by his Consent, tho he was not then above sixteen of Age.

The Queen  
in 1 -  
Grace.

Now the Queen's Confinement, the late Death of the two Dauphins, the plundering of the Country by the unpaid Soldiers, and the Depredations of the *Armagnacs*, who robbed the very Sanctuaries of the Churches, furnished the Duke of *Burgundy* with very specious pretences to publish his Manifesto to send to all the principal Cities for their Assistance to restore the King to his Liberty; and in the first part of those in *Champagne*, *Picardy* and the *Normans* received him with open Arms, because they had down all Subsidies: However all this signified

he could get into *Paris*, wherefore he march-  
 and it, either nearer or farther off, for two  
 together, according to the Intelligence he had  
 his Friends that were in the Place. And whilst  
 besieging *Corbeil*, he hastned with some Troops  
 to *Tours*; and having had a Conference with  
 een at *Marmouster*, whither she was come on  
 se under pretence of taking the Air, he brought  
 th him to *Troyes*, and from thence forward she  
 d the Regency.

ry V. King of *England* in so favourable a Con- English  
 fe was too wise to let it slip, and therefore he *successful*  
 on his Conquests with great Vigour; *Caen*, *Bay-* in *France*,  
*Quince*, *Carenton*, *Lisieux*, *Falaise*, *Argentan*,  
 and in short the greatest part of *Normandy*  
 d to him without scarce a Blow given, only  
 ough defended it self against the *English* for three  
 is; and yet so mad were the Faction at this time,  
 the Constable chose rather the Kingdom should be  
 an his Authority, and the Duke of *Burgundy*  
 too rather to have it dismembred by the *English*,  
 governed by his Enemy.

e *Bennet* dying about this time, and *Otho* Colon-  
 the Name of *Martin* being elected into the Papal  
 he immediately used his endeavours to make  
 in *France*. and therefore dispatched two Car-

1418.

Burgun-  
dians get  
into Paris.

been drawn to side with them upon this ill Man-  
In short, those of his Party being assured  
Duke's Affection, they introduced into the  
*Philip de Villiers, L' Isle Adam* Governor of  
by the Gate of *St. Germain*, upon the 8th  
at Night with 800 Horse, and cried out, *For*  
*Burgundy*; the People did not stir till they  
the Streets of *St. Dennis* and *St. Honore*, who  
got out from all parts and joined them: The  
hearing the Noise, presently took the Dauphin  
his Bed, and wrapping him up in his Night-Gown  
veyed him to the *Bastile*, and thence to *Melun*;  
King remained in the Power of the *Burgundians*  
dispersing themselves all the City over, fell up-  
 Houses of the *Armagnacs*, and searched them  
top to bottom; some plundered the Goods, and  
ried the Money away, but they were most intent  
seizing their Persons; and those were least  
that were coop'd up in private Places till they  
paid their Ransoms: Most of them were  
Prisons, whither a great many fled of their  
Accord, to avoid other Inconveniencies; the  
cellor was seized the very same day, and im-  
in the Palace; and the next the Constable was  
thither also, he had hid himself in a Mason's  
but a Proclamation being made for discovering  
*Armagnacs* upon pain of Death, his Land-  
duced him.

Burgun-  
dians Cru-  
elty to the  
*Armag-*  
*nacs.*

Now the Exiles being come back from diverse  
with Indignation and Revenge in their Hearts  
the cruellest Mutiny that ever was known; they  
gan with the Palace, from whence they took  
Constable and Chancellor, murdered them, and  
posed their Bodies to publick View; from thence  
went to the Prisons, massacred the Bishops  
and *De Contances* in the little Chastellet, and  
the rest throw themselves headlong down from  
of the Towers, most barbarously received them  
upon the Points of their Swords and Javelins  
was no part of the City that was not stain'd  
the Blood they spilt, there having been  
thousand People slain by them, whose Carcasses  
dragg'd into the Fields, with deep Incisions

on their Backs, in the Form of a Band or Scarf, as the Signal that Party had marked themselves for distinction sake: Such as were found with them were accounted worse than Hereticks, and they were enied to bury them, or baptize their Children. Whether it were Policy or no, the Duke of *Burgundy* did not come to *Paris* till a Month after *L'Isle* had made himself Master of it; but then the Duke did he made their Publick Entry on the 14th and that in so triumphant a manner as if they returned from the Conquest of some new Country there being nothing heard in the Streets but only Instrumental Musick: But yet their Precedence did not put a stop to the bloody Hands of the *Armagnacs*, for whoever had Money or an Enemy, and a Benefice, was an *Armagnac*; the vilest and wickedest made themselves the Ring-Leaders of the *Armagnac* Crew; nay the very Hangman was one of them, and he had so much Impudence as to shake the Duke of *Burgundy* by the Hand, who did not know till August 21st, there was another great Commotion led by that infamous Villain as their Captain, they killed above two hundred Persons, and among others some that lived in the Duke's House; so that if they would have carried it home to him, he had not been provided against that Rabble, he



mands of the presumptive Heir to the Crown what side soever they took to, they were so treated as Rebels: However by the great Aid of the Duke of *Bretagne* the Breach was mended a second time, and all the Articles were agreed at *St. Maurdes Fosses*; but those that influenced the Dauphin hindered him from ratifying them, so there was only a Truce agreed on for three Months, in so much that the Duke proving dissatisfied with the unsincerity of either Party, which prevented the Success of his Mediation, retired home and renewed his antient Alliance with the *English*, only for his own Defence. But as things frequently happen in a vain World, when the Duke thought himself safe, he found himself fallen into the greatest danger. *Margaret de Clisson*, the Widow of *John de Montfort* of *Fontevrault*, never left exciting her four Sons to seize upon his Person, that they might enter upon the Duchy of *Bretagne*, which she told them was their Inheritance; and the Dauphin on the other hand dissatisfied that the *Breton* did not take up Arms against the *English*, made an under-hand Treaty with those Brothers, and gave them Letters and Orders to prosecute their Design; to effect which they used the Artifice they could to get into the Duke's Castle, and at last prevailed with him to go and dine with them at their House of *Chantocéaux* in *Anjou*, being attended with his Brother *Richard* and *Retinue*, *Oliver* the eldest of the four caused him to be seized by forty Horse, and carried with his Arms bound to the Castle of *Paluau* in *Normandy* from whence they were removed from one place to another all the Year round; and divers Reports purposely spread, sometimes that they died of Hunger, at other times that they were drowned, or that they were on their Pilgrimage to *Jerusalem*, there to end their Days. But for all this, the *Bretons* were so far from complying with the Brothers, that they raised the Dutchess above 50000 Men to recover her Husband, and they so straitned *Margaret de Clisson* at *Chantocéaux*, that she dispatched a Message to her Son to intreat him if ever he expected to see her again, to release the Duke, which was done according

Duke of  
Bretagne  
taken Pri-  
soner.

1419.

four Brothers afterwards paid dear for it. During these Broils the Brave *Henry King of England* laid Siege to *Rouen*, which was gallantly defended by the Besieged: Indeed the Place was of that Importance, and the constant Fidelity of the Citizens so remarkable, that they tried divers ways to save it; first they endeavoured to treat with King *Henry* at the Marriage of *Catherine of France* with him, the Mediation of the Pope's Legates, who for that purpose carried that beautiful Princess's Picture to him: that Project not taking, and the King making Demands as they thought too high to be complied with, they drew some Forces together, and carried *Charles* as far as *Beauvais*; but thinking they too weak to attempt its Relief, the Besieged left themselves to the Dauphin, who tho' this Jewel of the Crown was so near being lost, took no care of it, as looking upon the Place rather as belonging to the Duke of *Burgundy* than *France*. It were the miseries they underwent, no less than y<sup>e</sup> thousand Persons died of Famine, and were forced to eat their very Bed-Straw, till the Leather they could come at: The King of *France* refusing to admit them any other Terms of Surrender than at Discretion, they undermined five hundred Rods of their Wall, and in their great ex-

But notwithstanding this Conquest there was negotiation carried on between the two Kings, at the same time between the Factions of *Armagnacs* and *Burgundians*: At length there was a Truce agreed for three Months between the Kings, after which there was an Interview near *Melun*, to conclude Peace and Marriage; on the other hand the Duke was for a Truce for three Years, and his Opponent Duke of *Burgundy* for two Months only; his Condition being this, that if within that time he could not perfect Agreement with the Dauphin, they both with united Force fall upon the *English* at the expiration of the Truce; if not, he would make Peace with them, that he might be in a better Condition to quell the Dauphin's Party: The first therefore succeeding, the Interview was fixed, but the French King falling ill at *Paris*, the Queen supplied his Place, and carried thither the Princess *Catherine*, whom the King of *England* sought in Marriage; they met and conversed frequently for almost three Weeks together, the King of *England* coming from *Mantes*, and the Queen from *Pontoise*. Now the Dauphin's Council knowing what they were about, he solicited the Duke of *Burgundy* to come to an Accommodation, and flattered him with a perfect Reconciliation, which the Duke desired; and therefore he began to stand upon Terms with the *English*, and would scarce accept of any thing they demanded, but at last quite altered the Treaty, being intent upon nothing more than to accommodate matters with the Dauphin: To this they had a Conference in the open Field near *le Fort*, within two Leagues of *Melun*, between the two Armies, attended each of them with his Horse, where they made a Treaty, by which they swore to love and assist one another like Brothers, and submit themselves in case of failure to the Judgment of the See of *Rome*; after which they went to meet upon the Bridge of *Montereau* *France* August 18th, each accompanied with ten arms, to terminate all Disputes in a most amicable manner.

Now the Servants of the late Duke of *Burgundy*, more particularly *Du Chastel* and *Louvet* of *Provence*, having contrived these Interviews

Treaty  
with the  
*English*  
broke off.

other Design than to find an opportunity to seize the Death of their late Master upon him; it was the Author of it; tho they could not tempt it at *Povilly*, they put things here into a better Posture, and contrived some Barriers, which tho outward Appearance seemed to be made for no other end than the mutual Safety of both Princes, yet acted as a Snare to trap the unfortunate *Burgundian*, who indeed made the Dauphin wait fifteen days for him there, being withheld from going thither by the opportunity of his Friends and his own Judgment; at length the Power of his evil Destiny hurried him to his Destruction by the horrid Treachery of *Dalila*, the Lady *Gyac* his Mistress; and to make him the better, they delivered up to him the Castle of *Montereau*, but without Provision or Artillery; from whence he went down to the Bridge with his ten Men, whom he placed as a Guard at the Mouth of it; and while he was kneeling before the Dauphin, *Du Chastel* and some others jumping over the barriers dispatched him by several Wounds, and only one of his Men was wounded in his Quarrel. It was generally believed this Fact, which was so horrid, tho never so much deserved by the Duke, was perpetrated without the Dauphin's Privy or Concurrence: However true, the Event of such a base piece of Treachery as it seems how much the French did blame him.

*The Duke of Burgundy murdered.*

*Peace be-  
tween Eng-  
land and  
France.*

sent swore to the Treaty, and so did after-  
noted Cities that were of their Party.  
pal Articles imported: ' That King *Cha*  
' and owned King *Henry* for his Heir to  
' of *France*, but that however he shou  
' the Title of King of *France* upon him  
' *Charles* lived, only that he should have  
' of Regent, and the Government of the  
' That *France* and *England* should be unite  
' by the same Person, viz. *Henry* and his  
' that they should not depend upon one a  
' be governed according to their own Law  
' Rights and Privileges should be preserv

reduce it at last ; the two Kings Entry into *Paris* on the first Sunday of *Advent*, and the two on the next day ; then the Duke of *Burgundy* put in his Complaints before the Kings and Councils, in the *Hôtel de St. Paul*, the Dauphin was summoned to the Marble Table with the Formalities, and afterwards, as attainted and convicted of Murder, was declared unworthy of succeeding to the Crown, and banished the Kingdom for ever, the distressed Prince appealed from this Sentence, which cannot but be thought hard, to God and sword, and transferred the Parliament and University to *Poitiers*, at which Place many of the most famous Members of both Bodies did not fail to attend. Thus every thing was almost double in the Kingdom, there being two Kings, two Regents, as many Parliaments, Constables, Chancellors, Admirals and so of most other great Officers ; not to mention the multitudes of Mareschals of *France*, whereof each Party made seven or eight.

When the King of *England* had sojourned some time at *Paris*, he laid Siege to the City of *Meaux*, which was the only place the Dauphin had left upon the *Saine* and *Marn* ; and after three Months brave defence, the Besieged capitulated on the 19th of *May* : by the Articles the Inhabitants had their Lives and Estates, but all the Soldiers were sent Prisoners to

ther. Philip was much dissatisfied herewith, & ther thought the *English* began to treat him with Contempt and Haughtiness then before, & vowing so to settle their own Affairs, that they have no farther occasion for him.

In the mean time the War grew very hot in Province on this side the *Loire*, particularly in *pagne*, *Picardy*, and in the Counties of *Perche*, and *Anjou*: The Duke of Clarence King Henry, having drawn together 8 or 10000 men, laid Siege to *Bauge* in *Anjou*; to the relief of which marched the Earl of *Bouchain* & *Scor*, and the *chal de La Fayette*, who gave him Battel, defeated the Duke, and slew him with 2000 of his men in Spot, while the rest escaped thro the Country of *Normandy*. For this Service *Bouchain*, & brought the Dauphin three or four thousand men to his own Country, had the Constable's Staff put upon him.

The Dauphin hereupon accompanied with the Constable, and the Duke of *Alençon*, recovered Places in the Countries of *Perche* and the *Chartres*; the mean time King Henry being returned from *land* with a great Reinforcement, and enraged at the Defeat and Death of his Brother, did all that he could to come at the Dauphin; he marched to *Chartres* and *Chateaudun*, lodged in the Suburbs of *Orleans*, but failing to meet with him in the field, where the other did not care to encounter him, a violent Dysentery took off 3000 of his men; & he fell upon the City of *Dreux*, which being surrendered upon Articles, he went from thence to Paris to visit his Queen, who was big with Child, for he intended there to ly in. But not to omit here a remarkable Passage in the *French* Historians; while the King was engaged in the Siege of *Dreux*, a Hermit came to him, and told him of the great Judgment brought upon *Christendom* by his unjust Ambition; that he had usurped the Kingdom of *France* against a Prince of Right, and contrary to God's Will, and therefore he threatned him in his Holy Name with a sudden and sudden Punishment, if he desisted not from his Enterprize. But the King taking this either for

D. of Clarence slain.

A strange Story of an Hermit.

or a sly Suggestion of the Dauphin's Party, the more confirmed in his Design; however it a few Months after that he fell ill, and they to be a strange and incurable Disease in his <sup>K. Henry</sup> <sup>ill.</sup> ment, the acuteness of the pain making him go to seek for cure.

Queen being delivered of a Son at *Windsor* <sup>na-</sup> <sup>emry,</sup> and returned again into *France*, she with <sup>band</sup> made their publick Entry in a most magnificent manner into *Paris*, and kept open Court at the on the Feast of *Pentecost*, each of them being d with their Royal Diadems; but the People, *French*, who went to see the Ceremony, had regret the Liberalities of their antient Kings, nor the Pride and Niggardliness of the *English*, we them none of their good Cheer, nor offered as much as a Sup of Wine: If this be true, are since strangely altered in respect to the tem- the two Nations, and the Tables may very well ed the other way.

Dauphin in the mean time having besieged the f *Cosne* upon the *Loire*, they capitulated to sur- , if not relieved by a prefixed day with an able to give him Battel; but the Duke of *Bur-* having drawn a good Force together, and march- ther, the Dauphin did not think fit to wait for



## The Reign of Charles VI. Book

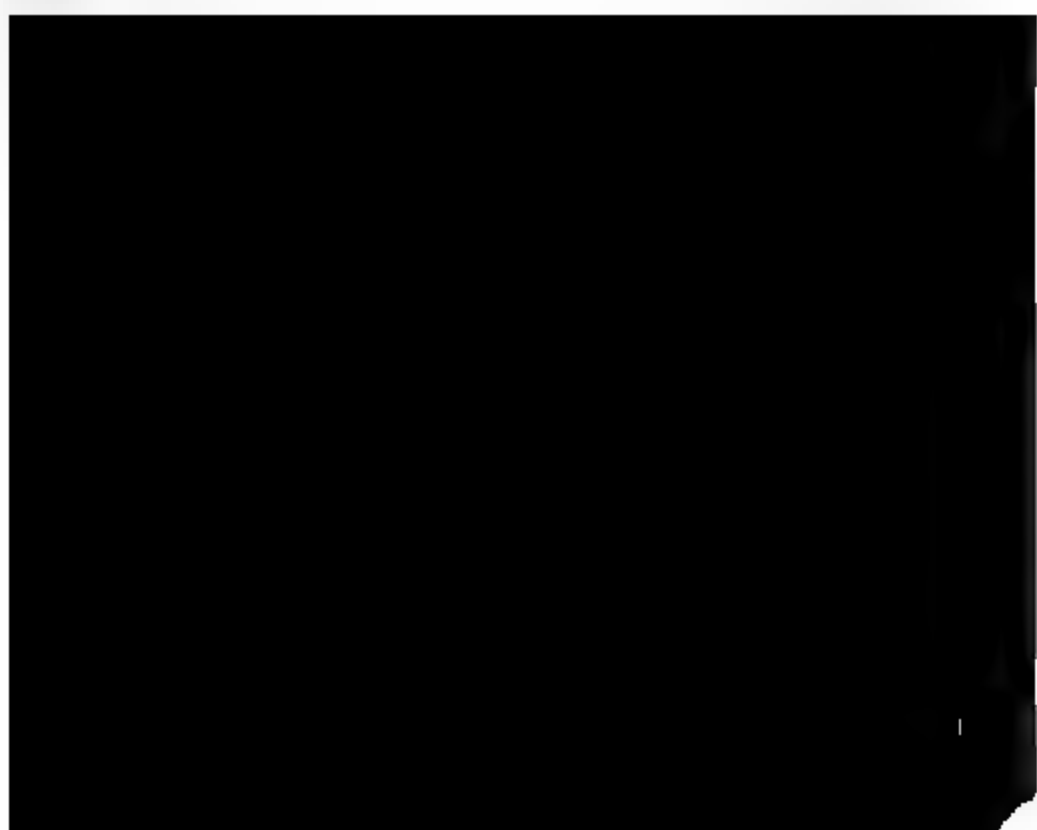
R. Charles  
his Death  
and Cha-  
racter.

King Charles did not long survive his brave  
law, for he also after so man. had Relapses wh  
pished him more and more, and made him a  
every one that could but come to deal with him  
his Life and unhappy Reign in his *Hôtel* of  
at *Paris*, being attended only by the first Gen  
of his Bed-Chamber, Confessor and Almoner  
Funeral was at *St. Dennis*, whereat no Prince  
Blood attended, nor even the Duke of *Burgundy*  
was loth to give place to the Duke of *Bedford*  
which last Prince young *Henry* his Nephew wa  
claimed King of *France*. Charles reigned 42  
and 35 Days, and lived 52: He had by *Isabella*  
various Sons, of whom the three first died i  
Infancy, the other, viz. *Lewis*, *John* and *Ch*  
peared on the Stage, and the last only surviv  
and reigned: He had the same number of Daugh  
*Isabel*, *Jane*, *Mary*, a second *Jane*, *Mechel* a  
*Sherine*. The first was married to *Richard II.* I  
*England*, then to *Charles* Duke of *Orleans*, the  
died in her Infancy, the third became a Nun at  
the fourth was married to *John VI.* Duke of *B*  
the fifth to *Philip* Duke of *Burgundy*, and the  
the Great *Henry* King of *England*. Before  
*Charles* his time, the Kings of *France* were wont  
all publick occasions to appear with all their Re  
naments, and wear some distinguishing Marks  
them every day, as their Robes lined wi  
mins, and a Crown upon their Hoods or H  
the Army a Coat of Mail seamed with Flower-d  
and a Hoop with Flowers pretty high upon the  
mets; but this Prince neglected all these Orna  
and made no manner of distinction between h  
Person and the other People, so that he  
to have divested himself of all Royalty.

100  
101  
102

103

104





## C H A P. V.

Reign of CHARLES VII. fir-  
named the Victorious.

CHARLES the Dauphin being at the Castle of  
in *Auvergne*, when he received the News of  
Death; he thereupon went the first day  
going, on the next was clothed in Scarlet,  
heard Mass in the same Chappel, made them  
Banner of *France*, at the sight whereof all  
then present, cried out, *Vive le Roy*: On  
hand, the *English* and *Burgundian* held the  
aces in *France*; they had all *Normandy*, the  
entry in a manner between the *Scheld* even to  
and the *Same*: However *Charles* had all the  
the Blood, except the Duke of *Burgundy*,  
left Commanders on his side, whom he purcha-  
ter rate, for he was necessitated to engage  
n, and the best part of his Demeasns to them;  
he this Prince during his first years common-  
in *Berry*, his Enemies by way of Raillery,  
but the heart of *France*. In *May* he was

**D. of Bedford  
defeats the  
French.**

the Gates to them. In the mean time  
surrendered according to Articles, *Bedford*  
ately marched to *Vernuil*, fought and de  
with the Slaughter of four thousand men, &  
Duke of *Alençon*, *Mareschal de la Fayette*  
and about three hundred Gentlemen Prisoners.  
*Douglas* was found amongst the Dead, &  
count of *Narbonne*, whose Body was cut  
set upon Poles in divers Places, he being  
in the Murder of *John Duke of Burgundy*.

On the other hand, King *Charles* drew  
of *Richmond*, Brother to the Duke of *Bre*  
to his Party. tho there were a great many

## Book IV. The Reign of Charles VII.

353

In the Murder at *Montereau*, and in the Plot for  
killing the Duke of *Bretagne*; but *Lanet* President of  
Justice and the most fixed of them, on the contrary  
all means to animate the King against the Consta-  
bles who yet made his Party so good, that *Charles*  
and himself abandoned by all his *Grandeess*, and all  
besides refused him Obedience, except *Selles* and *Vier-*  
zy. At last the King was forced to give way, but the  
Constable found it difficult to be reconciled to him,  
refused before him that he might not see him; at  
last at *Saumur* he admitted him to Homage, and  
gave him his Contract, and the Contracts of all the  
Barons within his Duchy, under Hand and Seal, com-  
manding them to go upon his Service, tho they did  
but little good.

However the difference between the Dukes of *Bur-*  
gundy and *Glocester*, about the latter's marrying the  
Daughter of *Haynault*, as already mentioned, put  
off the *English* Affairs, and diverted the Forces of  
two Princes, who had they joined them with  
the Duke of *Bedford's*, had undoubtedly ruined all  
France. *Bedford*, who well understood it, endeavour-  
ed to patch up an Agreement between them; the Duke  
of *Barbant* her first Husband submitted, but *Glocester* still  
asserted her Right with his Sword; nay he and the  
Cardinal from sharp Letters proceeded so far as to

a great Army to the Frontiers of Duke to relinquish his Alliance w  
 promise Homage to King *Henry*. I  
 an endless piece of work to set a m  
 Battels and Enterprizes of this War; the  
 City, nor Borough, but had a Garison  
 and Castles were built upon all Eminen  
 Narrow-ways and in the open Fields: E y L  
 his Soldiers or rather Troop of Robbers,  
 at discretion upon the People; and then  
 426. only to note here the most remarkable F  
*French* raised the Siege of *Montargis*, and  
 following recovered *Manse*. The or  
 was yet more remarkable, the same or  
 the 12th of *Octob.* by the Earl of S  
 fresh Forces out of *England*, who made 11  
 about it, having first cleared all the Places 16  
*asse*, and all others for twelve or fifteen Leag  
 above and below the Town along the *Loire*.

e Siege  
 Orleans.  
 1428.

But to leave this matter for a Moment,  
 be improper to note in this Place, that t  
*Burgundy* having now besieged *Jacqueline* in c  
 forced her to declare him Heir to all her D  
 so that to *Flanders* and *Artois*, he joined  
*Holland*, *Zealand* and *Friesland*; and again  
 Year, the Earldoms of *Zutphen* and *Ni*  
 decease of Count *Theodoric*, came to him  
 Purchase, the other having only reserved t  
 his Life in them: Farther, two years af  
 chies of *Lothier*, *Brabant* and *Lii*  
 Marquisate of the Holy Empire, and the L  
*Antwerp* falling to him by the Death  
*Philip* of *Burgundy*, second Son of  
 succeeded Duke *John* his elder Brother;  
 Husband, he became a very consuera  
 and we shall hear more of him and his I  
 the Prosecution of this History; but  
 remember that he went in the beginni  
 to *Paris* to the Duke of *Bedford*, w  
 some Ambassadors from King *Ch*  
 from *Orleans*, desiring the Regent t  
 sequestred into the Hands of the I  
 but the *English* believing this impot

ed as taken, made slight of their Petition; so that  
 y carried on the Siege with great Vigour, their  
 tacks were very brave, and the defence of the Besie-  
 d, if possible, yet braver. Here the Great Salisbury,  
 psc Name was such a Terror to the French, lost his E. of Salis-  
 e by a Cannon-ball; but the French having been bury slain  
 ted near Rouvroy, at their falling upon a Convoy of  
 rings that was going to the English Camp, the The Battles  
 stable retired in discontent into Bretagne; and of Her-  
 rles himself disposing all things to retire into Daw-  
 rings.  
 r, the Place was just going to fall into the English  
 ns, and with it the Courage of all the French,  
 as a most extraordinary thing hapned, that gave a  
 ge turn to things, and was a matter hardly to be  
 el'd in History.

about the end of February, the Governor of Van- The Story  
 rs in Champagne, sent a Maiden to the King of a- of the  
 18 or 20 Years old, who affirmed she had a po- Maid of  
 Commission from God to relieve Orleans, and Orleans.  
 him to be crowned at Rheims, being solicited  
 unto by the frequent Apparitions of Angels and  
 s; her Name was Joan or Jane, born in the Vil-  
 of Damremy upon the Meuse, being the Daugh-  
 F James of Ave and Isabel Gautier, and bred up  
 ep Sheep: She knew the King, tho in a mean Ha-



Siege of  
Orleans  
raised.

1429.

K. Charles  
crowned.

His mari-  
ous Suc-  
cesses.

was relieved) with a design to have him be-  
Consecrate of Joan's, whom they raised.  
In the mean time Joan proceeds with her Ex-  
and when she had successfully thrown French  
Orleans, and soon after entered the City in Pe-  
Besieged believing her to have been sent from  
refused Courage, and made divers Sallies,  
she fought valiantly, and in two or three d-  
their chief Forts, and on the 12th of May  
Besiegers to decamp for good and all. Here  
French flocked to this Heroine from all Quar-  
the English were driven from Jargeau and Be-  
routed at Patog, and in short dislodged from all  
ces in those Countries: The King also pursued  
second part of her Commission must go to Rhe-  
crowned, tho that City and all Champagne was  
the Enemies Power; but in their March,  
Troyes and Châlons surrendered to him; so did  
too, where he was actually crowned on the 7  
ly by the Archbishop of that City. In reward  
these important Services, the King ennobled  
Father and three Brothers, with all their De-  
even by the Females, and changed the Name  
Family, which was *de Arc*, to *de Lucy* or  
for their Arms gave them a Field-Azure, with  
placed in pale, the Cross and Pommel Or,  
with two Flower-de-luces, and sustaining  
the same upon its Points.

The King upon his return, had *Lyon*, *Soiffon-  
vais*, *Compeigne*, *Crespy*, and all the Cities  
*Paris* surrendered to him, but declined to  
ford at *Montepilloy*, assaulted *Sr. Dennis* and  
vain, where the *Pucelle* was wounded at  
the Wall. She was willing now to return to  
Village, but was overpersuaded by the Soldiers  
to her Ruin, after she had executed the Com-  
entrusted to her. From *Paris* the King in  
*Berry* took *Ligny* upon the *Marn*, but his Ne-  
of Agreement at *Auxerre* with the Duke of  
was not yet ripe to be finished; and his go-  
was now put to some kind of a stand by the  
ces at Court, which lasted almost two years  
the Viscounty of *Touars*, which *Trimoville* had

kept *d'Amboise* in Prison: His Cause was supported by the Constable, as the other was by the King. The Essays about the same time were made to bring Burgundy over; but after he had conferred with *Bedford*, he found it better to renew with the *English*, and gave him a Blank Paper, and withal the Countries of *Champagne* and *Brie*, upon condition only of doing homage.

However towards the end of this Year, the City of *Melun* shut her Gates against the *English* Garrison it had been making Inroads into *Gastinois*; and in the King's Kindness to such Cities as returned to him was a great Bair for others to do the same. Now amidst the many Sieges in every Province, that of *Meung* was the most remarkable for the Disgrace the *Burgundians* met with, as being forced to raise it; much more yet for *Joan's* misfortune, who upon the 17th of *May* was taken Prisoner, upon their retreat after a Sally made; this misfortune hapning to her through the Imprudence or Folly of *Flavy* the Governor, who shut her out of the Barricado: She fell first into the Hands of a Gentleman of *Picardy*, who sold her to *John de Luxemburgh*, one of the Generals, and he carried her to the *English*, for 10000 Livres in hand, and 10000 Livres yearly Pension.

*Joan taken Prisoner.*

1430.

ch  
ize  
tres.

both of them assisted the  
Ladders and getting in ; but  
taken, they were turned out  
tempted one time or other to play  
gain in favour of the *French*. To c  
the *French* surprized *Chartres*, by t co  
Fellow that carried Goods in a Wheel  
with he embarrassed the Draw-bridg,  
dred men ran out of a neighbouring Cellar,  
had hid themselves that night ; and upon a  
en, the Bastard of *Orleans* and *Gauconr*,  
within a League of the Place, hastened  
men thither, upon which the Garison  
resistance fled by another Gate to E re :  
of their Citizens, by the Example or tui  
zealous *Burgundian*, making Opposition,  
with his Weapon in his Hand on the ste of  
thedral.

n burnt  
Roan.

*Joan* should all this while have only been a  
of War, but the *English* too much enraged  
been worsted by a Maiden, could not endure  
ry ; and therefore having brought the Rem  
University at *Paris* to petition their Ki for  
against her, she was carried to *Roan*, o  
clesiastical Court accused for a Witch, auc  
retick, and one that had forfeited her Hono  
Accusations were but indifferently made  
was urged as a matter very criminal,  
clothed her self in Man's Apparel, and tak  
seeing that Change stained the Mo ty  
and flatly contradicted the exprefs Coi  
The Bishop of *Beauvais* in whose Diocesis  
the President of the Inquisition, with some  
Divinity and the Canon Law, were  
whom she was condemned to perpetual  
the Bread of Sorrow and Water of Affl  
being alledged, that some days after  
by putting on a Man's Habit, she was  
and given up to the Secular Power, who on  
*Mary* burnt her alive in the Market-place  
foretold the *English* (as they say) on t  
that God's Hand was lifted up to str  
tice would not only drive them o

## The Reign of Charles VII.

35

open to *England*, and cause 'em to suffer the same  
as they had inflicted on the *French*: It's also  
reported concerning her, that her Heart was  
more among the *Albes*, and that a Milk white  
was observed to fly out of the midst of the  
as a Token of her Purity and Innocence. But  
it was with this Woman, there seemed to be  
a Malice in her Prosecution, and the great Duke  
of *Burgundy* who was Regent was not deemed to be al-  
without blame herein. What end soever the  
had in the Death of *Joan*, 'tis certain their  
went worse and worse in *France*; for the re-  
g of which they carried their young King  
over, and on the 27th of *Nov.* crowned  
him a double Crown at *Paris*, in the Church of  
*Notre Dame*; and withal the better to retain the Duke  
in their Interest, who was ready to start  
from them, they confirmed to him the Donation of the  
lands of *Champagne* and *Brie*.

Henry I  
crowned  
King of  
France.

War was carried on in all the Provinces of  
with various Success for some Years, tho at  
: time but very feebly; and indeed it is no  
to see it languish after so long a continuance;  
knees of both Parties being the Cause thereof,  
y wanted Mony to set great Armies on foot;  
we may add the imbecillity of both *Henry*

1432, e

who in 1423. had mediated a Truce between the King and him for the Dutchies of *Burgundy* and the Earldom of *Nevers* on the one part, and for *Bombonnois*, *Bejelois*, *Lyonnois* and *Forez* on the other : Then it was a little farther carried on at *Nevers*, at an Intervall between *Charles Duke of Bourbon* and the *Burgundians* whose Sister *Charles* had married ; for these two Parties having accommodated their own Affairs concerning Homage, for some Lands which the Duke of *Bourbon* refused to render to the other, and for which they had sharp Rencounters for some time, they fell to discourse about the Concerns of the whole Kingdom and agreed there should be a Conference held at *Arras* to find out the best expedient for procuring a Peace between the two Crowns, and between King *Charles* and the *Burgundians*. Pursuant to this, there was the greatest and Noblest Assembly that ever this Age was of held at *Arras*, where all the Princes of *Christendom* had their Ambassadors, and the Pope and Cardinals their Legates ; The Harbingers took up Stabling 10000 Horse, and it was opened on the 6th of *May*. The Duke was in Honour obliged not to treat with the *English*, provided they would be reasonable : They were offered *Normandy* and *Guyenne*, upon condition of Homage ; but they persisting stiff in their Pretensions, the Duke took occasion, how much as I will not say, to forsake them his old Allies, and made a separate Peace with the *French* ; the Pope's Legate, to sanctify so foul a Perfidy, having absolved him of that Faith he had given them. The main Article was, that King *Charles* by his Ambassadors disowned his consent to the Murder of Duke *John* wickedly perpetrated by others about him, for which he was heartily sorry ; and promised to do Justice on the Guilty of the Duke's naming, and if that could not be taken, that he would banish them from the Kingdom for ever, and never admit their return upon any Treaty : That the King should pay the Duke 100 thousand Gold Crowns, at 24 Carats, &c. for Goods and Equipage taken upon the Murder of his Brother ; farther he acquitted him of all Homage due for any Lands he held of the Crown, and his Service and Personal Assistance during Life ; gave him and

The Assembly of Arras.

D. of Burgundy leaves the English.

His Articles with the French.

Male and Female for ever, the Counties of  
 and Auxerre, St. Jengons, St. Laurence, and  
 Bellany of Bar upon the Seine; and as security  
 100 Crowns, payable at two certain Terms,  
 Villanies of Peronne, Roye and Montdidier,  
 the Cities of Somme, i. e. St. Quintin, Corbie,  
 Albeville, and others; also the Counties of  
 and Bologne, for him and the Heirs Male of  
 7, with all the Rights and Profits of the same.  
 the Duke was not obliged to quit St. Andrew's  
 even when in the King's Army; and in case of  
 prevention of the Subjects, they should be both  
 of their Oaths, and take up Arms against  
 Roger; that the King should tender his Sub-  
 for compleating the Treaty into the Hands  
 Pope and Council's Legates, upon pain of Ex-  
 mation, &c. Lastly, to make this Recon-  
 the more firm and durable, there was a Pro-  
 of bestowing Catharine the King's Daughter  
 Charles Earl of Charolois the Duke's Son, both  
 very young; and four Years after she was sent  
 Duke of Burgundy to have the Marriage con-  
 ed.

les this amazing Blow to the English, the Bedford  
 of the great Duke of Bedford Regent of France dies.  
 less so to them, those that succeeded him



Conspiracy  
against the  
Govern-  
ment.

motion which was  
Dukes of *Alençon*,  
Bastard of *Orleans*,  
a hand: The Compt  
no share in his Govern  
private Men, and therefore  
against his Ministers. Tr  
joined in with them, that  
whatever be brought into Play at  
Conspiracy being formed, *Alençon*  
debauch the Dauphin, yet but 16 Years  
ried to *Margaret* Daughter to J  
*land*, and discarded his Govern  
King had placed about him. 1  
hereat, when he had well provi  
against any Attempts of the E  
Field, being attended by the C  
*Marche* and *Dunois*, whom he  
the Conspirators with 800 M  
others. In short, he put them to  
Place to another, that he forced  
Son, and submit.

Duke of  
*Orleans*  
gets his  
Liberty.

But before we are to proceed to  
we are to observe a very strange  
in this; and that was, that  
who had been a Prisoner  
should now be freed, by a  
the least hopes in the World to ex  
*Philip* Duke of *Burgundy*, who del  
Period to the mortal Feuds between  
that of *Orleans*, by a Principle of Gou  
rous as it was Politick, contrived this P  
ty, and helped him to pay 1  
300000 Crowns; after which  
the Order of the Golden Fleece, w  
instituted in 1430.

1441.

This Year King *Charles* havi  
the Charge of the *Parisians*,  
the Honour of the *English*  
way three or four times to put  
Upon which the King was so d  
treated to *Poissy*; but growi  
he returned again, and attack

Before, they carried it by Assault: That  
 attached to clear the Country of *Poison* and  
 rid of the Robbers that infested them, from  
 he returned and staid at *Limoges* during the  
*Whitsontide*, where he received the Duke of  
 and his Wife, and gave him 160000 Francs  
 Livres Pension towards the payment of his

From thence he went to *Gasconne*, and saved  
 from the Hands of the *English* who did not  
 to fight him, took *St. Sever*, *Dacqs*, *Mar-*  
*La Reole*; but the *English* soon recovered  
 first after his Departure. The Winter he  
*Montauban*, which proved so sharp, that all  
 its of the Country were frozen up, and the  
 durst not stir out of their Quarters.

August the 28th this Year died *John V. Duke*  
*gne*, leaving his Dutchy very much enriched  
 roved by a long Peace, and mightily peopled  
 War which made its neighbouring Countries,  
 icularly *Normandy*, desolate; for there went  
 at Province alone above 30000 Families to in-  
*Bretagne*: He had three Sons, *Francis*, *Peter*  
 st; whereof the two eldest were Dukes of  
 thry successively. But to return to the Field  
 he *English* the preceeding Year had laid Siege  
 ; but the Dauphin returning out of *Guyenne*  
 ither in Quality of the King's Lieutenant

1442

1443



but poorly defended. The Pretences were the House of *Austria* against the *Swiss*, to some Incurfions the Count *De Montbeliard* into the Territories of *France*; to afright the of *Bafil*, that they might put an end to the and to fide with *Rene* Duke of *Lorain* against having affifted the Earl of *Vendosme* his Enem the real Design was to free the Kingdom from troublefom and fiery Guefts the Soldiery. With the Dauphin at the Head of near 20000 Horf ed from *Troyes* in *July*, took *Montbeliard*, 4000 Men near *Bafil*, who rather tired than died all upon the Spot, but bravely fold the at double the number, which fo cool'd the Refolution, that he thought it beft to ret go and join with his Father's Army that lay *Metz*, whose Citizens purchafed their Red at laft for 300000 Florins, whereof King *Ch* 200000, and the reft they gave *Rene* of Acquittance for, who owed it to them. The being paid with this Money were all difband 1500 Men at Arms, as many Couftilliers, Foot that accompanied the Horfe, and 3000 Thefe the King quartered in the Town Kingdom; but the common People, who have fight, minded nothing but to ease themfelves Burden, and granted a Tax for the Subfiftance Regular Troops, not confidering the ill Con thereof, nor how the fame might be improved Difadvantage.

The Counties of *Valentinois* and *Diois* w Year united to *Dauphine*; *Lewis de Poiffe* poffefft them had in 1419. given them by *Charles V.* then Dauphin, for fifty thoufand Co the Payment of his Debts and Legacies; and failure the Duke of *Savoy* was to fucceed: The indeed failed, and the Duke got Poffeffion; by a Treaty at *Bayonne*, the Duke gave m Right to the Dauphin, who as an Equivalent to him all the abfolute Seigniory and Homage cigny.

King *Charles* during the Serenity of the with *England* gave himfelf over to all forts o

and Dalliances, particularly the Lady *Agnes* had the greatest Share in his Affections; the King of *England* was much more reserved about, but being weak in Spirit he was governed by an old and daring Queen, at whose Instigation he put to Death his Uncle the Noble Duke of *Glocester*, without any form of Law, which afterwards became the occasion of much trouble in the Kingdom. I confine our selves as much as may be to the History of *France*; King *Charles* was not above 40 years old, and the Dauphin who was already 22, was upon his Heels, and would have played the King, insomuch that one day at *Chinon* he gave *Agnes* a Box on the Ear; but what was worse than this, he contracted with the Earl of *Dammartin* to assassinate some body he did not like, and being discovered from it by *James* that Earl's Brother, who was Master of the King's Household, the thing at last came to the King's Ear, who sharply reprimanded the Dauphin for it. The young Prince to excuse himself, charged the Earl with having suggested the Design first to him, which the Earl boldly said in the King's Presence, and in his own Justification challenging any of the Dauphin's Gentlemen to fight him; the King grew sensible of the Malignity of his Son, abhorred it, commanded him for four

*The Dauphin's Malignity.*  
1445.

War re-  
newed.

1449.

French  
successful.

Month after this time; but *Suzanne* Countess of *Angoulême*, being extremely greedy, surprized the City of *Fongers* belonging to the Duke of *Bretagne*, where he met with a Booty of sixteen hundred thousand Crowns; and at the same time the *English* made an Irruption into *Scotland*, which comprehended in the Truce, as they began like to break into civil Broils at home. The Duke of *Bretagne* and the *Scots* made their Complaints to *Charles* for this breach of the Truce; upon which he was required to make Reparation: They demanded what *Suzanne* had done; but that not sufficient, at length the Duke of *Bretagne* flew out, and *Charles* his Consent surprized at the same time, he sent the *Larche* above *Roan*, *Conches* near *Evreux*, not far from *Beauvais*, and *Cognac* upon the *Mayenne*. In the mean while the Disturbances in *Scotland* continuing, King *Charles*, tho never so busy, would not neglect so favourable an opportunity, and resolved to drive the *English* out of *France*, whereupon he constituted the Earl of *Foix* General of his Armies, from the *Garonne* to the *Pyrenees*, and the Earl of *Dunois* in all the other parts, yet so as to have all due Deference to the King when they met in the same place.

He ordered the first to take all the Places which the *English* at the Foot of the *Pyrenees*, and to block up the Passage of the King of *Navarre*, who had made a League with them, and obliged them for a Sum of Money to keep and guard *St. Jean de Soule* for them, a very strong Place in the *Pyrenees*, but tho the Count *De Foix* was that Prince's Father-in-Law, yet having more regard to the King than his Father, he scrupled not to lay Siege to it, and the Place being at length straitned for want of provisions, they were forced to capitulate and surrender, and also the Castle of *Guissant* within four Miles of *Bayonne*, after three thousand *English*, whom the King of *Navarre* had sent by Water to relieve it, were defeated by the Besiegers. *Perche* was at the same time taken by the Count of *Angoulême*, a Miller, in revenge for his having been killed by the *English*; the great Tower held out for

*Interim Dunois*, by the small Assistance he met from *Pont Audemer*, *Lisieux*, *Manes*, and the round those Cities, perceiving the *English* were now ebb, sent the King word that *Normandy* were shaken; he was informed besides, that the *Count of Bretagne*, with the *Contable*, had taken *Con-* and that the Inhabitants of *Alençon* had re- their Duke to his City; wherefore upon this news he marched from *Vendosme*, where he his Rendezvous, to *Verneville*; thence to *Louviers*, *Pont de Larche*, to summon *Roan*, whose Inhabitants were inclined to withdraw from their Obedience to the *English*. The Earl of *Somerset*, who with three hundred Men was within the Place, would not suffer the *French* Heralds to come near; but this could not prevent the Inhabitants to plant several *French* men on the Walls, tho the rest not joining with them, had a treacherous Design to betray the Town into the *English*: However so resolute and unanimous they were that they deputed their Archbishop to treat with the King, of whom he obtained the Security and Liberty of their Persons, and for the Estates of the Town were within the City, as well *English* as *French*, whether they stayed there or removed any where.

When an Account of the Treaty was brought to the Town-Hall, the *English* endeavoured to frustrate the Execution of it, by shutting the Gates and Walls. The *English* endeavoured to frustrate the Execution of it, by shutting the Gates and Walls. The *English* endeavoured to frustrate the Execution of it, by shutting the Gates and Walls.

made his publick Entry with much Magnificence the 10th of November, and there celebrated that of St. Martin, the Ancient Patron of Gaul.

Charles, notwithstanding the Inconveniency of Season, laid Siege to Harfleur, the first Place in France by Henry V. King of England, and it was surrendred to him on the 12th of January, towards Harfleur was. At the same time the Bretagne, and the Constable reduced Valongne, divers other small Places, and after a long Siege gained his City of Fougères. But these Prospects K. Charles were not without Allays of Sorrow, year, while he was at Jamieges, they poisoned Agnes de Soreau; but to comfort him, Antoinette Maignelais, Lady de Villequier, her Cousin, in place, tho she was not sole Mistress; for the loss of Age exciting the King's Concupiscence, he had great many handfom Women, at least to gratify his Eyes. Some will have it that the Dauphin's Mother made away with Agnes, and that he who contributed most to it was the famous John Cœur, the King's Jeweller, and Master of the Mint at Bourges, the day of his Nativity; of whose Riches, Credit, and Dealings, there are such Wonders related, that one would fain perswade the World he had the Philosophers Stone. This Person was in the year 1450. accused before the King's Council, as well for the mentioned Crime, as for carrying Money out of the Land, false coining, counterfeiting of Seals, Arms and Poudre to the Saracens, &c. He voluntarily appeared to justify himself, and at length being satisfied of his Guilt, he had in consideration of his Services his Life spared, but was condemned to go bare-foot and bare-headed with a lighted torch in his Hand, to some Court of Justice or to the Gallies, to acknowledg his Crime, to pay 100000 Crowns, and have all his Estate confiscated; however the Parliament some time after restored him to his Liberty and Estate, after he had paid his Fine.

1451.

But to return again, the English towards the beginning of this Year landed 3000 Men at Cherbourg under the Command of Ayrle, who drained the Garisons, and making them up 6000 advanced

the Field, but he was quickly defeated by the  
table at *Fourmigny*, and most of his Men were <sup>English</sup> defeated,  
or taken Prisoners. This fatal Blow quite dis-  
abled them, so that King *Charles* going into lower  
*Normandy*, quickly took *Vire*, *Bayeux*, *Sr. Saviour le*  
*re*, *Falaize* and *Caen*; and the Earl of *Somerset*,  
1000 *English* he had with him, had Vessels allowed  
to transport them into *England*, and no where else:  
*Cherbourg* being now the only Place left them,  
also was surrendered upon the 11th of *August*, French  
in all *Normandy* was recovered by the French, recover all  
to speak more properly, helped to recover it self Nor-  
Year and 6 Days; and to perpetuate the Re-*mandy*.  
Inance thereof, there were General Processions or-  
to be made yearly upon the same day that *Cher-*  
was surrendered.

King *Charles* having regulated the Affairs of this  
Province, turned his Arms towards *Guyenne*,  
Earl of *Pontieu* opened the Passage over the  
River by taking of *Bergerac*; and the Lord of  
going to scour the Country about *Bordeaux*  
1000 Horse only, there came 12000 Horse and  
*English* and *Bourdellois* upon him in a confused  
Army, whom he had the good Fortune to rout with the  
loss of a thousand of them, and a great many  
Prisoners, which indeed occasioned the loss of

be spared; so that now the *English* of all the  
ous Conquests in *France*, had nothing left of  
*Calais* and the County of *Guisnes*. A great  
Reasons are assigned by Historians, as they  
rently affected, for such a strange Turn and  
as this was; but nothing in my mind can be  
alleged than the intestine Divisions of the  
and the weakness of that Prince that was  
Throne, which wrought such Convulsions  
vernment, as proved his Ruin and almost the  
Nation.

However our Divisions were calmed for a  
on the Intreaty of the Lord d' *Esparre*, who  
puted from *Bordeaux* and the *Bourdellois*,  
offer the Restoration of that Country to the  
upon a distaste conceived at some new Taxes  
them. Indeed the *English* were tender to  
rally upon that point, and 'tis very remarkable  
they have a traditional Remembrance of the  
of our Government, and how easy they lived  
to this very day: Wherefore the great *Talbot*  
with 4000 men at *Meduc*, and on the 24th  
was by the Citizens introduced into *Bordeaux*  
having received a like Reinforcement toward  
ter end of the Year, he made himself  
*Castillon*, *Cadillac*, *Libourn*, *Fronsac*, and  
Places.

King *Charles* was now preparing to march  
upon the Duke of *Savoy*, because he had agreed  
Marriage of his Daughter *Charlotte* to the  
without his consent; but hearing of the landing  
*English*, he allowed of the Duke's Submission  
greed to a Peace. Next Year he marched for  
covery of *Bourdellois*, and besieged *Castillon*,  
the great *Talbot* with 6000 Men coming to  
of it, was defeated and slain together with  
which indeed caused the utter Ruin of the  
terest in *France*, and after that the recovery of  
*deaux*; for they finding *Fronsac*, *Libourn*,  
*Cadillac*, and all the other Towns round them  
the King quartered at *Lermont*, and no appearance  
Relief and Provisions, surrendered upon Articles  
the King would never have granted them.

*Bordeaux*  
aux recovered by  
the *English*.  
1452.

Lost to the  
French, by  
*Talbot*  
slain.  
1453.

ality had not raged amongst his Army, and swept by Multitudes of them. However the better to the City, which the Interest of Trade and reciprocal Marriages inclined to be for the *English*, he barred forty of the Lords and Citizens he most suspected and bridled them with two strong Castles, which ordered to be built there.

We meet with nothing considerable relating to the Affairs for the two succeeding Years; we might somewhat of those of *England* and *Flanders*, which were bad enough, but they are foreign to our purpose: However we cannot take our leave of this 1453, but we must take notice, that upon Tuesday the 29th of *May* (tho Historians are somewhat uncertainty as to the positive time) *Constantinople*, Frank of the *Greek* Empire, from which the *Turks* before lopped off the Branches, was taken by *Momet II.* surnamed the Great, and her last Empe-  
*Constantine* perished in a Crowd at one of the ends of the City: Such was the end of the Eastern Empire, which may be reckoned from the Dedication of *Constantinople*, upon the 19th of *May* 330, to have lasted 1123 Years.

*Constanti-  
nople ta-  
ken.*

We are now therefore come to the Year 1455. and *John's* *Mem-*  
*French* believing it to be both to the Honour of the *memory* just-  
and Kingdom, whatever the *English* had thought *fied.*

to contrary to what the *Memorandum* says of the Year 1455.



King's Displeasure was discharged upon *Alençon*, the Dauphin's Godfather, who was banished from *Dauphine*, where he had been to his intrigues with his God-son, and having known not what League with the *English*, some disturbance in favour of them, and imprisoned in the Castle of *Loches*, or presently.

1457.

This Year, as it is usual after a long squeeze the Financers of what they have brought in during the publick Calamities, King *Charles* brought to an account who had the management of the *rents*; and *Xançois* the Receiver General

turned the Assembly from *Brugency*, where they were, to *Vendosme*, where he intended to be himself present; but at last by a Sentence pass'd on the 10th of *Octob.* the Duke was condemned to lose his Land, and his Estate to be confiscated: The King spared his Life, but took the best of his Lands, and sent him back Prisoner to *Loches*.

The 26th of *Dec.* in this same Year, was the last of the Days of the brave *Arthur* Earl of *Richmond*, Countable of *France*, who had likewise been Duke of *Bretagne* a Year and an half, by the Death of the Simple, his elder Brother's second Son. He had no Child, and so the Duchy devolved to *Francis* his Nephew, the Son of *Richard* Earl of *Estampes* his younger Brother. *Charles* of *Anjou*, Earl of *Mün*, the Office of Constable conferred upon him, the time before, viz. on the 27th of *June*, died at *Alphonso* King of *Aragon* and *Naples*, who bequeathing this last Kingdom to *Ferdinand* his second Son, *Rene* of *Anjou* revived his Claim, whom we leave to pursue with various Success.

To pass over also the *English* Affairs, of which we may however observe this *in-transit*, that *Henry VI.* by this time deposed, and *Edward IV.* crowned King of *England*: We must take notice that it was thirteen years since the Dauphin had been absent from Court: his Father indeed sent often for him, and

1459.

1460, &c

put in Execution, had not the Pope strongly dissuaded him from it, or if perhaps he could have had sufficient time to dispose the Mind of the French King to such a Change.

But the Thread of his Life was now near spun while he was at Meun on the Eure in Berry, Information that his Domesticks had conspired away his Life, from which time forwards, he could see nothing but Daggers and Poison; and apprehensions were so great, that not knowing from what Hands he might receive his Food without Danger for some Days abstained from eating, after it was not in his power when he would have swallowed any thing; so that he died of Hunger the 22<sup>d</sup>, about the midst of his 60<sup>th</sup> year, towards the end of the 39<sup>th</sup> of his Reign. Notwithstanding greater Traverses of Fortune, or more Enemies, nor more gloriously overcame them, he had driven those out of France that would have taken the Crown from him, he found a more dangerous enemy in his own House, that attempted his Life, he might have been accounted a happy King, he was another Father and another Son: He was affable, bountiful, liberal and just; he tenderly loved his People, and spared them as much as possibly he could; he very largely rewarded Services, and took great Care of the Justice and Policy of his Kingdom; he laboured much in reforming the Church, and had much regard to it, that he would not charge any Tenths, but being somewhat of too soft a temper, he was much influenced and led away by his Favourites and Mistresses, and in his latter Days was apprehensive, jealous and suspicious to the highest degree. By his Mistresses he had three natural Children, and eleven legitimate ones by his Wife Mary, daughter of Lewis Duke of Anjou, viz. four Sons and two only survived him, Lewis and Charles. His Daughters, Radegonda died, after she had been married to Sigismund, eldest Son of Frederick Duke of Austria; Yoland was married to Louis VIII. Duke of Savoy, Catherine to Charles Duke of Burgundy, Jane or Joan to John II. Duke of Brabant, and Margalot to Gaston Prince of Foix.

K. Charles  
his Death  
and Character.  
1461.

another *Jean* and *Mary*, who were dead Infants.

## CHAP. VI.

### The Reign of LEWIS XI.

previous Conduct of this Prince in his Father's Reign plainly indicated what his Friends expected from him, he ever went without Counsel, and mostly without Justice and Reason: He thought it the finest Policy, to leave the beaten Road of his Predecessors, and to do every thing, were it from better to worse, that it be feared. The Father was no sooner dead, Creatures formed a Party in favour of *Charles* younger Son; so that the Information given *Lewis* Count of *Main*, not so much out of Affectio-  
 Hatred to the Count of *Dammartin*, who had been a Competitor in *Charles's* Favour, caused him to go on Horseback with utmost Expedition, being joined with the Duke of *Burgundy* and his Son, four thousand choice Horse: He went directly to Paris, where he was crowned on the 15th of Aug. *K. Lewis* before he received the Unction, he would be first crowned.

Officers belonging to the Kings Honour  
Judicature and Treasury; nay treated  
things belonging to his Father very ill, to  
ruining all he had set up, gave no more  
his Brother *Charles* for his Appenage, set  
*Alençon* at Liberty, clapt the Count of *L*  
to the *Bastile*, restored the Count of *Ar*  
Estate, oppressed the People with Taxes,  
Nobility, and disgusted all the Clergy.

But tho *Lewis* entered *France* as a Friend  
Neighbours, yet *Eneas Silvius*, now elected  
distinguished by the Name of *Pius II.* w  
him be to, if the Pragmatick were obse

bit, and the King never concerned himself to have executed, because the Pope had in many things failed his Word to him.

In the mean time the Pope supported *Ferdinand* in Kingdom of *Naples*, against *John* Duke of *Calabria*, the Son of *Rene* of *Anjou*, who at length was utterly expelled; and all that the King could do, could amount to nothing of him in favour of those Princes of his blood: However *Pius* thinking to flatter him, confirmed the Title of *Most Christian* upon him, which had already derived to him with greater Honour from his Ancestors, and exhorted him to a Croisade against the *Turks*, presenting him with a Sword, on whose hilt were inscribed some Latin Verses, which invited him to that Expedition.

Now a sharp War hapning to break out between the King of *Castile*, and *John* King of *Arragon*, for his better Support with Men and Money in pressing Necessities, mortgaged the Counties of *Alon* and *Cerdagne* to the French King for 300000 crowns; but at last *Gaston* of *Foix*, who was Brother-in-law to the *Castilian*, and Son-in-law to the *Arragonian*, persuaded them to refer their Differences to King *Lewis* his Determination, who was then at *Orleans*, to treat of the Marriage of *Magdalen* Sister, with *Gaston* of *Foix* Count of *Viana*. When he heard the reasons of both Parties by their respective

1462.

The King at his return from this Journey, the Lords of *Crouy* had so well managed the *Burgundy*, as to consent to give him up the *Somme* for 400000 Crowns, he caused the to be immediately sent to *Hesdin*, and went the Person. This done, he would also appear in the *Countries*, where his Sovereignty was but little knowledged: He visited *Arras*, was received there, and went as far as *Lisle*, whither the Duke came to wait upon him. On the other hand, *Lewis* Savoy waited his return at *St. Claude*, to correct the Disobedience of his young Son *Philip*, who being forwarder than *Amadeus* the Elder, had lost the Affections of the Nobility, that he was much better of his way to be preferred before him in succession. But *Philip*, upon Summons and safe Conduits attending upon the King, was for all that sent Prisoner to *Loches*, where he was detained three years, to give his Father time to settle his Authority, and establish his eldest Son in the Throne.

Causes of  
discontent  
between the  
King and  
Charolois.

All this while the Enmity between the Count *Charolois* increased from five or six Causes, viz. the Surrender of the Places in the *Somme*, the kind Reception given by the King's Lords of *Crouy*, whom *Charolois* for that reason expelled from his Father's Court and Country; the King's endeavouring to lay Taxes upon the *County*, contrary to the Treaty of *Arras*, and from the Duke's shewing to the Count d' *Estampes*, who was to have intended to poison the Duke and his Son, that the same time the Chancellor *Morvilliers* used the King's Name to acquaint the Duke of *Bretagne*, that he must no longer stile himself Duke by the Name of God, coin Money, or raise any Taxes in his Country. The Duke unprepared, acted coolly in the matter, he promised all, but required time to call together the Country together upon a thing of that Importance. In the mean while he was diligent in treating with the *Burgundians* by *Rennelle*, and with all the Nobles of the Kingdom, whom he knew to be much discontented; and the Messengers of these Intrigues were sent down secretly in the Habit of Friars.

of it, and the King : rned l f e  
it executed, because the M nacl in y to  
of his Word to him.

In the mean time the Pope supported *Ferdinand* in the Kingdom of *Naples*, against *John* Duke of *Calabria*, the Son of *Rene* of *Anjou*, who at length was utterly expelled ; and all that the King could do, could obtain nothing of him in favour of those Princes of his blood : However *Pius* thinking to flatter him, confirmed the Title of *Most Christian* upon him, which had been already derived to him with greater Honour from his Ancestors, and exhorted him to a Croisade against the *Turks*, presenting him with a Sword, on whose Blade were inscribed some Latin Verses, which invited him to that Expedition.

Now a sharp War hapning to break out between *Henry* King of *Castile*, and *John* King of *Arragon*, *John* for his better Support with Men and Money in his pressing Necessities, mortgaged the Counties of *Roussillon* and *Cerdagne* to the *French* King for 300000 Crowns ; but at last *Gaston* of *Foix*, who was Brother-in-law to the *Castilian*, and Son-in-law to the *Arragonian*, persuaded them to refer their Differences to King *Lewis* his Determination, who was then at *Bordeaux*, to treat of the Marriage of *Magdalen* his Sister, with *Gaston* of *Foix* Count of *Viana*. When he heard the reasons of both Parties by their respective Ambassadors, he pronounced his Sentence of Arbitration ; but it satisfied neither the one nor the other Party any more than his Interview with the King of *Castile* pleased either *French* or *Spaniards*, which last laughed at the Niggardness, and mean and simple Appearance of King *Lewis*, who was clothed only with a coarse Cloth, had a short and strait Coat on, and wore a Madona of Lead in his Cap. The others disdained the *Castilian* Arrogance, and the Pride of the Count of *Ledesme*, King *Henry*'s Favourite : However it were, their King seemed to give the Precedency to King *Lewis* by passing over the River *Bidasso*, which was the Boundary of the two Kingdoms, to go to him, as also in advancing two Leagues within his Dominions, even to the Castle of *Uterbia*, where they conferred together.

1462.

*Intervien  
between  
Lewis and  
the Casti-  
lian.*

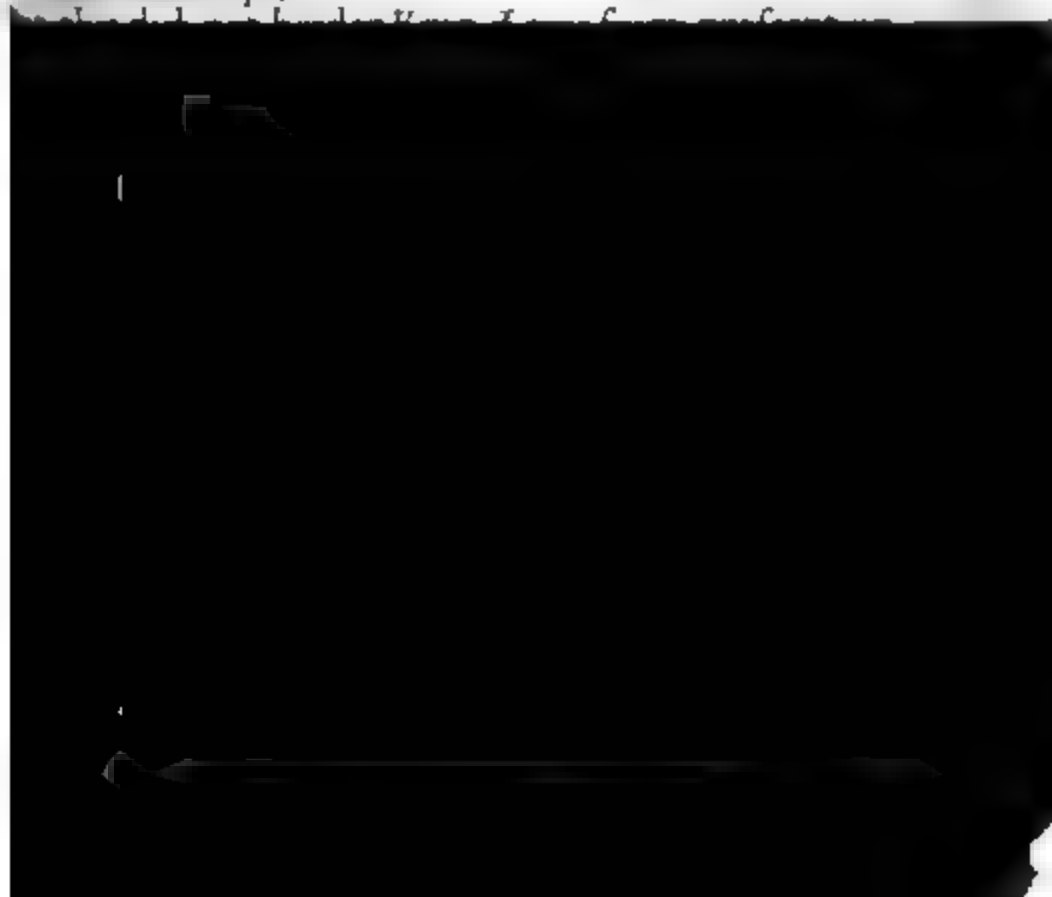
The



discontent  
between the  
King and  
Charolois.

At this time the Enmity between the  
Count Charolois increased from five or  
Causes, viz. the Surrender of the Place  
Somme, the kind Reception given by the  
Lords of *Crauy*, whom Charolois for that  
expelled from his Father's Court and Count  
the King's endeavouring to lay Taxes up  
contrary to the Treaty of *Arras*, and from  
he shewed to the Count d' *Esampes*, who  
to have intended to poison the Duke and  
the same time the Chancellor *Morvilliers*  
King's Name to acquaint the Duke of *Brabant*  
must no longer stile himself Duke by

*Charolus* having fixed his ordinary Residence at *Bruxelles* in *Holland*, *Rubempre* stole privately into *Paris* with a small Ship, disguised like a Merchant, with a Design to carry *Romille*, who was the Engine of these Designs, away either dead or alive, and to take *Charolus* himself: However it were, the Count perceived it, caused him to be imprisoned, and gave the Order thereof to the Duke his Father, who was gone to confer with the King at *Hesdin*. The Duke hereupon hastily retires, the People gave out there was a Design to seize both Father and Son at the same time; the others entertained their Auditors with it, and *de la Marche* made mention of it in terms which reflected upon the King's Honour; whereas *Charolus*, to justify himself from such Aspersions, sent *ambassadors* and some Lords, to make Complaints to the King, and demand Satisfaction: Many Discourses and Negotiations passed between them, and the Chancellor carried things so high, and with such Sovereign-like Assertions, that he seemed as if he designed rather to agitate than compose the Differences; so that *Charolus* at last told one of the Ambassadors at his Departure, *Recommand me most humbly to the King's good Grace, and tell him, he hath endeavoured to please me by his Chancellor, but that he will repent it ere the Year is past.*



The League  
for the  
Publick  
Good.

the Great Men, and all the late King's old Counsellors were engaged in it, and they gave it the Name of *League for the Publick Good*. Then as a justification and Disadvantage to the King's Affairs, was now at *Poitiers*, the Bastard of *Armagnac* his only Brother *Charles*, and carrying him into all the zealous Servants of his Father deceas'd, he him, and got him to direct a Manifesto to all the Estates of *France*, inviting them to unite with the Reformation of the Kingdom.

Civil War.

Now after the King had attempted in vain to bring them by fair Promises, he went to strike the first at them who had first declared, and these were the Duke of *Bourbon* and *Dammartin*, who had been at War in *Berry*, *Bourbonnois* and *Auvergne*. He submitted except *Bourges*, and *Rion* and *Auvergne*, and a Siege and sustained it: But thro' the Duke of *Nemours*, *Armagnac* and *Albrer*, brought the Duke considerable Reinforcement, yet he gave Ear to a Parley with the King, promising to summon his Counsellors to make a Peace, and if they accepted not of his terms to abandon them. *Nemours* gave his Word to the King to side with his Party, but he did it not, and the King kept the Oath he had sworn himself, to be revenged in Time and Place convenient.

Charolois  
takes the  
Field.

In this Country the King had notice that the Duke of *Charolois* had taken the Field, at whose Death the Duke his Father told him, *Go my Son in this Hour, and resolve to die rather than fly; if you are in any Danger, you shall not want an hundred Men to bring you out of it.* The King also his Count had 1500 Men at Arms, 8000 Archers, and a great Train of Artillery; that he had rendezvous before *Paris*, and that the Duke of *Bretagne* and his *fieur* were to join him. The Abolition of Taxes for the Publick Good were the plausible Pretences he went upon. He at first kept a good Discipline in his Army, and if the same had continued all had been his own; or if the *Breton* had come at the time appointed they had been Masters of *Paris*, there being many Malecontents, and but a few Soldiers in it for fear of losing *Paris*, making the King to leave the Game, in order to get thither before the Duke of

As he had repassed the *Loire*, *Bourbon*, *Dammartin*, *Nemours* and *Albret* broke their Words with him, and having got ten thousand Men together march-join the other Confederates.

The Heads of the League were all to have been at *Paris* towards the end of *June*; *Charolais* waited him 10 or 12 Days, and by several Skirmishes took the Suburbs of *Paris*; and finding little hope, and less Appearance of his Friends coming, thought of retiring: But the subtle *Norman Romille* gave him from time to time Letters from his Master, in which he wrote upon the Blanks signed before, he desired him to pass the *Seine* over the Bridge of *Neuilly*, to go and join the *Breton* towards *Estampes*, where he thought to have met him; and his ad- vance Guard was posted at *Montlehery*, while the King, returning from *Berry* kept the same Road, and arrived at *Chartres* within a League of the Count, much to the Surprize of both Armies: The King intended to slip by, and get to *Paris* without hazarding a fight; but *De Breze* Grand Seneschal of *Normandy* advised that he should ask him, whether he had given his Hand and Seal to the Princes, and if not, to fight, where he was one of the very first that was killed. The King's left Wing and the

*The Battle of Montlehery*  
The King's Right were broke; and in the Rout the



and vain thereupon, that it may be truly said day was the cause of all his Misfortunes.

The King fearing to be hemmed in, went for Paris, and supped that Night in the Company of some of the principal Ladies of that City, an Interest amongst that Sex: He highly commended the Fidelity of the Citizens; and to please them abated the Imposition upon Wine, from a fourth Part, and made a general Revocation of all the five great Farms only excepted: But these did not last long, no more than the Estates made of a Council of 18 Persons, 6 Men of Parliament, as many of the University, and the principal Citizens, by whose Advice he was to be governed; but the danger was no sooner than that he revoked all, and entertained a hatred against those that first proposed those things, and particularly against the Bishop, whose Name of the rest first mentioned it. Farther in want of Money, he borrowed a great deal of Officers, which was the first occasion of employments vendible; for he turned out those that refused to lend the Sums he asked, and about ten days after having well provided for the safety of the City, he went to raise Men and Money mandy.

In the mean time Charoleis marching to Breton, staid at Estampes to refresh his Men, and dress the wounded, who amounted to near ten thousand; and in three days the Duke of Bretagne came to him with Dunout, Dammaron, and other great Comrades, besides 800 Men at Arms, and six thousand Horse. Here it happening that Monsieur de Breton, a man of many wounded Soldiers, dropped some Words that intimated his Repentance for engaging in that Enterprize; and the same being heard by the Duke, and perhaps also that the Bretons, upon a Rumour of the King's Death, had consulted how to be rid of him, that they might have the sole Government of the new King; with this Apprehension he sent Edward IV. King of England, to treat of an Alliance with him, and desire his Sister Margaret in Marriage. His Design was indeed to amuse King Edward

K. Lewis  
the same  
still in his  
Actions.

that he might enter into a League with King  
for he mortally hated the House of York,  
as in the Interest of that of *Lancaster*; never-  
y over-acting the Dissembler, he engaged him-  
far as to compleat the Match, and received the  
of the Garter.

Princes having stayed a Fortnight at *Eftampes*, *Princes*  
once more to try *Paris*; having therefore fo- *attempt*  
he *Gastinois*, they passed the Seine between *Paris* in  
and *Montereau*, and were there joined by the *vain*.  
f *Calabria* King *Rene's* Son, and a great Com-  
; with the Forces of both *Burgundys*; and  
his Infantry there were 500 *Swiss*, the first  
re seen in *France*. When all the Lords were  
gether, there were near 100000 Horse in their  
the *Burgundian* had his Head Quarters at  
au, the Dukes of *Berry* and *Calabria* at *St. Maur*,  
rest at *St. Dennis* and the adjacent Places. Things  
with an ill Aspect now upon the King, who not to  
ing to himself, and taking upon him to encourage  
izens, by telling them, the *Burgundians* should  
oy them as they had done; he was answered  
ctor of the Chastelet, *Yea Sir, but they gather*  
*us and eat our Grapes, and we cannot help it.*  
ch the King replied, *It were better they should*  
*Grapes, than come and take the Money you have*

ing informed that the Duke of *Bourbon*, who  
in that Country, had by some secret Intellig  
Master of *Roan*, and that all the Prov  
to revolt, as being allured with a Desir  
a Duke of their own, as well as *Br*  
People lived well under him; he was inclin  
them what they already held. The Tre  
cluded on the 29<sup>th</sup> of *October*, by which  
had the Cities of the *Somme*, redeemabl  
his Decease for 200000 Crowns, and besid  
ties of *Gusnes*, *Bologn* and *Pontien*: *T*  
*St. Paul* who governed him had the *Con*  
and *Armagnac*, and the rest had their

assault of Methods to ease the People and redress  
 wrongs. Next day the King and the Princes had  
 interview at Vincennes, where the King told  
 de Chaulois, Brother, I know you are a Gentleman,  
 of the House of France: Why my Lord? answered  
 Count; Because, said the King, When the Fool  
 Villiers spake so boldly to you, you sent me word I  
 repent of the Words he had spoken before the  
 was out, and you have not failed even be-  
 fore time. This indeed was all Dissimulation,  
 Morvilliers was disgraced, and that the King was  
 so laisant as to conduct the Count as far as Villiers  
 in his way home; where the King not long  
 found a means to imbroil him with the Prince  
 of Liege, but the particular Actions between  
 do not come within the Compass of our Histo-  
 ry. The Duke of Bretagne departed also with Mon-  
 sieur into Normandy, to see him take possession of that  
 country, for which he had already done Homage to  
 the King.

For the Duke of Bretagne being desirous to mono-  
 polize weak Monsieur to himself, and to enjoy all the  
 profits he could confer in Normandy; and the Duke  
 of Calabria with the old Servants of Charles VII.  
 their Pretensions also, Divisions grew amongst  
 them, and it need not be doubted, but that they had not



by way of Sequestration be put into the *Oder Daydic-Lescun*, afterwards Count of *Ch*

King re-  
covers  
Norman-  
dy.

1466.

While the King was in this Country, the *Bourbon* shifting sides, did all he could to put into the King's possession, to the great Mourning of the Duke of *Burgundy*, since he whom *guardian* loved above all the Men in the World, so soon turned his Back upon him, and ruined his Designs. *Louviers* and *Pont de Larche* being given up upon Articles; and their miserable destitute of Friends, Money, Heart and escaped in a pitiful Plight into *Bretagne*, and held the Dutchy but two Months: However the King could not forget the Passion the *Normans* to have a Prince of their own, therefore he cut off a great many of the considerable Persons in that Country.

Assembly of  
Notables.

*Charolais*, as we hinted to you, was taking the *Liegeois*, and his Father Duke *Philip* so that they could not prevent this Revolution ever during the Noise that was every where of this Irruption, and the murmurings of Numbers of discontented Persons, the King comforted the People with the hopes of easing them; and having summoned an Assembly of Notables they pickt 21 Commissioners out of them, on the 16th of July began to apply themselves to the Count of *Dunois* was President, and it was amongst so many Princes, that attended it, a laudable Zeal he hath transmitted to all his Subjects to procure the publick Good.

1467.

Now the excessive Heats of the Summer bred many contagious Distempers, which more particularly swept away above 400000 and frightened away a greater number; desiring to repeople it, by an Edict inviting all Nations and People to come and dwell, he extended the same even to Exiles and Criminals, whom besides the abolition of their Offences, he restored their Privileges and Franchises: And this City, which was his Bulwark against the *Grandees*, not love him, he ordered all the Inhabitants,

sticks not excepted, to list themselves under the Colours of their Principals or Sub-Principals, that is, Colonels or Captains, and to furnish themselves with Arms; and at a General Muster made on the 4th September, they were found to be between 70 and 8000 Men, between the Ages of 16 and 60; but in the following Year, they amounted to 84000, which was very considerable in those times.

*General Muster at Paris.*

But not altogether to forget how it stood between the See of *Rome* and the *French*, in respect to the Pragmatick formerly mentioned: We are to note, at the same being still subsisting, *Paul II.* sent a Legate to the King, to get the Revocation verified, who employed the Bishop of *Angiers* to carry the Letters from the King to the *Chastelet* and the Parliament; they passed without opposition at the *Chastelet*; but in the Parliament he found *St. Romain* the Advocate opposing him to his Face; and the University sent to the Legate to signify their Appeal to the Council, and then entred it into the Register of the *Chastelet*.

But to leave this Ecclesiastical Brangling, and but just mention the Death of *Philip*, the good Duke of *Burgundy*, in the 72d Year of his Age, who was succeeded by his Son *Charles*, by whom the *Liegeois* were humbled, and to whom the seditious *Ghentois* submitted: we proceed and shew that King *Lewis*

the Essential Ministers thereof, as Members of the Body whereof he was Head; he would therefore free them from all doubts they might have of falling in the Inconveniencies of Change and Deprivation, and provide for their security; and therefore he ordained that thenceforward there should be no Office disposed of, unless it became vacant by Death, voluntary Signation, or Forfeiture, and adjudged and judicially declared by a proper Judge.

The King's Army the rest of Autumn did not move for as cunning as he was, he was amused by the Breton with the hopes of an Accommodation; however he did not totally lose time, for towards the end of the Year he debauched Rene Count of Perche the Duke of Alençon's Son, to his Interest, who betrayed his own Father and gave up the Castle of Alençon, which in those days was reckoned a considerable Place: The Breton forsook the Town, so that the King finding Monsieur and the Duke amazed at the Accident, he made use of the Pope's Legate to let them know he would refer all Disputes to the Judgment of the General States; and for that purpose summoned them to meet the first of April at Tours. There all the Deputies proved to be so much at Devotion, that they did every thing he desired, and ordained that Normandy being united to the Crown it could not be dismembred and given to his Brother; that that young Prince should be perswaded to be satisfied with 12000 Livres yearly paid him, 60000 Livres Lands assigned for his Appennage, and 60000 Livres Annual Pension, but this not to be a Precedent for the future Sons of France; that the Breton should give up the Places he had in Normandy; and if he refused, to obey they should make War upon him with all their Forces; and to do this they offered to give their Lives and Fortunes. This the King caused immediately to be signified to his Brother and the Breton; and at the same time his Army under the Conduct of the Admiral entred Bretagne, took Chantocé and Hennebont, and penetrated far into the Country; whilst himself after he had visited Paris went towards the Frontiers of Piccardy, to make use of some Instruments to disjoin, if possible, the Duke of Burgundy from them.

Lewis persuades Monsieur and the Breton and Monsieur.  
1468.

Now the Duke at that time having vanquished the  
 his, had sent to the King to desire him to leave his  
 hands at quiet, otherwise he should be obliged to  
 pour them, and indeed he advanced by long Marches  
 that end; while the two Princes terrified at their  
 shows, hastned their Compliance with the Re-  
 sion of the States: Of this the King gave the  
 Burgundian speedy notice, but he could believe nothing  
 it; nay the Duke of *Bretagne's* Herald, who car-  
 ried the News, was in danger of being hanged as a  
 traitor Person, because he had seen the King in his  
 Army. He did indeed at length believe it, however he  
 kept his Army in excellent order along the *Somme*,  
 was the first of our Modern Heroes that renew-  
 ed the Roman method of intrenching and fortifying  
 a Camp; but it was not long before the King and  
 Duke agreed to a Truce for 120000 Crowns of Gold for  
 the Duke. King *Lewis* had indeed a Genius that was  
 cunning subtil, insinuating and intriguing; and know-  
 ing full well if he could but have a Conference with  
 the *Burgundian*, he could disunite him from the other  
 or at least sow Seeds of Jealousy between them,  
 therefore negotiated an Interview, and went to  
 him at *Peronne*, without taking any Guards with  
 him but only Cardinal *Le Ballue*, the Duke of *Bourbon*,  
 Bishop of *St. Paul*, and two or three other Lords,  
 who to shew an entire Confidence: Soon after came

where *Hebert* Count of *Vermandois* had formed *Charles* the Simple to death. In short, he had lost, had he not found means to gain some of the Domesticks, among whom the excellent *Philip* *mines* endeavoured to soften the Duke his Spirits: At length they entred into a Treaty. *Oliver de la Marche* says, the King was still so unsteady as soon as he saw the Duke enter his Chamber, he said, Brother, am I safe in your House and Country, which the Duke replied, Yes Sir, And so safe, if I saw an Arrow come towards you, I would oppose my self to save you: Then he rejoined; I go, you, and will go where I have promised; but the Peace he presently swore to. Which being accordingly, *Monsieur* was thereby to have the Cities of *Champagne* and *Brie*, and the King to follow the *Burgundian* to the destruction of happy *Liegeois*, with what numbers of Men he desired. The *Liegeois* for some time defended the City very gallantly, but the Place was at length taken Sunday after Dinner, when they were less upon Guard; happy were those who could fly off the Bridge to the Forest of *Ardenne*, where yet above half of them perished with Hunger and Cold.

For as made the King applaud the Duke's Action four days after he managed it so, that he was obliged to depart, and caused the Treaty of *Peronne* to be verified in Parliament, without which, as *Commynes* says, the Treaties were of no value; and the Duke made him so ill-favoured Excuses for bringing him thither, conducted him only half a League way. Now the *Parisians* being not able to find fault with the King's Policy that brought him into a Trap at *Peronne*, he contrived a way to divert their somewhat else, by sending to their Houses to take all their Deer, Goats, Cranes, Swans, Corn, and other Creatures, which they kept for Pleasure, likewise all such Birds as were taught to whistle or speak. Perhaps they had instructed some Parrots to say, *Peronne*. But not to anticipate Matters, when he parted with the Duke, he asked him what he would do, in case his Brother would not be contented with *Champagne* and *Brie* for his Appennage. The

Lewis  
makes a  
Treaty  
with the  
Burgundian.

An odd  
Action of  
Lewis.

if he would not take it, and that the King could  
 satisfy him, he would leave it to them two;  
 but inconsiderate Words he failed not to take the  
 opportunity, as being unwilling his Brother should be so  
 Neighbour to the *Burgundian*; and that young  
 King wholly governed by the Lord of *Lescur*  
*n*, was persuaded to relinquish *Champagne*,  
 part of *Guyenne* and the City of *Rochel*. This  
 was the Loss of that young Prince: Cardinal  
 before whom the Treaty of *Peronne* had been  
 with much regret suffered it to be altered,  
 not out of love to *Monseigneur*, or that he would  
 the King still involved in some Perplexity, is not  
 known, and therefore he and *Heranoux* wrote to  
 him to dissuade him from the Exchange, and  
 offered many things to him for his advantage, tho'  
 contrary to the King's Intentions: But the Letters be-  
 ing intercepted, they made an ingenuous Confession,  
 the King sending the Information to his Brother,  
 reproached himself to be overcome by his Caresses, ac-  
 cused *Guyenne*, and went to meet him at *Tours*.  
 The Duke was inclosed in an Iron Cage, a Punishment  
 deserved, since he was the Inventor of it. The  
 Duke was put into the Bastile, where he remained  
 several years. The good Correspondence between the  
 King seemed to have been fixed; and the King, to  
 Monsieur's Heart from the Countries on this

lived in Peace, if the Constable and they  
had not still excited him to a Rupture :  
ends therein were their Fears, in case of  
Peace, the King might think of retrenching  
Allowances ; and his active Mind, if  
with Actions abroad, might be put upon  
variations at home : Besides these, there was  
trigue of the *Bretons* and Constable, in  
favour of *Monsieur* ; who, as they were  
strengthened him against the King, had  
with a Desire of marrying the Duke's  
only Daughter : And because they knew  
would not easily consent to it, they

of complying raised Soldiers at half Pay, but have been at this charge three Months, and seeing no body he took it for a Bravado, and so discharged them. The House of *Burgundy* spared their Country so, that they kept up no Militia nor Garisons in Towns; however when the Duke had disbanded, received divers Informations, that all was ready to overwhelm him; *John de Chaalons* Prince of *Orange*, and of his own Domesticks forsook him; *Baldwin* one of his Brothers plotted to poison him, the *Breton* rejected his Alliance, and the Constable of *France* lay upon *St. Quintin*: So that all he could do for present was to advance with 300 Horse, to cover other Cities on the *Somme*; but upon sight of him the people of *Amiens* turned their Backs, and received the Forces, and *Albeville* would have done as much if *Squerdes* had not hindered it. The Duke there retired hastily to *Arras*, and sent privately to the Constable, to desire him not to push things on to animosity: But the Answer returned was, that unless your would declare for him, he could not be therein, but that he was ready to undertake his life if he would give him his Daughter in Marriage.

A Note from *Monsieur*, conveyed to him in a hot Wax, assured him of the same thing; and the *Breton* gave him Intelligence that all his Cities of *Bruges* and *Chent* were ready to revolt and



Ruin. The Treaty being signed, the King *Tourain, Monsieur* to his Appennage of *Gaye* the *Burgundian* into *Flanders*.

*SIXTH* IV. now succeeding *Paul II.* in a Chair, he solicited the Christian Princes themselves against the *Turks*; for which purpose sent Cardinal *Besaron*, a Greek by Birth, and of great Merit, to the King of *France* and the Duke of *Burgundy*; the Cardinal having seen the Duke the King was so much offended at it, that he made him wait a long time before he would admit him to his Presence, and when he gave him Audience he treated him very contemptuously and with much scorn. In the mean time the Duke of *Burgundy* was satisfied with the late Truce, no more were *Monsieur de Breton*, nor Constable; so that all four found themselves in an Interest: The Marriage of *Monseigneur de Burgundy* could have been the only Tie, the *Burgundian* refused, tho he had no Inclination to it; and upon this they renewed the League, but the Constable refused other Princes to enter into it, the Duke of *Burgundy* gave the King notice of his Practices, who considering the matter, contrived to be quit with him by the same Methods; for he daily par'd away part of his Brother's Appennage, threw one rubicund and another the next, debauched his Friends, corrupted his Servants, and got them to reveal all their Master's Secrets. Now by the Treaty of *Conflans*, *John* Count of *Armagnac* had been banished from his Lands, but the King having caused them to be seized again, and with the Government of *Armagnac* bestowed them upon *Monsieur*, he growing dissatisfied, caused the Count to return; and by his assistance with the assistance of the Count of *Foix*, Lord *Albret*, he raised Men, either that he might be surprized, or for some Enterprize; but the Designs of this young Prince were, totally blasted by a detestable and cruel Remedy: He had a Lady, who was the Daughter of the Lord *de Breton*, and Widow of *Lewis d' Amboise*, whose confessor was a certain *Benedictine* of *St. John* named *Verfois*; now this wicked Monk poisoned the fair Peach, and giving it to that Lady, she at

steeped it in Wine, and presenting one half of Monsieur to the Prince, eat the other herself, of which she *poisoned*.  
 soon after ; the Prince more robust, sustained for while the Attacks of the Venom, but however did not conquer it, and at last died by it on the 12th May.

The King had in the Spring drawn his Troops towards *Guyenne* ; and in the mean time the *Burgundian* violently desiring to recover *St. Quintin* and *Amiens* entered into a Treaty with *Lewis*, who promised to foreit, and leave the Counts of *Nevers* and *St. Pol* to his Mercy. Now neither of these two Princes wanting of keeping their Word, the Duke first signed it, but the King deferred it from day to day, examining what would become of his Brother, and when he had certain advice of his Death, he ridiculed the Duke of *Burgundy*, and seized *Guyenne* again.

When the *Burgundian* heard of the Duke of *Guyenne's* Death, he was in a great Rage, and perhaps not a little concerned also that *Phil.p de Comines* should leave his Service, and go to the *French King* ; he therefore entered *Piccardy* with Fire in the one hand, and his Sword in the other, made a Bonfire of all the *French Country*, and sacrificed all that fell under his Power to his Friend's Ghost. *Nesle* taken by Assault, required all sorts of Cruelties, and such as escaped the

*D. of Burgundy ravages Piccardy.*  
 1472.

repossessed before *Diep*, and then before *Rouen*; having threatned *Noyon*, he retired to *Albeville*. On the other hand the King passed from *Guyenne* into *Normandy* to force the Duke to renounce the League, and render the Monk to him, that had poisoned *Oder-Daydic* for *Oder-Daydic* had seized and carried him to *Paris*; however the Monk was found dead in the Devil as they said, having broke his Neck the before Sentence was to be pronounced upon him. This was what the King would have, that so the guilt of the Murder might perish with the Executioner; the consequence hereof was his granting Peace to the *Breton*, which at length was converted to Peace, and the same brought about by the Mediation of *Oder-Daydic*, whom the King by great Rewards had allured to his Service. The *Burgundian* at the beginning of Winter accepted of a Truce, in February this Year, the Duke of *Alençon* with an unquiet Mind, for having contrived the League with him, was confined a Prisoner in *Laure*, and on the 18<sup>th</sup> of July, the following Year was by a Sentence of Parliament condemned to his Head; but the King being his Godson gave him his Life, and 17 Months after took him out of Prison and put him into a Citizen's House at *Paris* for good Guard, where he soon after died.

1473.

D. of Alençon's Death.

1474.

About this time *John V.* Count of *Artois* who had been once more expelled his Country by the Death of *Monfieur* seized again upon *Calais* of *Leynere*, and there surprized *Beausieu* Governor of *Guyenne*; but he enjoyed it not long, he was closely besieged therein by the King's Army, the Cardinal of *Arras*, and 'tis said, that having capitulated with him, the false Prelate broke his Faith, so that the City was attacked during the Cessation of Arms, and the Count miserably murdered in his House, while his Brother *Charles* was carried off to *Paris*.

1473.

King *Lewis* at the same time leaving the *Burgundians* to manage his Affairs in *Guelderland*, and with Emperor *Frederick*, as well as he could, endeavored to recover *Perpignan*, of which *John* King of *Navarre* had repossessed himself by Intelligence: I still

only, for the Castle was still in the *French* King *John* himself was within the Place, and above 70 Years old, made a brave defence for two months together, till his Son *Ferdinand* came to assist and relieve him. But to leave the Frontiers of *Spain*,

and return again to the *Burgundian*, whose Ambition was insatiable, he encouraged *Edward IV.* King of *England* to make a descent upon *France*, where he proposed to do as much by the Correspondence he had, they could with their Forces; and yet instead of fighting for them, he went and ruined his Army before

on the *Rhine*. King *Charles* in the mean time accumulated Enemies on that side against him, particularly the *Swiss Cantons*, whose Alliance he had

with the Cities of *Basle* and *Strasbourg*, and upon the *Rhine*, *Sigismund* Duke of *Austria*, Duke of *Lorain*, and even the Emperor *Frederick* himself: *Sigismund* with the Assistance of the *Swiss* entered the County of *Ferrete*, and caused *Hagen-*

Head, the Duke's Governor there, and the first made the *Germans* hate his Master, to be struck

The Duke of *Lorain* sent to declare War against even before *Nuz*, by a *Moor* that belonged to

Lord of *Craon*, and *Frederick* armed all the Powers of the Empire to force him to raise the Siege; yet

first not attack him, tho he was four times his

*The Burgundian*  
*besieges*  
*Niz in*  
*vain.*

1474

standing he was within ten days of taking mine, he agreed it should be put into the Hands: That done, he went post to find it at *Calais*, leaving his Forces in the Dutch but in so shattered a Condition that he durst them be seen; he conducted King *Edward* ne, and from thence went to see the Constable *Quintin*, who gave his Word he would give City and all his other Places to the *English* on their Approach, they basely fired upon so hard to express which was then greater, amazement or their Rage; but the Duke had a great many Words to interpret the Action in the best Sense, returned to the Country of *Bar* his Forces.

On the other hand, King *Edward* by the Historians is represented as a voluptuous Prince fat and slow, and that he had undertaken this War to screw Money out of his Subjects, to acquire Honour and enlarge his Dominions; and so he had carried over with him some of the Citizens of *London*, who mightily loved War that so their Toil and Weariness might make them sooner willing to have a Peace; wherefore King *Lewis*, who feared this War more than any and indeed for a time grew very penfive with apprehensions of it, found a way in the Absence of the *Burgundians*, by the Power of Intrigues, Flattery and some Presents, to dispose King *Edward* and his Council to hearken to an Accommodation; though still afraid *Edward's* Answer to *Lewis's* Herald have been, *We will talk of it in Paris*. Indeed the Proceedings of the Duke of *Burgundy*, who had made the *English* wait too long, and what was worse his double Dealing and Perfidiousness of the Council with the Approach of Winter, gave them a Pretence and Inclination to agree.

Peace between England and France.

At first *Edward's* Plenipotentiaries were King *Lewis* no other Title in the Negotiations but their Master's Cousin *Lewis* of *France*, which was forced to give way to; but at length came to a better Understanding, and agreed to a Truce for nine Years, wherein the Dukes of *Burgundy*

might be comprehended, if they pleased, upon  
 tion that the *French* should pay the *English*  
 60 Crowns of Gold in ready Money, and that  
 Dauphin was to be married to the King of *Eng-*  
*As* Daughter, for the maintenance of whom King  
 his should allow the Revenue of *Guyenne* for nine  
 rs, or 50000 Crowns annually, which should be car-  
 to the Tower of *London* for the King of *England*.  
 en the Duke of *Burgundy* had notice of what was  
 he, he posted to King *Edward*, talked big, and  
 him, he had procured him a good opportunity to  
 his Business, which he should never recover, and fo  
 his Right; that it was not for his own Interest that  
 and engaged therein; and continued he, *To let you*  
*how little I value the Truce, by St. George I will*  
*meet with the King, before you have returned into*  
*land, and staid there three Months.* Nay the Duke  
 eding all bounds of Modesty, spared not to al-  
 that he ought not to come over Sea, since that  
 ty ruined the Reputation of the Kings of *Eng-*  
 and that he wanted that \* *Lion's Heart* that was  
 ed at *Roan*; but all this bluster availing little, the  
 he was agreed to, and whilst the Kings were to  
 the Treaty, King *Edward* advanced with his Ar-  
 within half a League of *Amiens*, to whom *Lew-*  
 at three hundred Waggons laden with the best

if he would not give way, then said he, I will myself to you both. *Edward* being returned by *Burgundian* would not accept of the Truce till and in the mean time he discharged his Ind upon young *Rene Duke of Lorain*, whom he of his Dukedom all but *Nancy*, which defended above two Months. By this time also the *Or* who thought to have managed all the three by promising each of them his Town of *St.* found himself now exposed as the Butt for all to shoot at; and unhappily his Wife, who *Queen's Sister*, died: So that at last being very certain what course to take, he retired into the of the *Burgundian*, whom he guessed to be exorable, and who in effect had promised he go thither in Safety; but he was no sooner at *St. Quintin*, than the King seized it, who gave notice thereof to the Duke of *Burgundy*, requiring to deliver up that Infidel, in exchange for the conformable to an Article of the Truce between The Duke being then before *Nancy*, and would leave it, ordered the Constable to be seized from whence he was carried to *Peronne*, with that his People should not deliver him up, till a certain remote day enough, wherein he believed to take *Nancy*, and then he flattered himself to recal his Order; but the Place defending it fell to Expectation, the Constable with all his Papers ven up to his Enemies, tried and condemned in the Parliament, and on the 19th of Dec. at *Greve*; and we may add also in this Place, till the end of this Year, *Perpignan*, after eighteen Siege, and the enduring of the greatest Scarcity surrendered, and so the Country of *Roussillon* ed once more in the Hands of the French.

Constable  
seized.

Executed.

1477. But a little to proceed with the Adventure Duke of *Burgundy*, he being not content with the Conquest of *Lorain*, would go upon farther and Enterprizes, and therefore begun with the whom he would needs force to stoop to his. He refused their humble Submissions and Offers into an Alliance with him, and renounce all they ren that with King *Lewis*: His pretence to

## 6. The Reign of Lewis XI.

403

Invasion they had made upon the Lands of the  
of *Romand*, the Quarrel between them having  
ly about a Cart-load of Sheep-Skins, which  
nt had taken from them. To be short, they  
nd of an Engagement on the 5th of *April* at  
, wherein the Duke lost his Infantry and rich  
ge, and on the 20th of *June* all his Forces, e-  
he number of 18000 Men, before *Murat*; and  
in the 5th of *January*, his own Life and the *D. of Bur-*  
ar of his House, before *Nancy*; for you must gundy  
at after the Battel of *Murat*, Duke *Rene* had slain.  
*Nancy*, and the *Burgundian* besieging it aga  
ere surrounded by the Enemy, defeated and  
h three Wounds, in the 46th Year of his Age,  
: had ruled only eight. There is a vast heap  
remaining to this Day at *Muret*, with this  
on, *Caroli fortissimi Burgundiorum Ducis*  
*in Muretum obsidens, ab Helvetiis casus, hoc*  
*monumentum reliquit.* His Standards and Co-  
represently carried to Duke *Rene*, who ob-  
the Fuzils or Irons to strike which they carri-  
, What a pity is it, that when this Prince would  
nself, he could not make use of these Fuzils to  
re with? for you must know the Duke in his  
carried an Iron to strike Fire between two  
rds of Wood, whereby he intimated it was



French  
take di-  
vers Pla-  
ces from  
the Prin-  
cess of Bur-  
gundy.

As to the first, indeed he almost brought it to pass, and without much difficulty, there were Governors left that were Proof against his the Fears of losing their Estates. *Albeville* first that surrendered, and when he appeared *dy, Bische*, a Man of a mean Condition, named by the late Duke *Charles*, gave him up; while others delivered *Han* and *Bouchain*; *zin, Roze* and *Montdidier* were taken by him. Now while the King was at *Peronne*, cameadors to him from the Princess *Mary* to sue to offer him all Obedience, and the Marriage Sovereign with the Dauphin. He neither refused the Terms, but obliged them, in order to rate the Peace, to acquit *Desquerdes* of the had made to the House of *Burgundy*, and him to give up *Arras* to the French; this having already underhand engaged to our Service, and caused *Hesdin, Bologne* and *Combe* likewise surrendered to him. *Arras* had taken an Oath to the King, but soon after for what they had done, they would have some Forces that were at *Doway*, being the those that had been defeated at *Nancy*; but cut off in the Plain Field, and the Lord *de la Commander* taken Prisoner, the King went to lay Siege to *Arras*, and he was so far with Anger, that he would needs raze it to Ground; but tho *Desquerdes* interposed against that Resolution, yet many of the citizens suffered, and lost even their Lives contrary to Capitulation.

On the other hand, the Prince of *Orange* now a second time reconciled himself to the persuaded the Estates of the Dutchy and of *Burgundy*, partly by Argument, and Force, to submit themselves to him, which was easily accomplished by him, because *Verg* potent and zealous Lord of those Countries a Prisoner. Indeed *Orange* had been fed hopes of having the Government of both *diets* conferred upon him, and to have some stored to him, which Duke *Charles* had cut

by a Sentence given in favour of his Uncles the Lewis  
 of *Montguyon*: And as a farther Lure to the *seizes upon*  
 he insinuated to them, that the King did not *both Bur-*  
 upon those Countries to detain them, but to pre- *gundies.*  
 them only for the Princess against the *Swiss* and  
 ans; but when he once got into possession, the  
 was quite changed, and the King's Title declared,  
 that of Reversion for want of Heirs Male to  
 titchy, and that of Donation to the County,  
 he pretended had been given to the Crown of  
 by Count *Otho V.* of that Name, when he  
 ed his Daughter to *Philip the Long.* a  
 led the greatest Disorder in the Affairs of the *The Trou-*  
 of *Burgundy* did rise from the *Ghentois*, who *bles of the*  
 they heard of Duke *Charles* his Death, re- *Nether-*  
 their Commotions, slew their Magistrates, *lands.*  
 ized upon the Person of their Princess, and  
 would needs manage every thing at their Plea-  
 Those of her Council were the Dutchess Dow-  
 Margaret Sister to *Edward IV.* the Lord *Ravestein*,  
 Mancellour *Hugonet*, and the Lord *Imbercourt.*  
 Likewise called to their Assistance the Bishop of  
 Duke of *Cleves*, and the Count of *St. Paul's*  
 who were all divided about the Marriage of the  
 In the mean time the Deputies of *Ghent*  
 gone to the French King, on the behalf of the  
 of *Flumet*, and said they had full Power to

amused with the Marriage of his Daughter to the Dauphin, and loved his ease so much that he could not be in it.

Now *Olivier le Dain*, King *Lewis* his Barber, who would make himself to be believed to be some considerable Person, took a Commission to reduce the City of *Ghent*, as thinking he had much Credit amongst them, because he was a Country man's of those Parts; but the *Ghentens* baffled him according to his Deserts, and therefore retreating from thence he hapned to surprize *Tournay*; at which the *Gent* taking the Alarm, they went Headlong to attack the Place, and *Adolph de Guelabres* was killed upon the Retreat. Indeed their Design was he should marry the Princess, who being very glad to have been offered so from him, at last resolved which to take of many Husbands proposed to her; and then pitched upon *Maximilian* Son to the Emperor *Rick*, to whom she was betrothed in her Father's Life time. The Marriage was consummated at *Ghent* about the end of *July*; but he was so poor that his Wife was forced to be at the Charge of the Wedding his Equipage, and Maintenance of his Servants. She had little Advantage at first by her Marriage either from his Covetous Father, or rich Uncle *Stemund*: However the King in respect to the Emperor entered into some Conferences with *Maximilian*, granted him a Years Truce, and restored *Quefroy*, *Bon*, and *Cambray*, which were within the Territories longing to the Empire; tho others say, they drove out the French Garisons, and surrendered to *Maximilian*.

Princess of  
Burgundy  
married.

A Truce.

In the mean time *Trimerville* Lord of *Craon*, General of King *Lewis* his Army in *Burgundy*, treating Prince of *Orange* ill, and not restoring to him his Lands, for which he had an express Order from the King; the Prince struck in with *Vaudrey* and more of the Nobility of the Country, and drew off the whole Province. It's true, the Battle afterwards lost near *Monguyon* brought back the Dutchy, but the War did not end there as to the County: And amongst other Actions, *Craon* had shamefully raised the Siege of *Dole*, the King

ry at this and the Devastations he made, that he  
him out, and put *Charles d'Amboise Chaumont*  
Place. This was the Person who laid the Foun-  
of the first League between the Kings of *France*  
the *Swiss*, whereby he stipulated that the King  
allow the Cantons an Annual Pension of 20000  
, and as much to some particular People: In  
station of which they were to furnish him with  
men to be maintained at the King's Pay, and  
e him the first Rank amongst all their Allies;  
ch they somewhat boggled, because the Duke  
y had ever held it.

*The first  
League be-  
tween the  
Swiss and  
French.*

Truce being now expired between *France* and *War r-  
ph-Duke Maximilian*, he caused some Forces to *newed.*  
*to Burgundy*, who more by the Affection of *1478.*  
people concerned for the Race of their an-  
cestors, than by their own proper Strength,  
*towne, Chastillon, Bar, Semur*, and divers other  
with so much ease, that if the Emperor had  
his Son never so little, he had at that time re-  
ped all the Dutchy: But *D'Amboise* who had  
ad Money enough, chased him almost as easily  
in, and thereupon the Truces were renewed  
e Months.

At this time it was that King *Lewis* constituted  
ain over the Gentlemen Pensioners, and in-  
their number: the same had been a long time

Council, and continuing the Pragmatick; where he convened all the Prelates and Deputies of Universities of the Kingdom at *Orleans*; and dispatched a Splendid Embassy to the Pope, to require to revoke the Excommunication he had thundered against the *Florentines*, and that they should severely punish all the Accomplishes of that Conspiracy.

1479.

French  
take Dole.

To return again to the Actions of the Field: The second Truce being expired, *Chaumont* took the first, and scowred all the Country even to *Dole*, which being taken by the Treachery of the *Gascon* Forces, who entering therein to relieve it, introduced the *French*; they sacked and destroyed it, so that it remained for some Years buried in its Ruins. At the same time *Maximilian* with his Army laid Siege to *Tournay*, but upon the Approach of a *French* Army under *Desquerdes* he drew off from him Battle: They engaged near the Village of *Gassel*; the *Flemings* at first were forced to give Ground, but the *French* pushing it too far, the Counts of *Alsace* and *Romont* rallying some Troops, put the *Flemings* to flight, and left the Field to *Maximilian*, though more covered with the Carcasses of his own Men than his Enemies; however this Day regained Reputation to his Affairs: But the Loss which the *French* sustained this Year by Sea was of vast Consequence; for the *Normans* took 80 of their Ships laden with Wheat, coming from *Prussia*, and all their Stores of Herrings.

Maximi-  
lian beats  
the  
French.

Lewis lost  
his Senses.  
1480.

Now as all things almost went well with King *Lewis* according to his Desire, it so hapned, that being in a Village near *Chinon* in *March*, he was suddenly deprived of his Speech and Senses, and recovered neither of them in less than two days; and even after his Body remained so weak and languishing, that he could never recover his full Strength: Hereupon the Legate, who was the Pope's Nephew, took the Opportunity to intercede for the Cardinal *De la Balbe*, on his Part did so cunningly feign his Urine stopped, that the King being perswaded he could not live long, and being loth to let him die in Prison, set him at Liberty towards the end of *November*, upon condition he should leave the King.

he actually retired to *Rome*. In the mean time  
 ge, Jealousy and Distrust, which are the Signs  
 weak and ill-tempered Soul, increased upon the  
 Spirits, while he decreased in Strength: He  
 said, if they thought him incapable of acting,  
 would usurp the Government; the Duke of *Bour-*  
 ing almost the only Prince that had the Quali-  
 ties necessary for such a Pretension, he hated  
 to that Degree, that he seized his Estate, and  
 for some colourable occasions to ruine him.  
 same time, whether it were that he grew mis-  
 of his Natural Subjects, or for some other  
 n, he disbanded the *French Archers*, and raised  
 mies of Foreigners, especially of *Swissers*, in A Truce  
 head: In this Condition he was glad to make between  
 he with *Maximilian* for seven Months, to com- the French  
 in August, and the same was prolonged the fol- and Maxi-  
 Year for a twelve Month longer. milian.

I have already hinted, that *Charles Duke of Bur-*  
 a Prince whose Thoughts were ever intent for  
 desiring to imitate the *Roman Discipline*,  
 begun to keep and exercise his Men in Camps;  
 fore King *Lewis* after his Example caused one  
 made in a Plain near *Pont de Larche*, retrenched  
 locked up with Wagons; the Command of which  
 inferred upon *Desquerdes*, and posted therein  
 Foot, consisting of *Pikemen* and *Halberdiers*

*Savoy*, upon pretence that these young Princes were his Sister's Children.

*K. Lewis  
jealous of  
everything.  
1481.*

Now every thing suggesting Apprehensions to the King, he kept the Queen his Wife at a distance from him, and for these last Years kept her in *Savoy*; he bred his Son like a Captive, *boise* amongst Servants, lest he should grow spirited, and always took along with him a Prince of the Blood *Lewis Duke of Orleans*, fearing any to cultivate his Intellectuals by education. Indeed this Year he married him to one of his own Daughters, a most wise Princess; and lame, and one whom the Physicians affirmed incapable of bearing Children, since perhaps he had taken a course to prevent it. It was not long after the King's Return from *St. Claud* that he fell a time into a Swooning Fit, and caused himself to be carried to *Clery*, where he had built a Church dedicated to the Virgin; and there he received some Relief, but it was of no long duration.

*Provence  
left to  
Lewis by  
Will.*

But now to pursue all Transactions as far as we can, that interfered before the King's Death. *Charles d'Anjou Count of Mayn* dying on the 21<sup>st</sup> of December at *Marseilles*, did by his last Will bequeath to King *Lewis* his universal Heir in all his Lands and Territories to him and the Kings of *France* his Successors for ever, and most earnestly recommended to maintain *Provence* in all its Liberties, Customs and prerogatives. Now *Rene Duke of Lorain*, and the Duke of *Brittain* exclaimed against this Bequest, maintaining it ought not to be made to his Successors, while the King on the contrary justified it to them, because *Provence* was a Country governed by a Law, according to which any Person might bequeath of his own in favour of whom he pleased; the Earls of *Provence* had always called for it to their Succession, to the prejudice of the Duke, and because *Soultiers* had so managed the Duke of *Charles*, as to make these Reasons go down for Authentick, he gave him the Government of *Provence* rather the Sovereignty of *Provence* during his Life. Again, *France* had been afflicted with

*Famine and  
Sickness.*

Famine this Year, after which followed an

Astempier altogether extraordinary, that seized Great and Small, the same being a continued and Fever, which set the Head on fire, where- People fell into Frenzies, and as it were died

on the other hand, when the Affairs of *Mary Dutchess* of *Burgundy* began to be settled, that Prin- of Bur-  
cing out a hunting fell from her Horse, and died gundy's  
at *Ghent* on the 25th of *May*, with the Fruit Death.  
with her Womb was pregnant, leaving how- 1482,  
two Children behind her, *Philip* and *Margaret*,  
whom we shall hear more in the Sequel of this  
Story. But her Death revived the Troubles of the  
Country, her Husband having so little Authority  
over them that he was forced to suffer his Children  
to remain under the Guard of the *Ghentois*.  
*Charles* had indeed even last Year made himself  
Governor of *Aire* for fifty thousand Crowns bestowed on  
him; and so being possess'd with such an ad-  
mirable Post for the bridling of the *Flemings*, he  
was able to incline, as well by Policy as Force,  
to a Marriage between *Margaret* the Daugh-  
ter of their deceased Princess, and the Dauphin *Charles*,  
who was scarce two Years old, and *Charles* al-  
most twelve. The Ambassadors from *Ghent* hav-  
ing shewn the King at *Clery*, gave their Council an  
account of his Intentions, and that he required only



of to have been the occasion of his Death, which hapned on the 4<sup>th</sup> of *April* the same Year: Where they farther add, *France* was delivered from the apprehensions of many Mischiefs he might have had during the minority of *Charles VIII.*

But now more particularly to come to *Lewis* his own State; 'tis singular in History to read, what the fear of Death, and of losing Authority, made this King do during the last part of his Reign; as the dancing of young Maidens at his Court, and the numbers of Physicians that played on Flagelets, and were brought from all parts to cure him; the Processions made all the Kingdom for his Health, publick Prayers put up to Heaven to prevent the blowing of some sorts of Winds which incommoded him; a great heap of Reliques which he sent for from all Corners, even the *S. Amples* or Holy Oil, with which he seemed as if he would have armed himself against Death; the great Sum which his Physician *Cottier* had over him, who growled at him as if he were his Servant, and squeezed 300 Crowns out of him, besides many other Boons in the space of five Months; nay, he had the Impudence to day to brave him, saying, *I very well know that one of these Mornings you will chase me away, as you have done by others; but I swear by my Maker you shall not live eight days longer:* The Baths of Childrens Blood which he made use of to sweeten his sharp and peevish Humours: Lastly, his voluntary confining himself to the Castle of *Du Pleffis le Touais*, into which none could come but thro a Wicket, the Walls of which were defended with Iron Spikes, and lined Day and Night with Cross-Bars. He was every Hour upon the brink of Eternity, and yet he strove to perswade those about him that he was well, and sent Embassies to all Princes, bought up all manner of Curiosities out of foreign Countries; and made it appear he was alive, tho the bloody Effects of his Vengeance, which could die but with him.

His greatest Hopes were in a holy Hermit, *Francis Marchile*, a Native of *Calabria*, the Founder of the Order of the *Minimes*, whom he caused purpose to come into *France*, upon the same of  
We

less he had wrought ; he flattered him ; cast him-  
 self on his Feet ; implored him to prolong his Days,  
 that not ; nay he built the two Convents for his  
 rest : But the Hermit talk'd to him only of God,  
 exhorted him to think more of the Life to come  
 than this ; tho *Philip de Comines* says only, *That he*  
*ruled the King as a wise Man should do,* without  
 giving us the Curiosity of having the Particulars.  
 Monday the 25th of *August* he grew very sick,  
 was forced to acknowledg himself not only Mortal  
 in a dying Condition, but as dead ; and therefore  
 call those that were about him, *Go to my Son your*  
*father and serve him faithfully.* Then he sent for his  
 son *Amboise*, and gave him excellent Counsel, *Lewis his*  
 telling him to be governed by the Advice of *Advice to*  
 Princes of the Blood, his Lords, and other *his Son.*  
 his Subjects ; not to change his Officers after  
 his Death, to ease his Subjects, and reduce the  
 use of Money to the antient Methods of the King-  
 dom which imported the raising none without the  
 consent of the People ; for he had increased the  
 tax to 4700000 Livres, an excessive Sum for those  
 times, whereby the People were miserably oppressed :  
 he ordered them to tell *Desquardes* that they should  
 know over the Enterprize they had formed against  
 him, lest the *English* should be incens'd, that he

Golden Chain of Government, and by two Arts than had been formerly known, subtle Laws by which the Fury of his Predecessors restrained, and taught others to do the like; that *Mezeray* observes he was the first that *chers de Page*, or brought those Kings out of G Ship; which must needs be the Laws by which were limited and restrained. Then that he was to a high Degree, is manifest in that he had People to Death by exquisite Torments, and times gratified his savage Nature by being a Spectator of their Miseries: Nay, most of them were without the Formality of the Law, many drowned with a Stone about their Neck, precipitated over a vertiginous Plank, from which fell upon Wheels armed with Spikes and sharp while others were stifled in Dungeons; The Provost of his Household being alone both Witness and Executioner.

That he was devout in outward Appearance is certain, so he had a persuasive and attractive influence: He was wonderful subtil in setting his at variance one with another, and in unravelling Quarrels again: Neither must his Liberality in rewarding Services, when they hit his Fancy, go unnoted. I cannot say, as the *French* Historians do, that it was praise-worthy in not suffering an Ambassador from Sultan *Bajazet* to come nearer to him than the *seilles*, as believing one could not be a Christian who had Communication with the Enemies of the Faith: since Embassies are civil Acts of Government, and necessarily to be allowed of between all Nations. But indeed his undertaking to reduce all Weights and Measures to one Standard, and to set up a uniform Custom in all the Provinces, was very commendable: so was his Intention and Resolution to have Justice administered to every particular Person: he instituted two Parliaments, that of *Bordeaux*, which had been promoted by *Charles VII.* his Father, and the other of *Burgundy*; the Letters Patents of the First being dated June 7th 1462, and the other the 18th of March, 1476.

would not allow his Son to be brought up in good  
 care, either from an Apprehension of making him  
 growing (which indeed was ridiculous) or for fear  
 it might injure his delicate and tender Complexion by  
 Study ; not that he himself despised Learning,  
 as altogether ignorant, as some have suggested ;  
*Comines* says, *He was well enough read, that he had*  
*a sort of Education than the Lords of his King-*  
*dom, and that according to Gaguin he understood Books,*  
*and more Learning than Kings were wont to have.*  
 which we may add, that he much increased the  
 Library begun by *Charles V.* at *Fontainebleau*,  
 which was transferred to the *Louvre* by *Charles VI.*  
 He gave a kind Reception, and favourably enter-  
 tained those learned Men who made their Escape out  
 of France after the taking of *Constantinople* ; that he  
 endeavoured to induce some out of foreign Parts to  
 come into France, with large Presents ; and amongst  
 the famous *Galeotus Martinus* was one ; and  
 he gave himself the trouble of completing the  
 Reformation of the University of *Paris*, by the  
 help of *John Bocard* Bishop of *Auranches*, and a  
 scholar named *Wesel Gransfort*, a Native of *Gron-*  
*ingen* : Besides, 'tis certain the Kings of France, and  
 especially those of the third Race, have all been  
 bred in good Learning, except *Philip de Valois*.

## C H A P. VII.

*The Reign of CHARLES V.  
named the Affable or Cour*

Disputes  
about the  
Regency.  
1483.

**T**HE late King having by Will ment to the Lady of Be out mentioning the Regency, tring into his fourteenth year; Blood, I mean *Lewis* Duke of O Duke of *Bourbon*, disputed it with her, and that King *Charles* ought to be counted a cause of the weakness of his Co want of Education; his Father have fore hinted, shut him up in the Castle bred amongst inferior Servants. *Lewis* were grounded upon his being first Blood, but he himself was not yet at the Duke of *Bourbon*, as having married his Aunt, esteemed himself more proper of it than a Woman; who in France thought capable of governing, since looked upon to be fit to reign. But petitioners being not able to agree what they referred the Contest to the Determination of the General States, and the King's Council the Year following.

Assembly of  
the States.  
1484.

In the mean time, they chose a Council of Persons, whereof some were put in by another, but they were such as were bred in other Courts, and were trained up to such a manner of living learned nothing but what was necessary to produce nothing that was substantially useful. They leave these Wicked Ministers, the King met at *Tours*, whither the King's Council, the Princes of the Blood, and all the Nobles of the Kingdom, went; and the Chancellor *de Rochefort* in the great hall of the Archbishop, where it was enacted,

attained to fourteen, he should be reputed of Age; he should preside in Council, *Orleans* in his Absence, and in case he failed, then the Duke of *Bourbon*: That the Lady *Beaujeu* should have the Government of the young King, for whom a Council of 12 should be chosen, consisting of the Princes of the blood, and other most considerable Persons in the Kingdom. In the mean time, the Office of Constable was lodged in the Duke of *Bourbon*, and Governments and Pensions conferred upon *Orleans* and the other Princes.

They never had such a fair Opportunity to redress *Some Grievances* and erect Bulwarks, for the defence of the *vances redressed* Liberty as now; but the President of the *dressed* Council, divers Ecclesiasticks, Deputies of the City of Paris, and some others suffered themselves to be deluded and steered by the Court-Gale and Compass, and so betrayed the Publick Cause: However they did not prevent them from annulling most of the Donations, setting a Brand-mark upon the Memoirs of those that had been the Ministers of his Uncle, nor from discharging the People from a great part of the Taxes, and Soldiers quartered upon them. The Assembly being over, the Advocate General of Parliament, upon certain Accusations, made Pro-

the Lords of the Country at the time that the Estates were held at *Tours*, assumed the Confidence to try to force him away from the Duke; but failing in the Enterprize, he let loose all the Authority of his Princes against them, and reduced them to the Necessity of defending themselves. Now the Duke of *Orleans*, who was then at *Tours*, having a Project in his Head of acquiring *Bretagne* by marrying the Duke's eldest Daughter, he went into that Country to offer *Lords* Assistance, being persuaded that by such an Obligation laid upon him, he might help him to that great Match: The Lords indeed would willingly have taken shelter under the Protection of this young Prince, but *Lords* having forestalled them, they made Application to the Lady *Beaujeu* his Enemy, who immediately espoused their Cause. 'Tis true, this Fire hid for some Years under its Ashes, but at last broke out to the Ruin of *Bretagne*, as we shall have occasion to observe in proper Time and Place.

Charles  
crowned.

In the mean while, King *Charles* was on the 4th of *June* crowned at *Rheims* with the usual Ceremony of Magnificence; and being returned to *Paris*, he encountered with Complaints from the Duke of *Bretagne*, for having supported the Rebellion of his Subjects, but the Lady *Beaujeu*, according to her sister's wonted Method, instead of returning him an Answer, debauched his Ambassadors from his Service by making *d'Urfe* Grand Escuyer, and bestowing on *Riviere* the Mayoralty of *Bordeaux*. Indeed the Council constituted by the Estates had neither Power nor Virtue, the Lady *Beaujeu* usurped all the Authority, turning out all from the King's Service that were not at her Devotion, and brought in *Urfe*, *Riviere* and *Griville* the Great Chamberlain, who were as it were cooped up the young King, so as he was besieged. Now these People wanting a brave daring Hero to oppose the Duke of *Orleans*, likewise kept *Rene* Duke of *Lorain* at Court, till such time as the King should be at Age, to do him Justice in respect to *Provence*, assigning him an annual Pension of thirty thousand *Livres*, and a Company of an hundred Lances.

Now during these Disorders in *France*, the Scene  
 is quite changed in *England*; for *Henry* Earl of  
*Monmouth* of the House of *Lancaster*, after many  
 years Confinement in *Bretagne*, upon the Death of  
*Edward IV.* having obtained his Liberty, and *Richard*  
 having usurped the Crown with the Destruction of  
 two Nephews the Sons of *Edward*, he returned  
 to *England*, and having defeated and slain *Richard*  
 himself, got the Crown of *England* established up-  
 on himself and Family. But to return into *France* a-  
 gain, the Duke of *Orleans*, and the Constable the  
 Duke of *Bourbon*, made a new Party against the Go-  
 vernment; into which they engaged the Duke of Bre-  
 tagne, *Charles* Earl of *Angoulême*, the Duke of *Alen-*  
 con, and *John de Châlons* Prince of *Orange*, who  
 was a Sister's Son of the Duke of *Bretagne*; of all  
 these *Charles* Earl of *Dunois* was the *Primum Mobile*.  
 He was the first that spoke, and being withdrawn  
 from the Assembly, demanded an Assembly of the States;  
 to which they immediately carried the King thither,  
 he besieged and forced him to an Accommodation,  
 whereby it was agreed the Earl of *Dunois* should re-  
 turn to *Ast* in *Piedmont*. This done, they got the King  
 march against *Bourbon*, who finding him on a sud-  
 den in the midst of his Country, accepted of such  
 conditions as they would impose upon him; most of

1485.

Civil  
 Broils.



and is  
anged.

Lords of the Country for the Administration of the Publick Affairs. *Landais* being informed of this would have the Chancellor sign an Instrument, whereby all the Duke's Commanders, who had entered into that Capitulation with the Rebels, should be declared Traytors; but the Chancellor was so far from doing of that, that being summoned by the Lords to bring *Landais* to Justice, he took several Informations upon which an Order was made to seize *Landais's* Person, and the Lords of the Duke's Council and others joining in with them, he was taken in the Duke's Chamber, and by the way of the Gallows quick, sent into another World, to answer for the many Crimes he had committed.

1426.

Archduke *Maximilian* was now elected King of the Romans, and on the 12th of April crowned at *Aix la Chappelle* with *Charlemain's* Crown; he before surprized the City of *Tournay*, for which *Marechal d'Esquerdes* made a sharp War upon him and pressed him so hard, that he was forced to write to all those Cities in the Kingdom who had undertaken the Guaranty of the Treaty he had made with the King, complaining of this Unjustice done him by the Lord and the Lady *Beaugen* in the King's Name: One of his Heralds brought the Letter, which was read in the Town-Hall of *Paris*; but he received no Answer than what those about the King were pleased to dictate; and *Maximilian* proving unsuccessful in every thing, and withal very poor, he returned to *Munich*, where he caused his Son to be kept brought up.

All this while the Duke of *Bretagne* was almost overwhelmed with Grief for the loss of his *Lance*; however he was forced to contain himself, and give a General Act of Indemnity; but all the Precursives he could take, would not serve turn, for the time almost come to put a Period to that State, and it was not what Fatality hurried them to it. Now *Bretagne* being informed that *Orleans* was forming some Design against her, commanded him to come to Court; the Duke complied upon the second Summons; the next day being the 5th of *January* he went into the Country upon pretence of hawking, and fled to *Bre*

Bre

*Bretagne*, where he met with an extraordinary kind of  
 reception, even to make the Lords of the Country  
 conscious of him; and the King's Council being sensi-  
 ble of their Apprehensions, offered them all imagina-  
 ble Assistance to help them to expel the Duke, and the  
 Duke of the *French* out of their Country. The wisest  
 were not for engaging so great a Power in their  
 Interest, but the other prevailing, they made a League  
 with King *Charles*, whereby he was tied to bring no  
 more than four hundred Lances into their Country,  
 four thousand Foot; that they should be recalled  
 on as ever the Duke of *Orleans* and his Party had  
 possessed *Bretagne*; and that he should neither take nor  
 possess any Place without the consent of the Maref-  
 chal de *Rieux*, nor lay any Claim or Pretence to the  
 Kingdom. But whatever the Treaty contained, the  
 King's Council were persuaded *Bretagne* appertained  
 to the King, by virtue of a Cession made by the Heirs of  
 the House of *Montfort* to *Lewis XI.* nay some of the *Bretons* them-  
 selves, who loved to swim in deep and large Waters,  
 hoped to find fairer Fortunes in the Court of  
 France, confirmed them in this Opinion; and it was  
 by his Design they carried the King to the Frontiers  
 of that Country: Being at *Amboise*, he had private  
 Intelligence that the Count of *Dunois*, contrary to  
 his Commands, was returned from *Ast* to *Pernay* in *Poi-*

in an Iron Cage, condemned by Parliament to be the fourth of his Estate, and to be confined to one of his own Houses for ten Years.

At the same time the Earl of *Angoulême*, and Lord de *Ponts* made a rising in *Guyenne*, where *der-Dayde*, Brother to the Earl of *Cambray*, his *Saintes*, *Fronsac*, *la Roche*, *Dags* and *Bayonne*, while the Duke of *Orleans* raised Men in *Bretagne*. But the Towns of *Guyenne* surrendered at first sight and coming of the King; *Albret* had got some Men to support them, but durst not appear; and at length the King dividing his Army into four Parts, they were sent to *Bretagne* in as many several Quarters, the King himself staying in the mean while at *Laval* to see the event: The Duke hereupon withdrew to the Heart of his Country, while the French took *Ploermel*, *Vannes* and *Dinant*; and then it was that the Lords who perceived the Error they had committed in making them to come in: This done, they besieged *Nantes* wherein the Duke himself was with all the Soldiers he had left him, and from whence he had dispatched the Count of *Dunois* to *Henry VII.* King of *France* for Assistance: This Count being two or three times repulsed back by bad Weather, armed the Common People of the lower *Bretagne*, at least to the number of 60000 Men, and was so fortunate, that with this confused Multitude he so terrified the French, as to get Opportunity to put Relief into the Town, which afterwards valued not the Siege that after about Weeks time the Enemy raised: But the King's Force brought the Lord of *Albret* to disband and retire at the Castle of *Nantron*, upon the Borders of *Normandy*.

French  
besiege  
Nantes in  
vain.

1488.

During these Transactions, *Desquerdes* by intelligence surprized *St. Omer* and *Tournay*, and defeated the Forces of *Ravesteyn*, whom they had drawn thither by a pretended bargain for the City of *Brabant* where the Duke of *Cleve* and Count of *Nassau*, being on foot, were taken Prisoners. And indeed they went worse and worse with *Maximilian*, who was last seized and made Prisoner by the People of *Brabant* and with much ado he got them to forbear delivering him up to the French King, and obtained his Liberty.

to leave this Prince to retire to his Father the  
 r into *Germany*, and the Government of his  
 lip and his Territories to *Albert Duke of Sax-*  
 e are to observe that besides force of Arms,  
 nil proceeded in a form of Justice against the  
 in League with the *Breton*; and in *February*  
 ; in Parliament, ordered the Dukes of *Bretagne*  
 ans to be summoned to appear at the Marble  
 and the same was sent by the Provost of *Pa-*  
 mpanied with a Member of that Court, and  
 of Usher, and all Advantages of Defaults  
 en against them. Now *de Rienx* and some of  
 ls of *Bretagne*, finding he went much farther  
 : bounds of the Treaty, they petitioned him  
 oceed, and offered to send the Duke of *Orle-*  
 f the Country with all the *French* that belong-  
 a; who indeed shewed themselves willing e-  
 lay down their Arms, and retire to their re-  
 homes, provided they might live in Safety :  
 gen thinking she was now above all Danger,  
 itly replied, *The King would have no Rival nor*  
*but he would not stop there, but proceed with his*  
*ce* : The Lords perceiving his Intentions here-  
 xciled themselves to their Duke, Marechal  
 openly declared for him, received some of  
 into *Amennis*, and took upon him the Com-  
 the Army : but for *Peter* and *Quintin* he

French  
defeat the  
Bretons.

but being on their March, they heard it had capitulated as well as *St. Aubin*; but the King's Army under *movile* apprehending they would go and retake *last Place*, marched up to oppose them, and fought a Battel with them on the 28th of July, near the River of *Orange* between *Rennes* and *St. Aubin*. The Battel was very bloody, but at last *Trimouille* obtained Victory; and the Duke of *Orleans* with the Prince of *Orange*, who fought on Foot for the Bretons, made Prisoners, and six thousand of their Men. The Duke of *Orleans* was soon after set at Liberty by the *Beaugien*, he having married her Husband's Daughter, and she made him the King's Lieutenant in *Bretagne*; but she kept the Duke of *Orleans* in safe Custody in the Castle of *Lussignan*, and afterwards in the Tower at *Bourges*. There was some days before the Battel a strange Pre-*lud*ge of this Battel observed in the Air, for great Flocks of Choughs, and a multitude of Ravens grappled so furiously with their Beaks and Talons against one another, that a vast deal of Ground was covered with their dead Carcases.

Peace be-  
tween  
France and  
Brittany.

Indeed the Fidelity of the Breton Lords was shaken by this rude shock of Fortune; the Duke of *Brittany* encouraged to declare the Pretensions of his Son to the Dutchy, as being the Son of *Mary* Sister of the late Duke, as he alledged, partly Heiress of Duke *Francis* caused *Dinan* and *St. Malo* to fall into his Hands. But the People of *Rennes* very bravely refused to be nothing, rather than unsatisfactory. The Duke thus distressed was advised to endeavour a Peace with the King, to whom he sent the Count of *Dunois*, and wrote with a submission usual to the Dukes of *Bretagne*. The King had some Pretensions to the Dutchy, and required the Guardianship of the Duke's Daughters: but they agreed upon Arbitrators to judge the Right; but in the mean time he consented to grant them a Peace, upon condition he should not make any Foreign Leagues and Alliances, and let him retain the Places he had conquered in that Country. Since the Duke grown very old, overwhelmed with

urt with a Fall from his Horse, died on the 9th of *Duke of*  
ber at *Nantes*, having reigned 32 Years; and *Bretagne*  
Will appointed the *Mareschal De Rieux* to be *dies.*  
ughters Guardian, with whom he joined *Oder-*  
is, Earl of *Cominges* his intimate Friend, and  
ed the Lady *Chisteau Briand* to be their Gover-  
who were only two, *Ann* and *Isabel*, whereof  
st died about two Years after; but now they re-  
to the City of *Guerrande*.

e Duke of *Lorain* after the Decease of the *Breton*  
iled himself to the Court of *France*, in hopes  
taining some Assistance for the recovering of  
Kingdom of *Naples*; and the opportunity was  
apt, since most of the Barons of that Coun-  
d revolted against King *Ferdinand* because  
Tyrannies, and invited *Rene* to go and take  
on of that Crown. *Innocent VIII.* favoured  
and his Gallies waited a long while in the  
of *Genoa* to take him on Board, and several  
e *French* Nobility shewed a great deal of for-  
ness to follow him; but those that had the Ascen-  
over the King thwarted him all they could, as  
ng him the Glory of this Conquest; so that mak-  
so long a Delay, the Pope agreed with *Ferdinand*,  
he whole Design miscarried.

t to resume the Affairs of *Bretagne*, tho they were *The Af-*  
Frenchmen, as yet, the *French* side was the *fixed* of

1439.

Disputes were like to have come to Blows: The French fearing to be besieged in *Recon* by the Dutch, would needs retire to *Nantes*, into which the Marechal would not admit her, but only her own Domesticks; upon which she goes to *Rouen*, where the Inhabitants gave her a solemn Reception. The Dutchy was divided into two Parties, one stuck to the Dutches, and the other sided with the Marechal her Guardian.

1450.

During these Turmoils King *Charles* fell sick and *Conquer*, and the Question was put in his mind whether he should compleat the Conquest of the Dutchy by Force of Arms: But this being opposed by *Chancellor Rochefort*, who represented that a Christian King ought not to measure his Conquest by the Sword, but his Justice; and that it was a shame to despoil a Minor, and innocent Person of his own Kindred and Vassals, when he might have the Dutchy by Marriage, which was a more honest and commendable Method, it was ordered to be laid aside: To which in all probability the 6000 *English*, with which she garisoned her, did not a little contribute, to the great regret of *Lady Beuven*, who had already a Grant of the County of *Nantes*. But all this could not keep them at home, tho upon divers Ruptures they had some Negotiations; and the *French* and *Breton* still being thought too much a Party, the King and Dutches agreed upon *Maximilian* of *Austria*, Duke of *Bourbon*, a Prince of great Integrity, withal no great Friend to the *Lady Beuven*. Commissioners met at *Frankfort*, where it was provisionally agreed, that the King should restore the Places to the Dutches, except *Sr. Aubin*, *Fongeves* and *Sr. Malo*, which were sequestered in the Hands of the two Arbitrators, who should bring them up to those to whom the Dutchy should be judged of Right to belong; that in the mean time they should turn out all the *French* and *English* soldiers, and the two Parties produce their Titles to certain Lawyers appointed to examine them; and that the Deputies should meet again on the 25th of *March*, to hear the sentence pronounced by the Arbitrators.

Now in the midst of these Traverses there was  
 her Treaty secretly carried on, of which the  
 King's Council had not the least Suspicion; and that  
 the Marriage of *Maximilian* with the Dutchess,  
 which was so far advanced the preceding Year, that  
 the Dutchess was married to him by his Proxy, who  
 was the Earl of *Niffau*. The matter was concealed  
 some time, and yet nothing executed of what was  
 agreed on at *Francfort*; so that King *Charles* at last  
 took up Arms again, and caused his Forces to march  
 to besiege the Dutchess in *Renes*, but they were  
 soon repulsed, for what Reasons we do not know.  
 The Princess pressed for Assistance from *England* and  
*Spain* in vain, *Maximilian* never furnished her  
 with above 2000 Men. In the mean time *Bretagne*  
 was invaded on all hands by the *French*; and *Albret*  
 determined to see himself supplanted by a *German*, gave  
 the City of *Nantes* up to the *French*, upon condition  
 of the Compensation promised him for those Pretensions  
 he had to the Duchy; his Claim being derived  
 from his Wife *Frances* of *Bretagne*, Daughter to *William*  
 Count of *Limoges*, the youngest Son of the House  
 of *Montmorency*.

1494.

During these Disorders nothing could have been  
 so easy for King *Charles* than to have taken the  
 Princess away by Force: However he was advised to



endeavoured to form himself to Goodne Inclination, giving his Mind to the Study of useful Books, and delighting in the Company of knowing Men; but the flattering Court Humour a while and serious Peace proves soon Matter, diverted him from all his Exercises, and plunged him anew in Deb

The Marriage being consummated with *Ann*, the *French* were considering back *Margaret* of *Austria*, to whom *Charles* contracted: At which *Maximilian* cruel and justly accused *Charles* of having forlorn his Wife, to ravish the Wife of his Father's

for the Charge of his Expedition, and 25000  
 p<sup>rs</sup> yearly, for the Charge he had been at in  
 King the Bretons. And this Capitulation being  
 somewhat indefinitely made, without fixing when it  
 should determine or expire; it made the French look  
 on it as a Tribute, and the Truth if it is, it was  
 both to this King and Henry VIII. his Son, longer  
 it could have continued upon any Compensation  
 Charges. In the mean time Maximilian surprized  
 Brabant and St. Omers; but at last agreed to a Truce  
 for a Year, in the Name of his Son Philip, but he  
 would neither be comprised nor named in it himself.  
 On the other hand Spain was grown very great under  
 Ferdinand and Isabella, by the Conquest of Granada,  
 the intire Expulsion of the Moors, and the Dis-  
 covery of a new World: And that nothing might be  
 wanting to the Happiness of that Country, Charles  
 ordered the Cardinals of France and Cardinal de  
 Lorraine without requiring the three hundred thou-  
 sand Crowns for which they were engaged, but only  
 to promise that he should be a Friend to France, but  
 would not be lulled asleep in the Expedition to  
 Naples, as was supposed the French intended hereby.  
 Ferdinand made use of two Monks to compass it;  
 one of them being Confessor to the Lady Beatrix,  
 Duchess of Bourbon by the Death of her Husband's

Beginning  
of the War  
in Italy.

on Foot concerning his Title to the Kingdoms, and Arguments used to inflame that year with the Desire and Love of so fair a Conquest. The Earl of *Salerno*, and those Gentlemen who were banished from *Naples*, having taken *France*, made the first Proposals of it; then *Sforza* became the principal Agent, and he King to resolve upon the Enterprize. The whole Thread of *Lodowic's* Design, which with incredible Artifice, tended to no more than to make himself Master of the Duchy of *Milan*, which he had married his Sister to the King of the *Romans*, and had secretly procured the Investiture of that Duchy, as vacant for the Emperor's Homage: But this he must wrest from *John* his elder Brother's Son, who held it by a Title. *John* was indeed a young Man of little Countenance, having married a valiant and beautiful Wife, the Daughter of *Alphonso* Duke of *Calabria*, of *Ferdinand* King of *Naples*, she was able to give Assistance of her Brother to retard his designs. And here for the better understanding of the History we are to observe, that in those days there were five great Governments, or Powers in Italy, two Republicks, *Venice* and *Florence*, the Papal State, the Kingdom of *Naples*, and the Duchy of *Milan*. *Venice* was governed by their *Senators*, *Florence* the *Medici* had usurped the whole. *Lewis Sforza* governed the *Milanese*, he being a crafty, ambitious, sanguinary and crafty Person, and very commonly surnamed the *Moor*, not only because of his black Skin, but likewise because he exceeded them all in Treachery. *Alexander* the VI. was Pope, and the Character which the faithful Men of his time give of him is, that he had intruded into the See, and that no *Mahometan* Prince was more impious or faithless than he; and if any one exceeded his Abominations, it was *Cesar Borgia* his own Son. In *Naples* reigned *Ferdinand* the Bastard, *Alphonso* King of *Arragon*; he had two Sons, *Isabella* and *Frederic*, and the first had a Son named *Alphonso* about 22 Years old, who seemed to be of a good Disposition, having gained the Love

ity and People, whereas his Father and Grand-  
 were held in execration amongst all their Sub-  
 for their Oppression and Wickedness. Now  
 being two Men that wholly influenced King  
 in his Mind, who were *Stephen de Vers* his Cham-  
 in, and *William Bricconnet* his Treasurer General  
 Bishop of *St. Malo*, the War was undertaken  
 by their means, tho *Bricconnet* having afterwards more  
 rightly considered and weighed it, became of a  
 contrary Opinion; so that the matter was once  
 laid on, afterwards laid aside, and then again  
 under Consideration and in Debate. There was  
 Wisdom enough in the King's Council, no Money  
 in the Coffers, no Assurance of his Allies, for in *Italy*  
 and none but the perfidious *Lewis*; whereas the  
*Venetians* were under-hand against him, and  
 the Pope *Alexander* and *Peter de Medicis*.

On the Rumor of this War, the King of *Naples*  
 offered *Charles* Homage, and pay him a yearly  
 sum of 50000 Crowns; but these Offers being re-  
 fused, he died of Grief towards the beginning of this  
 year at the Age of 72, and was succeeded by *Alphon-*  
 At length the King leaving *Paris* in July after he  
 conferred the Regency upon *Peter* Duke of *Bour-*  
 he remained a while at *Lyons* in great uncer-  
 tainty what he should do; then again at *Vienne*, from  
 whence he wrote to his Mother that he was sick of the

1494.

lands at *Rapallo*, thinking to make the *Genueses* the Duke of *Orleans* who commanded the *Fr* beat the others, and *Daubigny* having w Troops out-marched *Ferdinand*, and got be prevented his getting into *Romagna*.

*Charles* being incouraged to proceed by s cesses, at *Turin* borrowed the *Duchess* of *Rings*, and at *Cassal* the *Marchioness* of *Ma* and pawned them for 20000 *Ducats*. *Lew* Wife came to receive him at *Vigence*, and acc him as far as *Piacenza*; he arrived at *Parma* of *October*, and there found Duke *Galeazzo* some Dose his Uncle *Lewis* had caused to him, of which he died soon after; while *Lew* the King to go and reap the Fruit of his W and made sure of the *Dutchy*, without an had to *Galeazzo's* Son, who was yet but five The *French* indeed trembling with horror and edness of this Wretch, who would bring to be a Witness of a Parricide upon the his Cousin German, they thought it much safer to revenge his Death and conquer the *M Milan*, than march any farther; and not the Death of that great Soldier *Desquerd* hundred it. After which *Lodowic* by his Intrig ing gained *Stephen de Vers*, overthrew all t Counsel: And then the King marched for *Tuscany*, where taking a small Castle by *Ston* Confines of *Florence*, and then the Fort of *Sa* upon Articles, with the Defeat of some marching up under *Paul Urfine*; this so a *Peter de Medici*, that he consigned four *Pl* the King's Hands, that were the very *Keys* Country, to keep them for such a limited t agreed he should borrow two hundred thousand in Gold of that City.

*Lewis Sforza* fancied the King would have Places into his Hands, and therefore lent h Ducats; but that being fairly refused him, off himself, but left *Emiliaries* about the watch his Motions. *Pisa* now crys out for and the King grants it; *Florence*, at all times to the *French*, took this opportunity of the  
Ap

Charles  
successful  
in Flo-  
rence.

proach, to banish *Peter de Medicis* by a Sentence of the Senate, and recovered their Liberty; and on 17th of November the King entered that City with Army in Battel-Array, himself armed at all Points, his Lance upon his Thigh. Here the *Florentines* by Force, and partly by good Will, entered a Confederacy with him, which was proclaimed in all the Cities of *Italy*, with a Manifesto importing that the King was come thither only to chase the Tyrants, and from thence to carry his Arms against the *Turks*.

This prodigious Success of the *French*, and their Train of Artillery, bred a Terror in all the Country; young *Ferdinand* soon retreated from before *Vigney* even to *Rome*, and his Uncle *Frederic* getting of *Leghorn* returned to *Naples*: The Places about strove who should first surrender, and the *Or-* made their Peace with the King; nay the Pope *Charles* himself was forced to let him enter into *Rome*, he enters *Rome*. he retired to the Castle of *St. Angelo*, from whence he thought it best to capitulate, and grant him what he desired; and more particularly, to let him 3 or 6 of his best Places for a certain limited time, the Investiture of the Kingdom of *Naples*, for *Borgia* his Natural Son, and the Cardinal of *Archie* for Hostages, with *Zemes* the exiled Brother

the See of Rome: The French replied smartly, and the Dispute grew so hot, that the Ambassador cut the Treaty in pieces before the King's Face, and this so incensed them, that they could scarce forbear offering Violence to his Person. The same day he had News of *Alphonso's* Flight to *Messina*, having first resigned his Crown to his Son *Ferdinand*, after which he did not long survive.

The Misfortunes of this House, or rather the Divine Judgments pursued the Son, as they had done the Father and Grandfather. *Ferdinand* posted himself at *Cancello* near the Abby of *St. Germans*, to obstruct the Passage into his Kingdom; but as soon as ever the *Marschal De Rieux* drew near to attack him, he was treated, and his Troops disbanded. *Trevise* came up to the King, which set an Example to all the rest to do the like; *Naples* shut her Gates against him, so that the poor Prince retired to the Isle of *Jelly*, leaving the Defence of the Castle of *Naples* to his most trusty Officers. *Charles* on the 22d of February made his publick Entry into *Naples*, after which the Castles did not hold out long; and thus in fifteen Days *Charles* conquered the whole Kingdom of *Naples*, except only *Brindes*, which made Pope *Alexander* wisely say, *The French marched into Italy with Clubs in their Hands, to mark out their Lodgings, rather than with Swords to fight.* But this Sun-shine of Fortune so dazzled the young King and his Courtiers, that they scarce had any care at all of the Government; several Cities that had set up the Colours of the French, turned to the *Aragonians*, for want of sending any body to take possession of them for the King; his Favourites on whom he conferred the Government squandered away the Stores, his Soldiers lived at Discretion, and his Lords grew insolent; the People were not eased, no Justice done to the Gentlemen of the *Angevine* Faction, who had been dispossessed of their Estates; so that the Love they had at first for the French was converted into Hatred, and this made them forget the Troubles they underwent under the preceding Tyrants.

Now whilst the King and his young foppish Courtiers spent their time in Feasting, Dancing, Gam-

K. Charles  
conquers  
Naples.

In the like ; the *Venerians* endeavoured to engage the Pope, Emperor, Arch-Duke, *Ferdinand* King of *Spain*, and *Lewis Sforza* in a League against them : It was a whole Year before it could be perfected ; he at first would by no means engage therein, but the contrary did his utmost to obstruct it, till having obtained his own ends, he grew zealous in the promoting of it. The King being informed hereof, he put upon Thoughts of returning home, but first he would needs make his triumphant Entry into *Naples* Horseback, in an Imperial Habit, with a Crown on his Head, the Globe in his right Hand, and the Scepter in his left, under a Canopy carried by the chief Lords of that Country, and the People shout-  
aloud, *Long live the August Emperor* : In which he was conducted to the great Church, where he received anew their Oath of Fidelity. This done, he left in all 4000 Men to defend that Kingdom, and the Country supplied him with twice as many : He made the Duke of *Montpesier* Vice-Roy, a good Man, of little Judgment, and one that loved his ease such that he seldom got out of his Bed till Noon ; *Laigney* had the Office of Constable conferred upon him, and the Government of *Calabria* ; *George de Sully* of the Dutchy of *Tarento*, *Guerre a Gascon* that of *Provence*, and *Stephen de Vers* the Dutchy of *Natal*.



Charles  
defeats the  
Confeder-  
ates.

the Command of the Marquis of *Malina*, they had been thought they would have done great against the King, who was hardly 9000 strong; they durst not attack him in the Mountains, but waited for him at his Descent near the Village of *Piacenza*, about nine Miles on the other side of *Piacenza*, whence the King sent to the Confederates to demand a Passage, but receiving no answer, they came on the 6<sup>th</sup> of July, and the Confederates in less than a quarter of an hour were beat back from every Camp with the loss of three thousand men; whereas on the King's side there did not fall above 100. So that this important Action secured him the *Ad*, where he arrived on the 15<sup>th</sup>, much fatigued and tired. From hence he went to *Quieri*, where he was solicited by the *Florentine Army* for the restitution of their Towns. He consulted those Captains that had the Charge of them, but they were so easy and little able to resist, that instead of obeying, they presumed to sell the *Ad* to the *Lombards*, and the rest to the *Venetians*.

The Confederates, after the Battel of *Formigosa*, being ly besieged, and much straitened the Duke of *Guise*; and the King at length went to the relief of *Orleans* to order to relieve him, and his Army daily increased. The 1<sup>st</sup> of August was set on foot, whereby they allowed him three days after his whole Garrison, and half hanger starved, to travel out of the *Castle*, which was left to the Charge of the Inhabitants, and if they did not finally agree, the Duke was to return into the *Castle*, where some of his men kept guard. Some few days after, when the *Castle* was almost perfected, came 16000 *Swiss* and *French* Army, upon which *Orleans* insisted in giving the Enemy Battel; but they thought it prudent to make up matters with *Sforza*, and him *Naples*, and the Port of *la Spezia*; and he promised the King to furnish him with 5000 Men and Horses for the Conquest of *Naples*, to pay 80,000 Crowns, and 5000 to the Duke of *Guise* to make restitution of the eight Gallies taken at *Genoa* at *Rapido*, and to allow the *French* their Fleets in that Port.

Articles of  
Peace.

The King was so impatient to be gone, that he would stay till the execution of this Treaty; but as soon as it was signed, he went away with all speed for Lyons, to dance, masquerade, and follow his Amours; which being observed by *Sforza*, he would not perform one Article of it. *Ferdinand* King of Naples did on his Part take advantage of his Absence and Neglect, and the Confederacy contributed to restore him to his Kingdom: He had an *Aragonian* Army sent to assist him under the famous *Gonsales*, vulgarly called *Go-*  
*gon*, and a Fleet at Sea under *Villamarino*. The  
*Spaniards* likewise set two Armies on foot, and imagined *The Affairs*  
 that this Conjunction would in time gain them the of Naples.  
 the Empire of Italy; for *Ferdinand* engaged *Brando*  
*Orlando* to them, and soon after their Admiral *Gri-*  
*ffith* seized upon *Monopoli*, *Mola*, *Siponte* and *Trani*:  
 The French could hardly save *Taranto*; *Cajeta* revolted,  
 and cooped them up in the Castle. On the other  
 side, *Frederic* and *Gonsalvo* made themselves Masters  
 of *Regio*, *Sr. Agatha* and *Seminaro*, in which last Place  
 were shut up by *Aubigny*, from whence sallying  
 to remove him, they lost the Battel; but his Sick-  
 ness made the French Affairs decline with him. *Fer-*  
*dinand* was more fortunate at Sea; for as soon as he  
 was met with some Ships upon the Coast, *Salerna*  
*Mulry* set up his Colours, and the Citizens of *Naples*,  
 durst not stir for three days together on the

upon his approach, found their Intrenchments so well guarded, that he could not get near the Castle, and therefore returned to *Nola*.

In the mean time *de Vers*, whom the King had made Duke of *Nola*, being gone into *France* to solicit Succours, the *Florentine* Ambassadors, Cardinal *St. Ieger*, and the very *French*-men themselves, had at first dissuaded the King from the Expedition, unanimously declared, that it now concerned the Honour of the Nation to preserve their Conquest, but Cardinal *Briçonnet*, who had a great hand in the Affairs of the Government, from what motive is not certainly known, hindered the rest from acting. However, the King at last resolved upon a new Effort, and he departing from *Tours*, where he left the Queen his Wife, went first to *St. Dennis* for Devotion-sake, and then to *Lyons*, giving all the necessary Orders for this Expedition into *Italy*; but then when it was believed he would have passed the Mountains, he returned to *Tours*, whither one of the Queen's Maids of Honour as it were forcibly attracted him; and so these great Preparations amounted only to six Vessels laden with Men and Provisions for *Cajeta*: Inasmuch that *French* Affairs in *Naples* declined from bad to worse. *Aubigny* was still sick, *Percy* marr'd his great success by his intolerable Pride, the *Germans* mutinied for want of Pay, and the *Garlions* were unprovided, so that to compleat these Misfortunes, *Montpejer* suffered himself to be shut up by three Armies of *Venetians*, *Spaniards*, and *Aragonians*, and for want of Provision capitulated to give up the whole Kingdom in a month. Indeed *Aubigny*, *Guerre*, and others would not comply with that Treaty; but in short, most of the *French* Soldiers being now in a manner worn out in this Country by Sword, Pestilence or other means, and *Montpejer* dying himself at *Puzzoli*, the Confederates pushed on their work vigorously. From *Agosafuo* went into *Calabria*, reduced *Mandrea* and *Cosenza*, and besieged *Daubigny* in *Gropoli*, who defended himself so bravely, that he obtained honorable Articles, whereby he was allowed to carry his Forces into *France* with flying Colours; but the surrender of *Cajeta* was comprehended in it: So

1496.

French  
decline in  
Naples.

was nothing now left of this glorious and sudden  
 :st, but a villanous Disease, got first by the Spa-  
 in the Isle of *Florida*, where it was almost epi-  
 l; from whence they brought it, and infected  
 gdom of *Naples*, whose Women that had been  
 with this Venom, communicated it to the

*The Origin  
 of the  
 French  
 Disease.*

he mean time *Ferdinand* King of *Spain* (for so  
 People called him, and the *French* by way of  
 y, short-coat *Jack*) made an Inroad towards  
 ne in favour of *Ferdinand* King of *Naples*; but  
 g a Repulse by *St. Andre*, who also forced the  
 f *Salses* in sight of the *Spanish* Army, they  
 it best to enter into a Conference, which to-  
 he end of the year produced a Truce for some  
 . However, the *French* persisted still uneasy  
 ing their loss of *Naples*, about which several  
 were set on foot, and divers Means projected  
 overing that Kingdom again. Sometimes they  
 receive the Homage and Tribute of *Frederick*,  
 ag of that Country, in the room of his Ne-  
 rdinand deceased; at other times they were  
 eing with the Pope, who was Lord of the Fief,  
 n to begin with the *Milanesse* under the Con-  
 the Duke of *Orleans*. To this purpose new  
 were made among the *Swiss*, and the Cavalry  
 d as far as 1497; but the Duke refused that Com-

1497.



States, and that upon extraordinary Occasions, intended to defray the Charge of the Civil List of his own Revenue and Demesns, and the antient Debt belonging to the Crown: But these good Intentions coming not into his Head, till he was almost incapable of putting them in execution, they proved of none to the Nation.

*Charles VIII.  
his Death  
and Cha-  
racter.*

He had resided for some time past at the Castle of Amboise, where he was building; and there on the 6th of April, about two in the Afternoon, being in a Gallery from whence he was looking upon those that were playing at Tennis hard by, he was seized with an Apopleck Fit, which made him fall down backward. Those that were about him observing this, they laid him down in the same place on a pitiful Bed, where he expired about eleven at night, and they took him to ride Post-haste to the Duke of Orleans, Successor, with the news: However it were, many believed he was poisoned with an Orange. He reigned fourteen years and a half, and had lived 27, and 6 Months. Of three Sons he had by Ann of Breton his Wife, not one of them attained to be three years old. He was a Prince but of an ill Shape, low of stature, weak and sickly; his Shoulders were round, Face deformed, his Speech low and broken, but his Eyes quick and sparkling, his Thoughts sudden and sharp on great occasions, tho not lasting. He had much Goodness, Humanity and Courtesy to all; but had so little Spirit, and was so careless, that he was but little obeyed: Indeed we do not find that he ever turned away any of his Domesticks, or as much as offended any one of his Subjects with a harsh Word.

*The Death  
of Savan-  
rola.*

Next day after this Prince's Death, happened the Death of *Jerom Savanrola*, a Dominican, a generous Man for Truth and Liberty. He had foretold, either by the strength of his Reason and Judgment, or by Divine Revelation, all those grand Revolutions in Italy, he had preached up the Reformation of Princes, and in the Court of Rome, asserted that God had led them by the hand, and defended the Liberties of his Country against all those Factions that started up against him, for which the wicked Pope having excommunicated him, the Cordeliers exclaiming against him in the

Pol.

1 Sforza and the Venetians soliciting his  
Magistrates of the contrary Faction caused  
not alive.

## C H A P. VIII.

Reign of LEWIS XII. surnamed  
the Just.

Duke of Orleans succeeded Charles VIII.  
3 the next of the Male Line, and his Coun-  
ard and fourth degree : He was crowned on  
6 May at Rheims, on the first of July at  
and the day after made his publick Entry  
where by a Decree of the Council he as-  
title of King of France, and of both Sicilies,  
6 Milan, which last they will have to be-  
by the Right of Valentine his Grandfather.  
e immediately, applied himself to ease his  
1 to the due Administration of Justice. As to  
diminished the Taxes year after year, tho  
already easy enough, because he knew the  
chequer was like the Spleen, the less it is,  
salthful the Body Politick ever finds it self.  
bhorred Impostions so much, that for the

Lewis re-  
forms the  
Govern-  
ment.

Lewis is  
married  
and mar-  
ries.

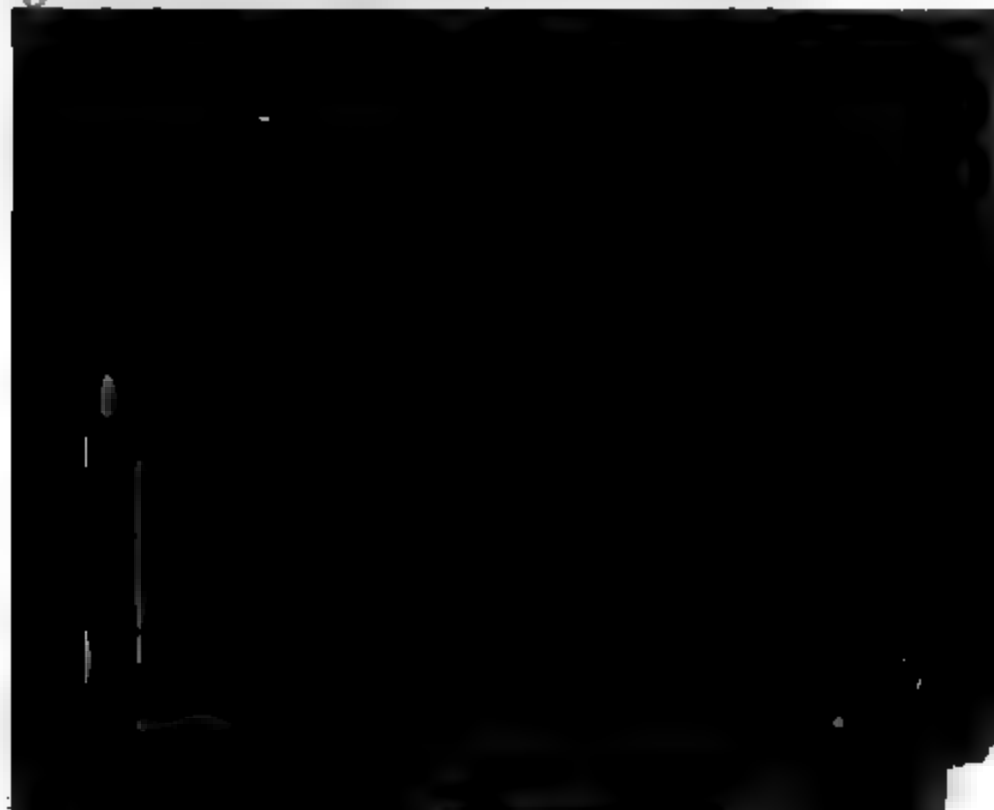
Minister; in recompence of which the King  
to marry *Charlotte*, the Daughter of the Duke  
and engaged the new Duke to serve him  
very of the *Milaneze*, with a Promise  
part, that he would afterwards assist him  
all those petty Lords, who detained the  
*mandiola*, that now for about two Ages  
the Pope's Power was much in the Way  
usurped in Sovereignty by their respective

The King's Marriage with *Jane* was  
the Commissioners, upon a clear Proof that  
had forced him to it, tho in truth he as-  
sumed it: and being now at liberty

Ferdinand and Isabel, and afterwards of Arch-  
 duc Ferdinand withdrew his Forces out of Italy,  
 and the Places he held in Calabria to Frederic;  
 Duke by the Treaty recovered his Towns of *He makes*  
 on condition he should do the King Homage *Alliance*  
 country, and for those of Flanders and Cha-  
 ere was more difficulty to agree with Max-  
 ho was engaged with Sforza, for which he  
 ed large Sums of Money, and had already  
 ny to enter into the Dutchy of Burgundy;  
 having been repulſed by the Count of Faux,  
 ie having not Treasure enough to ſatisfy his  
 lature, he was ſoon perſuaded to a Truce for  
 ths.

Meantime the Florentines and Venetians, ha-  
 poſed their differences, the latter confederated  
 is againſt Sforza, for which they were to  
 be Towns of the Milneſe on their ſide of  
 , and they fancied they ſhould ~~xxx~~ have the  
 ng's part alſo, who would ſell or buy it, as  
 eſſor had done Naples; but they were miſ-  
 their Calculation: On the other hand, the  
 Lodovic with all his Craft and Policy, had  
 nd to ſtand by him, no not ſo much as the  
 Ferrara his Father-in-law, and was there-  
 to have recourſe to Maximilian, and Sul-  
 er.

King's Forces in Italy entered the Milneſe on the





Creatures, took Money of the King for the City which was supposed to have been impregnable. The King who was then at *Lyons*, immediately went to *Milan*, into which he made his Entry in a Doublet, and sojourned about three Months in that City, where he presently took off all warth paid Imposts, allowed the Nobles the Liberty of Arms which they enjoyed not before; and thus engaged them to be more tight to his Interest, he gave a considerable part of his Demesns amongst them, particularly he was liberal to *Frenke*, on whom he likewise conferred the Government of the whole Duchy. All the Princes of *Italy* except *Frederic* congratulated his good Success, and the *Florentines* engaged to assist him in the Conquest of *Naples*, upon condition they would assist them to recover *Pisa*. After this he was obliged to make good his Engagements to *Cecilia*, who by his help recovered the Cities of *Perugia* and *Ferri*, in which last was *Catherine Sforza* together and Turreis of the *Riari*, whom he led away prisoner to *Rome*.

But the change which hapned at the same time in the *Milanese*, retarded his Progress, *Lewis* having to re-enter; there were few *French* in the Towns; Nobility were offended at the Pride and Insolence of *Trivulcio* their Equal, and could not be pleased with the Liberty the *French* took with their Wives: He sent upon *Lodowick* with five hundred *Burgundians*, and 12000 *Swiss* returned, and was received with open Arms; *Como* expelled the *French*, *Trivulcio* fled from *Milan* in the Night, and retired to *Mortara* with his Cavalry; in short all Places submitted to *Lodowick*, he took the Castle of *Milan*, and some of those the *Venetians* held. But behold a strange turn of Fortune, *Trivulcio* with a good Army from the King meeting him near *Novarre*, which had newly surrendered, the *Swiss* in his Service refused to fight, and retired to *Novarre*, whither he was forced to follow them, where next day being discovered in a Common Soldier's Habit, he was seized, and sent to the King at *Orleans*, from whence he was removed to *Loches*, where he was shut up till his Death ten Years after, with a Severity so unusual and contrary to the Mercy of

Lodowick  
taken Prisoner.

1500.

Prince, that it was thought to be a visitation from Heaven. And thus we leave this ill and unfortunate Man, and his perfidious Swiss Guard, and in their Passage to take the City of *Beaugency*, which was an Inlet for them, when they got fit, into the Dutchy of *Milan*.

This Revolt cost *Milan* the Heads of ten or twelve of its Chiefs, and a Sum of two hundred thousand Crowns; but upon Good Friday, the Cardinal of *Lyons* received the *Amende Honorable* of those Peopel, in the Town-hall, and in the King's Name pardoned them; the other Cities were fined moderate Sums, which appeared rather like Subsidies than Punishments.

In the mean while the Apprehensions the King of *Maximilian*, hindered his Forces from marching on to the Conquest of *Naples*, but during his Treachery to him, he sent a Detachment under *Beaumont* to *Pisa* in favour of the *Florentines*, and another under *Allegre* to assist *Cesar Borgia* to expel the French from *Romandiola*. *Beaumont* failed in his Enterprize; but *Borgia* without striking a Stroke, drew *Pesaro* and *Rimini* into his Nets; *Fayeno* also the next Year, after a long resistance, was forced to surrender: The Protection which the King granted to *Bentivoglio* and the *Florentines*, kept him from seizing *Bologna* and *Pisa*, as he had a great mind to do.

a safe Conduct into *France*, where he had 30000 Crowns allowed him, and the same continued even after the *French* were driven out of *Naples*.

*The Spaniards conquer their Share.*

*Gonsalvo* on his side had as little Troubling the other part of the Kingdom ; For his Son *Alphonso* into *Tarento*, which he was very pregnable, having left the Care of him to the Earl of *Pontentianne*, and *Bilbo* who timely capitulated, and promised to hold it but six Months ; had they held it but six, the difference hapned between the *French* and *Spaniards* the young Prince and it - but *Gonsalvo* the

was sent to him to treat about it, with a magni-  
 Equipage, his Retinue consisting at least of 800  
 : The Emperor insisted much upon the Release  
 of *Sforza*; his Brother the Cardinal of *Asca-*  
*ra* set at liberty; and a mutual Promise was  
 for the Prolongation of the Truce, as also on  
 Emperor's part of the Investiture, but only for  
 King's Daughters and not for his Sons: This Ex-  
 ce was made, because he was desirous of having  
 King's eldest Daughter, and that Dutchy in Dow-  
 e *Charles* his Grandson; wherefore the Arch-  
 Ambassadors being come to the King at *Lyons*,  
 Marriage was agreed the 10th of *Aug.* and con-  
 again by the Archduke, and *Joan of Castile* his  
 in *Nov.* in their Passage thro *France* into *Spain*.  
 were magnificently received at *Paris*, and the  
 Duke took his Seat in Parliament in the Quality  
 of *France*. The King and Queen entertain-  
 ed for 15 Days together at *Blois*, and caused  
 to be conducted to the Frontiers with all imagi-  
 Honour, nay even with the power of granting  
 in every City they passed thro.

to return again to *Italy*, the Limits for the Di-  
 of the Kingdom of *Naples* having been not well  
 ed, there arose a dispute about the Country of  
 of very great Importance, because of the

War be-  
 tween the  
 French &

the *Florentines*, there was a League formed of great Persons for the Restoration of *Peter* formerly mentioned to be expelled; but he brought all the petty Princes of *Italy* and spared not the King of *France* himself, who was mightily complained of to the King by every body; but he being as politick as wise, how to appease his Anger, by forcing them with grievous Menaces to surrender up to the *Florentines*, whereby he gained reputation at Court, that the King renewed his Alliance with *Alexander VI.* which drew the hat of *Italy* upon him, and perhaps the Curse of *Lewis* indeed left *Italy*, and returned the way of *Genoa* too soon: However they were in a short time driven almost out of all of *Caputana*, *Puglia* and *Calabria*; and found himself pent up in *Barletta* without Food or Ammunition, so that the War had been if the *Venetians* had not speedily supplied him. *D' Aubigny* had been believed, he would have led the whole Army to have forced him; but the Duke of *Nemours* unluckily divided them into two Bodies to besiege the other Towns, while wisely timing his Affairs, recovered his Liberty. It's true, the Arch-Duke and his Wife returned to *France*, had a Conference with the King, and treated of an Accommodation touching the Kingdom of *Naples*, whereby it was agreed his Son should be married to the King's eldest Daughter, and have *Naples* for her Dowry; that the King in the mean time should enjoy their Partitions, and the Country in debate should be sequestered into the Duke's hands. *Ferdinand's* Ambassadors refused the Treaty, the Duke of *Nemours* upon notice obeyed it; but *Gonsales* refused to submit to it, he had a positive Order from *Ferdinand*; for a Regiment of 2000  *Germans*  being newly come from *Milan*, the Assurance he had that the Pope and the King declined *Lewis's* Interest, and the Informer told him that 4000 *French* landed at *Genoa* had for want of Pay, raised his Courage; and himself of being owned King, provided he deserved it.

A Treaty  
about  
*Naples*.  
1503.

This and other Incidencies gave a strange turn to  
 things; *D'Angoy* who ought to have drawn things  
 to length, and wait for the French Succours, made  
 so much haste to fight the Body of the Army com-  
 manded by *Cardinal Beaufort* and *Lesclapart*, on the 21<sup>st</sup>  
 April near *Limona* in *Calabria*, being the same  
 place where a few Years before he had got a memora-

ble Victory, but now met with a contrary Fate.  
 He was by his Defeat in some measure obliged to  
 change his Fortune against *Gonsales* before he was reinforced by these victorious Troops: He engaged him near  
*Signoles* in *Puglia* on the 28<sup>th</sup> of the same Month, with a worse misfortune than the other, for he  
 was slain upon the Place; *Angoy* escaped to *Angola*,  
 where he was besieged and quickly forced to capitulate,  
 that all his Men should quit the Kingdom, but  
 himself to remain a Hostage till that were fully per-  
 formed.

And now *Gonsales* carried all before him, *Naples*,  
*Avella* and *Aversa* opened their Gates to him; and  
*de Navarre* having sprung a Mine under  
*St. Jean-Neuf*, that also was soon surrendred; the  
*de Del Ovo* held out but three Weeks longer,  
 but had like to have been taken by the same new  
 action: However there remained still divers Places  
 in the Possession of the French, as *Aquileia*, and the

Suspence, that he might hold the King so too, till he should make haste to relieve the Castles of *Naples* and *Cajeta*, that still held out: But when *France* let him know by a Courier he should not leave the Court of *France* till he had fully satisfied the King in this matter, he sent Ambassadors thither, who disowned his Proceedings, as having exceeded his Commission, which was not true. After which to gain time by new Tricks, a Proposal was made to surrender the Kingdom to *Frederick*, but *Lewis* would not give ear to any thing from a Prince he could not trust, and commanded them to depart his Kingdom; as for the Arch-Duke he was still civilly treated, and invited to return into *Flanders*.

Great Preparations  
of the  
French.

Wherefore *Lewis*, far from putting up the Affront, set four Armies on Foot, three at Land, and one for the Sea; the greatest by Land was commanded by *Trimouille*, and consisted of 18000 Foot, and 2000 Men at Arms, who were to recover the Kingdom of *Naples*; the other three were to attack Spain. The first commanded by the Lord *Albret* and the *Marschal De Gie*, were to make an Irruption into *Fontarabia*, being 5000 Foot *Swiss* and *French*, and about 1000 Men at Arms; the second by the *Marschal De Rieux*. Almost twice the number had Order to enter by *Roussillon*, while the Fleet was to scour the Coasts of *Catalonia* and *Valencia*.

*Trimouille* moved slowly towards *Italy*, and he arrived in the Territories of *Sienna* fell sick, and the King substituted *Charles de Gonzagues* *Margrave of Mantua* in his room, whose Faith seemed to well founded, being a reconciled Enemy, that the King himself had forbid the *Florentines* but the Year before to take him for their General. When they were come near *Rome*, *Pope Alexander* hapned to die by a strange Accident, and overturned the vast Design of his Son *Borgia*. The manner was briefly thus: He having a Desire to enjoy the Spoil of *Cardinal de Medici*, had made an Appointment with the *Pope*, and sup with him in his Garden, and caused Bottles of exquisite Wine to be brought thither, such as was mixed and prepared to poison their Food. Now it hapning that the Father and Son came thither

early and dry, by reason of the heat of the sun, and called for some Drink, while the Servant was privy to the Secret was gone somewhere out the way, another gave them some of that same wine; the Father who drank of it unmixed, died the day, *August 17.* but the Son more vigorous, mixed some Water with it, had time to use Remedies, and being wrapped up in the Belly Mule recovered, but remained in a languishing all his Life after, and was at last slain in 1516. Encounter, by a private *Gens d' Arm* who knew not, after he had for some time refugiated himself to *John d' Albret* King of *Navarre* his Wife's brother.

As to return again to the Marquis of *Mantua* and French Army, he made a Bridge over the *Gariglian*, under the favour of his Cannon passed his Army in sight of *Gonsales*, tho the very same day the French Commanders entertained some Distrust of his success, because it seemed to them he spared the Spaniards, when if he had followed his Blow he had easily defeated them, and recovered the whole Kingdom. Some there were also that accused him of a secret Correspondence with the *Spaniards*, wherefore he feigned himself sick, that he might have an opportunity to withdraw, when he took along with him a part of the Italian Cavalry, while the rest



day, that the Soldiers might depart freely, either by Sea or Land, and all Prisoners released without Ransom; but *Gonsales* interpreting this in his own Sense excluded such as belonged to the Kingdom of *Naples*. *D' Ars* would not be comprehended in this Treaty, but retreated with Trumpets sounding and Colours flying, quite thro all *Italy*. The cause of these Misfortunes was laid at the door of the *Financiers*, and *Herot* the Intendant was banished with so much the more Justice as being in the King's Favour, that yet he had a greater love for Money than for the Honour of so good a Master.

K. Lewis  
sick.

The other Armies having done nothing memorable against *Spain* it self, we are to observe here that a Truce was made between the two Kings, for their Countries of *France* and *Spain*, by the Mediation of *Frederic*: *Ferdinand* made the poor Prince believe he was ready to restore him the Kingdom if *Lewis* would consent, and proposed to bestow his Sister in Marriage upon *Alphonso*, she being the Widow of *Ferrand* the young King of *Naples*. In the mean time King *Lewis* his Discontent and Trouble of Mind for so many ill Successes, for the loss of his Reputation, and failing to detect all those *Spanish* Intrigues, were so great as to cast him into a Fit of Sickneſs, which brought him to extremity; the Queen believing him to be dead sent away her Equipage for *Bretagne*, which being stopped by the Mareſchal *De Gie*, he incurred her Indignation, and she could never forgive him who was born her Subject; but he was prosecuted with the heat, that the King was forced to send his Process to the Parliament of *Tholouse* as the most severe in the Kingdom, where yet they could find no colour to condemn him to any other Punishment, than to be banished the Court.

Now the *Spanish* Proposals for a Peace being rejected, the King made an Alliance with the Emperor and Arch-Duke, whereby they confirmed the Marriage of his eldest Daughter, or of the second in case she died, with Prince *Charles*, which the King caused to be signed by *Frans de Valois* his presumptive Heir, and other Princes of the Blood: Hereupon the Emperor gave him the Investiture of the Dutchy of *Mil*

him and his Children, as well Males if he had any, as two Daughters, provided he paid 120000 *ss* in two six Months, presented a pair of Gold every *Chr. stmas*-day, and assisted the Emperor 500 Lances, when he went to take the Imperial *cn* at *Rome*.

The unfortunate *Frederic* King of *Naples* died about *me*, and that Great and Generous Princess *Isabella* Wife of *Ferdinand* departing this Life also to the end of the Year, her Death changed the *st* of all Princes: The Power of the Arch-Duke augmented by the Kingdom of *Castile*, and the *ce* of *Henry VII.* King of *England*, whose Son *Ed* had married *Catherine* his Sister-in-Law, be- create some Fears in *Lewis*, some Confidence in *Maximilian*, and some kind of Jealousy in *Ferdi-* himself, who perceived that his Son-in-Law *Ed* not leave him the Administration of *Castile*, *Ed* had ordained by her Will. By these Motives and he made a Peace, upon which *Ferdinand* *Ed* *Germain* the Daughter of *Jo'n de Foix* Vis- of *Narbonne*, and of *Mary* the King's Sister, conceded to him his share in the Kingdom of *Ar* for her Fortune, upon condition it should all *Ed* her Husband if she died first, but should re- to *Lewis* if she survived and bore no Children. *Ed* exiled from *Naples* and the Gentlemen of the

A Peace  
between  
Lewis and  
Ferdi-  
nand.  
1505.

Treaty, which was to restore t e  
 pay the 50000 Florins for the l  
 send 500 Lances to attend him into  
 formed every thing but the Payment of  
 which was not yet due, but under-  
 Duke of *Gueldres* against the Arch-B  
 some Jealousy in the Heads of the Pope  
 insomuch that they desired the Emperor not  
 into *Italy*. Pope *Julius* set a great v  
 Power he gave *Lewis* to dispose of the  
 the *Milanese*, and other things; and in return  
 was to employ his Forces to recover B  
 from *Bentivoglio*: But a right Unde  
 not long between them, for *Ju*  
*Genuese* to revolt from *Lewis*, fr  
*vestein* retired, leaving them to c a  
 was a simple Dyer, named *Paul* *ivova*.  
 peror also on his part, as well as the Pope,  
 up this Flame as much as he could; yet b  
 and the other left them in the Toil they  
 them to: They had indeed raised a Fort  
 Passage into the Mountains that surround  
 and had posted themselves near it with  
 litia; but the King approaching with 2000  
 took it upon the first Assault, and  
 rent; which astonished them so much,  
 brought him the Keys of the City without  
 Terms with him; into which he  
 Entry on the 29th of *April* in Arm  
 the People cried for Mercy, and the  
 Children clothed in white threw thei  
 his Feet, so that there were none of t  
 save *Justinian* and *De Nova*, but he  
 30000 Ducats upon them, which t  
 in building of Forts to bridle them.

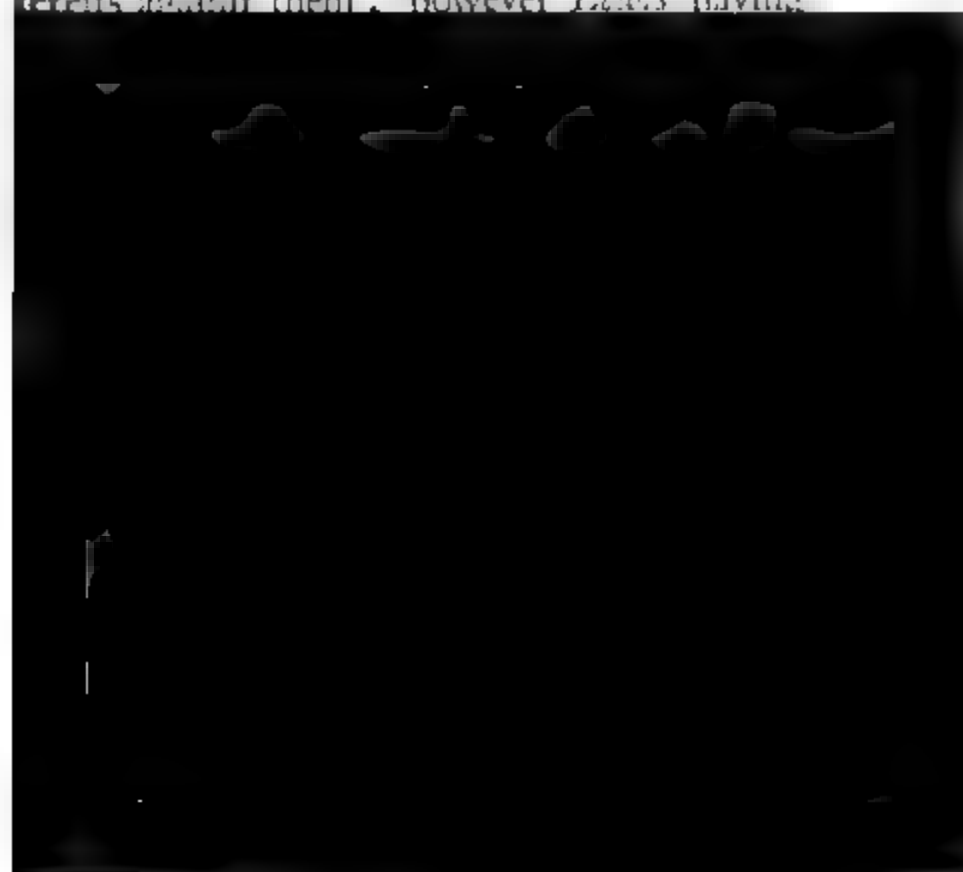
*Lewis* in his Return had a Confer  
*Ferdinand*, for you must know that  
 dying in the Bloom of his Years, a  
 Son *Charles* under the Guardianship of t  
 (who took care to let him have su  
 consisted not with the Benefit of  
 upon the Death of her Husband grov  
 posed as to lose her Senses, Fe

*Lewis and  
 Ferdinand  
 meet.*

govern the Dominions of his Grandson ; and  
 view between him and *Lewis* hapned to be  
 us, where they treated one another with all  
 ble Respect and Demonstrations of mutual Af-  
 : *Lewis* went first to visit *Ferdinand* in his  
 and he returned the Visit on Shoar, and they  
 viably to preserve the Peace between them.  
 year time the Princes of *Germany* in the Diet  
 once being much heated against King *Lewis*,  
 ing his Army at *Genoa* was designed for the  
 t of *Italy*, they promised the Emperor great  
 ; but when they heard of that Armies being  
 d, they would do nothing ; while the King,  
 d *Swiss* re-united against *Maximilian*, who  
 would have passed along the Vally of *Trent*  
 6000 Men only, the *Venetians* blocked up the  
 , at which he was extremely offended. How-  
 / thinking fit to make a Truce with him for  
*Lewis* was much concerned they had done it  
 his Concurrence, and had excluded the Duke  
 res ; and this Affront made up the measure  
 n or twenty more he had received : The Pope,  
 and *Ferdinand* hated them no less for different  
 nd particularly because they had encroached  
 h of their Territories.

1503.

indeed a hard matter to unite so many dif-  
 ferents against them : however *Lewis* having



they detained from them, that the Pope should admonish them to make Restitution of them, upon pain of Excommunication; and that the Emperor should grant the King the Investiture of the Duchy of Milan purely and simply for himself, for *Francis de Valois* and all their Descendants. The *Spanish* Ambassadors would not sign it till he had fresh Orders, nor the Pope till the *Venetians* should refuse to give up *Ferrara* and *Rimini*, for which he would have abandoned the rest. Nothing appeared of all the Treaty but the Confirmation of the Peace between the Princes, and the League was kept so secret that the *Venetians* could sooner to know it by its Effects than Information, or other Discovery: They were strangely surprized to find King *Lewis* on the other side of the Mountains beginning a War upon them with 40000 Men, and the Pope thundring at them with his Excommunications.

§ 509.

Lewis  
very suc-  
cessful a-  
gainst the  
Venetians.

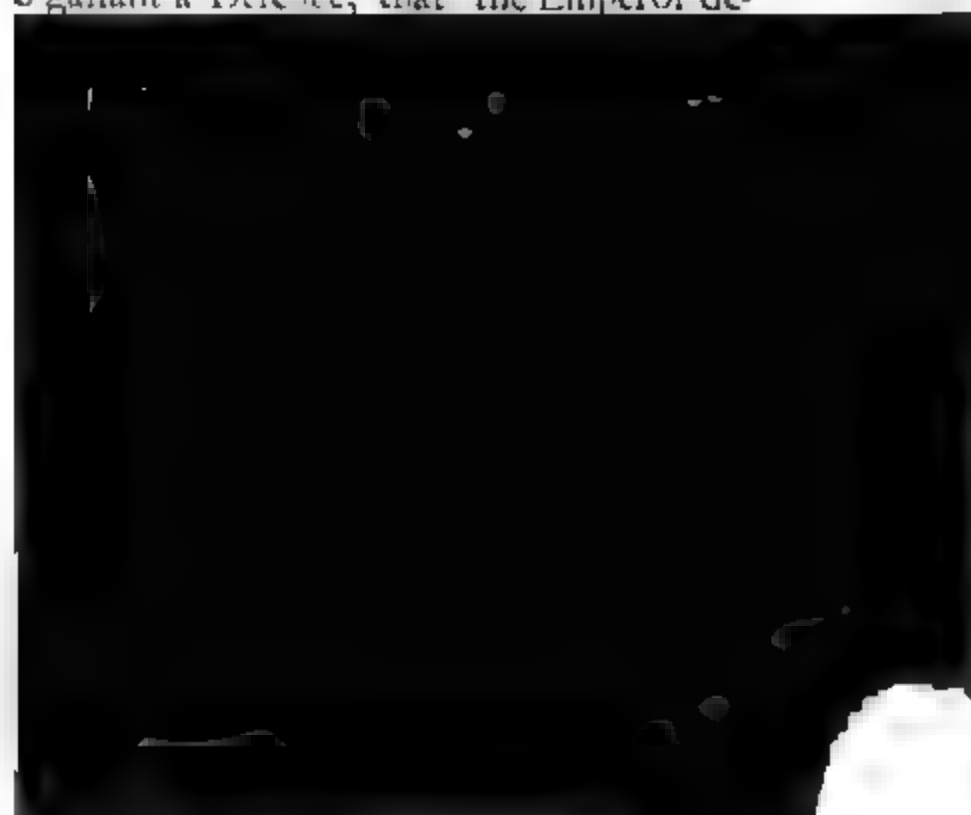
The King having passed the *Adda*, pursued the Army so close, that on the 14th of May he fought and defeated them near the Village of *Agnadel* within four Miles of *Caravaz*, where all their Infantry was cut off, and their General *Alviano* having lost an Eye was taken Prisoner. Upon this the King in fifteen days recovered all the Places they detained from him; he might also have taken *Vicenza*, *Padua*, *Verona*, *Trevise*, and all those belonging to the Emperor, the House of *Austria*, but their Deputies that brought him the Keys he sent to the Emperor, who put Garrisons in them. The Pope had also an Army of about 12000 Men in *Romagna*, and *Ferdinand* a small Force in the Gulph, to make his Advantage as he saw occasion. But this was too much against that Noble Republick, who were now in such a Consternation at the loss of the Battel of *Agnadel*, that despairing their being able to keep any thing in the *Terra Firma* they resolved to shut themselves up in the Islands of their Gulph, and therefore commanded the Governors of all Places that belonged to the Pope or *Ferdinand* to open the Gates to them, and recalled the Magistrates from *Verona*, *Padua*, *Vicenza* and other Towns, upon which the Emperor had any Pretence. Thus they were strangely cooped up all on a sudden: nay some will have it that *Lewis* drew so near

Volleys of Random-shot to be made against Venice it self.

it were, *Lewis* thinking he had done all, *Milan*, and sent the Cardinal of *Amboyse* for, between whom and the King there was a Day assigned for an Interview at *Guar-Borders* of the Valley of *Trent* and the Count the Inhabitants of *Treviso* having in the denied Admission to a Governour whom he had sent thither, and put up *Venetian* Code this Accident an Excuse that he could

II  
Resistance of *Treviso* making the *Ven-*  
: that they had too hastily abandoned what  
the *Terra Firma*, they resumed fresh Cou-  
rty by Force, and partly by Surprise, re-  
most important City of *Padua*, about the  
*ewis* returned into *France*. The Emperor  
concerned hereat, and therefore with the  
the Confederates, and more particularly  
h, he resolved to lay siege to it. His Ar-  
l of 36000 Foot, 1800 Men at Arms, and  
ight Horse; but there were 12000 Foot in  
2000 Horse, 200 young Noble *Venetian*  
who every one of them were resolved to  
that City, the Preservation or Loss where-  
the Fate of their Republick: And indeed  
o gallant a Defence, that the Emperor de-

The Siege  
of Padua.



treated him with an unheard of Haughtiness obliged the Pope to come and meet him at *logna*, and would confer with none but him, obliging his Gentlemen to treat with those Cardinals sent to him.

Pope Julius  
was dis-  
satisfied.

*Trivulzio* therefore renewed the War of *Concordia*, and upon his approach with the Duke to *Bologna*, the Pope retired to *Rome*, left the Cardinal of *Pavia* with *Francis Maria* *Orsini* his brother's Son in the Place with some and the *Venetians* in the Neighbourhood; in that way he met with three mortal Displeasures, That the *Bolognians* had expelled his Soldiers, That his Army was dispersed, and, That the said *Maria Orsini*, his Nephew, had upon some Quarrel killed the Cardinal of *Pavia*. Besides, he saw issues thro which he passed, the Indiction pointing to a General Council at *Pisa* on the first of the same having been approved of by the *French King* in their Letters Patent of *July*, the *Mock-Sanctity* being thus distressed, he called for an Accommodation, but as soon as he understood the *King*, tired with the importunate Scruples of *Trivulzio* had ordered *Trivulzio* not to meddle with the *ecclesiastical* state, he appeared more stubborn and more capable than ever, and by his Bulls convened the Council to meet at *Rome* in the *Lateran* Palace, degrading that of *Pisa*, and would degrade the three concerned in the calling of it, unless they appeared in such a limited time to answer for what they had done before him. Indeed *K. Lewis* his Negligence and the *Emperor's* Chimerical Irresolutions heightened his rage: The *Pisans* had little respect for this, and from what Insultations soever it came about often quarrelled with the *French* Soldiers, the *Members* were so alarmed, that they resolved to transfer it to *Milan*, where they met with no better Government nor Security.

In the mean time, *Julius* having concluded a League which they named the *Holy*, with the *Spaniards* and the *Venetians*, for the Peace of the Church, he said, abolishing the Council of *Pisa*, reconstituted the *Lands* belonging to the *Holy See*, and the *ex-*

those out of *Italy* that would obstruct the Execution  
these Matters; their Confederate Army under *Bologna*  
*Anna*, Vice-Roy of *Naples*, laid siege to *Bologna* besieg'd in  
beginning of this Year, and *Brescia* received the vain.  
*Francois* in, who besieged the Castle, when young 1512.  
suddenly overthrew them, and all their Designs;  
on the 16th Day of the Siege, while the Snow fell  
thick as to prevent his being discerned, he entred  
*Bologna*, and the Besiegers thereupon quickly drew  
with no little shame. From thence marching with  
choice men towards *Brescia*, he by the way de-  
stroyed *Bailloni*, who commanded part of the *Venetian*  
Army: Then entering into the City by the way of the  
River, he forced their Works and Intrenchments, slew  
many men, and expelled the Enemy; which three grand  
actions being performed in less than 15 days, raised  
the name of this Young Prince above all Commanders  
of his time.

*The Vene-*  
*tians worst-*  
*ed by the*  
*French.*

Notwithstanding all these Advantages, the Pon-  
tific League being daily reinforced with some Troops,  
*Florentines* renounced the Friendship of the *French*;  
report was spread of a sudden Irruption of the  
*English*, and the *English* were just upon breaking with  
the *French*. Now *Lewis*, that he might not have so many  
enemies at once, ordered *Foix*, during the Torrent of  
good fortune, to give the Army of the League battel, na-  
med *the Battle of Ravenna*.

*The Battel*  
*of Raven-*



Emperor *Maximilian* at the same time were entring into the Country.

French  
lose Milan,  
Genoa,  
&c.

In short, the *French* Troops being a number, wholly abandoned all the *Milimilian Sforza* was restored to that *Swiss*, who declared themselves *Protestants* revolted, and created a Doge of, about the same time *Henry VIII.* sent a nounce War against *France*; and th forsaking *Lewis*, entred into a new Alli *Julius*. Hereupon the Council of *Pap Milan* to *Lyons*, and were condemned *Lateran*: *Julius* also put the Kingde

est of *Guyenne*, that he landed a great Army *R. Ferdi-*  
*ar Fontarabia*; but *Ferdinand* having for a hand con-  
 formed a Design to conquer *Navarre*, instead *quers Na-*

with the *English*, fell upon that unhappy  
 which was basely abandoned by its King  
*Ibret*, who retired into *Bearn*; so that *Fer-*  
 ing got now into possession, made use of the  
 ll for the detention of it, since it was thereby  
 to the first Occupier, because *John* was said  
 Abettor of the Council of *Pisa*, an Ally of  
 King, and an Enemy to the Holy See. In  
 time the Succours which the *French* King sent  
 being ill conducted, did him no service; for  
 of *Longueville* Governour of *Guyenne*, and  
 Duke of *Bourbon*, who commanded them, could  
 ; so that the King sent *Francis* Duke of *Va-*  
 r, who in despite of the Duke of *Alva* entred  
 , and besieged *Pampelona*; but the want of  
 s, and the Inconveniencies of the Season,  
 n to decamp at the end of six weeks; and the  
*rainand* having reaped what fruit he could  
 by this War, did readily agree to a Truce *Makes a*  
*nce*. On the other hand, the Wrath of *Fu* *Truce with*  
 ng no bounds, he framed a Decree in the *France.*  
 i. Name to transfer the Kingdom of *France*, and *1513.*  
 of the most Christian King, to the King of  
 but in the mean time the point of subli

Swiss de-

Voices carrying it for the former, *Tr*  
march on with the Van Guard, while *Tr*  
yet tarry for some time longer at *Nov*  
the *Swiss* if they made any Sallies; but  
ing some Lands of his own in the Place  
ordered to post himself, and being beside  
haughty Man, he took another way, an  
*la Riota* in a boggy Ground, and cut  
with deep Trenches, so that the Horse c  
service, nor be able to succour the Foot.  
time, the *Swiss* in *Novarre* marching o  
the night, and having joined the other B  
riously charged the *French* Army by t

the Cities that had yielded to the *French*, submitted to the Mercy of *Sforza*, and for their defection were punished with large Fines, which served him to pay *Swiss*. Hitherto *Maximilian*, tho he had abandoned the King, yet he had not formally declared himself; finding the Opportunity seasonable, he entred into Hostility against him, and then *France* was in the eminent danger than it had been in for a long time before; for the *Swiss* on the one side entred by the Duke of *Burgundy*, and the Emperor with the King of *England* fell upon them in *Picardy*.

French  
lose Milan  
again.

A strong  
Confederacy  
against  
France.

The *Swiss* with 25000 men of their own, in conjunction with the Nobility of the *Franch Comte*, and *German* Horse under the Duke of *Wirtemberg*, lay siege to *Dijon*: But *la Trimouille* having defended it for six weeks, endeavoured to divert the terrible assault that by the taking of this Place must have fallen upon *France*; whereupon he entred into, and so he managed a Treaty with them, as to send them into their own Country, upon condition the King should pay them 600000 Crowns, renounced the Council of *Pisa* and the Dutchy of *Milan*: He had no express offers for this; but thinking he might be allowed it for the saving of all *France*, and thereupon giving up hostages, the King refused to ratify the Treaty. At the same time the King of *England*, and the Em-

**Tournay Churches.** *Tournay* fearing the like Fate, surrendered in good time to the King of England, who built the Citadel to bridle it.

**Lewis yields to the Pope.** K. *Lewis* however bore up bravely against all the Adversities, but he had a domestick Trouble that was greater than those of all his Enemies, which was his own Wife, who moved with Scruples common to her Sex, could not endure he should be at variance with the Pope, and maintain a Council against him: so that having a perpetual Noise in his Ears upon these two Points, and being at last quite tired with her importunities, and the Remonstrances of his Subjects, he renounced the Council of *Pisa*, and by his Procurator adhered to that of the *Lateran*, his Mandate having been read in the 8th Session on the 14th of December, where the Pope then presided. He promised himself to appear concerning the business of the Pragmatic; but by reason of so many Enemies that every way surrounded him, he demanded a competent time, which was allowed him: The Cardinals *Sancta Croce* and *Sanseverin* threw themselves at the Pope's Feet at Rome, and appearing before the Council in the Habit of simple Priests, begged Pardon upon their Knees, acknowledged they had been justly degraded by Julius, renounced the Assembly of *Pisa*, and so were restored to their Dignities. But tho the Pope upon these Submissions seemed to be well satisfied with K. *Lewis*, he omitted not under-hand to excite the Emperor against him, that he might have no more leisure to turn to *Italy*.

**Queen Ann's Death.**  
1514.

Queen *Ann*, who infinitely desired this Reconciliation, survived but a few days after, and died on the 9th of *January* this year in the Castle of *Blou*: The King, who entirely loved her, shut himself up several Days in his Closet, and turned all the French Comedians, Juglers and Buffoons out of the Court. Having no Sons of his own, he had bred up the Duke of *Valois* with much Tenderness, whom the Laws of the Kingdom required to succeed him: Queen *Ann*, out of the hatred she had ever bore to *Clifford*, this Prince's Mother, had prevented his marriage with her Daughter *Claude*: However, they now had it consummated on the 18th of *May*, the *Germanus en laye*.

himself had then no thoughts of marrying again; *Peter de-  
the Duke of Longueville*, who was a Prisoner in *between the  
English &  
French,  
and K.  
Lewis  
married.*  
and, endeavouring to make a Peace between the  
Crowns, talked of a Marriage between the King  
*Mary K. Henry the 8th's Sister*, which *Lewis* wil-  
bearkned to, and so the Peace and Marriage  
concluded at *London* on the same Day, being the  
11 of *August*, whereby *K. Henry* was to keep *Tour-*  
and *Lewis* obliged to pay him 600000 Crowns at  
ayments, as well for the Charge of his War,  
the Arrears of Pension (the *French* will have it  
so) that had been promised by the Treaty of  
*Bray*, and confirmed by that of *Estaples* in 1492:  
out of this Sum his Queen's Portion was deducted,  
was 400000 Crowns, and the Royal Wedding  
on 10th of *October* was consummated at *Albeville*.  
*King Valois*, who was all fire for the fair Ladies,  
not want some Sparks for this new Queen; and  
*the Brandon Duke of Suffolk*, who loved her be-  
this Marriage, and followed the *French Court* in  
y of Ambassador from *England*, had not extin-  
ed his first Flames: However, the Remonstrances  
isy, who had been his Governour, made *Valois*  
somewhat cool upon it; and for *Suffolk*, it will  
long before he shall have the full Enjoyment of  
sires, since indeed King *Lewis* his Grave was not  
in his nuptial Bed: for as he was raising a potent

and of what would be squandered away in  
vain Prodigality after his Death by *Francis*  
said, *At length in vain, this great B*  
The two Sons he had by *Ann of Bretagne*  
Nurseries Arms, so that he had only two E  
who were *Claude*, married to *Francis I.*  
who in 1528 was by that King married  
Duke of *Berry*, a petty Prince, whom  
poteſty made choice of, that he might not  
contend with him for the Dutchy of *Breta*

---







# BOOK VIII.

## CHAP. I.

*Reign of FRANCIS I. surnamed the Great, and the Father of Learning.*

**T**HIS is the third time in the Capetian Race that the Scepter, for want of Males in the Direct Line, passed into a Collateral one. Lewis I. Duke of Orleans, had two Sons, Charles Duke of Orleans, and John of Angoulême; Lewis XII. was Charles's Son, from John came another Charles, the Father of this Francis I. who was crowned at Amboise, January 25th, assumed the Title of Duke of Milan with that of King of France. This Prince his first Cares were to French

On the other hand, *Ferdinand*, the Pope, Emperor, *Swiss*, and *Sforza* Duke of *Milan* confederated to compel *Francis* to renounce the Duchy of *Milan*, and other matters. Now *Francis* having made *Charles de Bourbon* Constable, and *du Prat* Chancellor, by whose Advice new Taxes were laid upon the People without the Consent of the Estates; and the necessary Preparations of War being ready, he went to *Lyons*, where he staid some time, till *Trivalcio* and *de Moret* by incredible Difficulties got the Artillery over the Mountains to the Country of *Saluzzes*, while his Troop passed the *Alps* nearer *Provence*. *La Palice* quickly surpris'd *Prospero Colonna* the Pope's General, and took him and his Prisoners; of which the King was no sooner informed, but he left *Lyons* with a noble Retinue having committed the Regency to *Louisa* of Savoy his Mother, and was now accosted by an English Ambassador, who from his Master let him know he ought not to pass into *Italy*, for fear of disturbing the Peace of Christendom: But neither this Remonstrance, nor King *Ferdinand's* Menaces availed any thing to prevent his Expedition; but on he went, and drew his Troop together about *Turin*, while the Confederates abandoning *Chivis* and *Verceil*, retired to *Norarre*, where they staid not long, but went to *Galerate*, so that many of their Towns fell into the King's hands without striking a stroke. So that being now at variance amongst themselves, they set up a Treaty by the means of the Duke of *Savoy*; but a Reinforcement of 10000 men from *Germany* made them break it off, and they suddenly attacked the French Army at *Maringa* within a League of *Milan*, on the 13<sup>th</sup> of October, and broke into their Camp with much Fury, and took some Cannon; but the King with the Flower of the Nobility and Soldiery hastening thither, they engaged in a terrible Fight for four hours within the Night, and nothing but their over-Weariness made them agree to Truce till Day-light. The King with his Armour rested upon the Carriage of a Gun, and was glad to get a little Water mix'd with Blood and Dirt to quench his Thirst. Next Morning the *Swiss* renewed the Fight with more Vigour than before, but were broken by the French Horse and Artillery, and some Companies of them

Francis  
successful  
in Italy.

The Battel  
of Marig-  
uan.

cut to pieces in an adjacent Wood, whither they retired. In short, the Confederates retreated to *Milan*, and the *Venerians* will have their Cavalry & *Alvaine* to have been the chief Instruments of Victory. There were 10000 *Swiss* slain, and *French*, but of them abundance of Persons of City and Gentlemen.

The Consequence of this Victory was, that the *Swiss* discontented, and returned home, *Milan* City sold; the Pope, without staying for the Emperor's Cantons, hastened to treat with the King, who him, the Ecclesiastical State and *Florence* under protection: He obliged himself also that the *Mis* from thenceforward should be furnished with from *Cervia*, that the Vice-Roy of *Naples's* Fort would have free Passage to retire home, while the was to recal the Soldiers he had sent to the Emperor against the *Venetians*, surrender *Piacenza* and *Parma* to the King, and *Modena* and *Reggio* to the Duke of  *Ferrara*. Lastly, to compleat the Success of the King's Designs, the Constable having corrupted *Moron*, was the unfortunate Duke *Sforza's* prime Counsellor, with Money, he was persuaded to capitulate the Castle of *Milan*, and resigned all his Right to the Duchy, upon condition of a Sum of ready Money to pay his Debts, a Pension of 30000 Ducats in France,

Francis  
conquers  
the Mila-  
nese.



1516.

from the King, and to have their Pensions continued.

The King having now settled all things for the security of *Milan*, returned to *Lyons* much envied by the Emperor, *Ferdinand*, and King of *England*. who all resolved to make War upon him; but *Ferdinand* dying *February 22d*, of a Dropsy (as did also *Jean de Albret* the dispossessed King of *Nazaire* late King of *Navarre*) after, leaving his Son *Henry* to inherit the Title, and a little Parcel of it on this side the *Pyrenees*; *Francis* thought it a proper time to invade *Naples*, imagining *Charles* from some political Considerations would give him no Interruption therein: But in short the Pope under-hand procured the *Engl.*, *Swiss*, and *Medici* to break his Measures; the Emperor on his part entered the *Milrese* with 20000 *Swiss* of the five Cantons that related to sign the late Treaty with *France* 10000 *German*, and 4 or 5000 Horse, who after having relieved *Brescia* and *Verona*, much straitned by the *Venetians* and *French*, passed the *Adda*, and ravaged the Country, that the *French* were ready to abandon *Milan*; but the Emperor's Sownets giving the Constable that commanded there time to provide for his security, and being informed that 12000 *Swiss* were coming to the Constable, they suddenly decamped and re-passed the *Adda*; and in a short time his Troop mouldered to nothing for want of Pay, the *Swiss* returning home, and 3000 *German*s and *Spaniards* going over to the Constable. It's not to be doubted but the Pope held Intelligence with the Emperor, though the King was so far from believing it, that he allowed him to dispossess *Alain* Duke of *Urbino*, to give the Dutchy to his Nephew *Laurence de Medicis*.

In the mean time, that the Concordat between the King and the Pope might not look like a simple Agreement between particular Persons, it was confirmed by the *Lateran* Council, notwithstanding all the Remonstrances of the Clergy, Universities and Parliaments of *France*, who at two Years end were forced to give way to absolute Authority, and record it in Parliament. Now the Council of *Charles* of *Austria* finding necessary for his Affairs to renew the Alliances with King *Francis*, thereby to have a free Passage to *Spain*, the same was done at *Noyon* on the 16th

The unsuccessful Expedition of the Emperor into Italy.

: And the Articles were, That *Charles* should  
: *Lorisa* the King's eldest Daughter, or upon  
the second, and so on; or else *Renee* the  
: Sister, who for her Dowry should have the  
pretended share of *Naples*, with Reversion in  
your, in case of want of Issue; that *Charles*  
pay 100000 Crowns yearly for the Maintenance  
Daughter, give up *Navarre* within six Months to  
d' *Albret*, but otherwise *Francis* to be free to assist  
that the Emperor might come into the Treaty;  
he surrendered *Verona* to the *Venetians*, they should  
n 200000 Crowns, and *Francis* give him a Dis-  
for the 300000 lent him by *Lewis XII.* to make  
pon them. The Emperor complied, and more par-  
y gave up *Verona* to the Republick for the Sum spe-  
nd allowed the five dissenting Cantons to conse-  
with *France*, as the rest had done. The King all  
ile did whatever he could to gain the Pope, the  
to carry on his Designs in *Italy*; and therefore  
him against *Maria*, who endeavoured to re-  
rbin, which War lasted 8 Months: The *Me-*  
last gained the *Spanish* Troops with Money,  
: Emperor continued the Truce with the *Vene-*  
r five Years, while King *Francis* the more still to  
the Pope, gave it under his hand, he would  
er *Reggio* and *Modena* to the Duke of *Ferrara*.  
leave these meddling matters. and not to enter

Maximilian's Death.  
1519.

Charles V.  
chosen Emperor.  
1520.

Now *Maximilian* Emperor of *Germany* dying on the 22d of *January* this Year, the two great Competitors for the Imperial Diadem were his Grandson *Charles* and King *Francis*, without shewing however the least Pique against one another: The *Swiss* denied *Francis* their Interest with the Electors; the Pope pretended to favour him, but in reality he was for neither of the two Princes, because they were too potent; and if he recommended *Francis*, it was only to get some suffrages from *Charles*, in order to the Election of some other *German* Prince; the Electors also were in suspense for a while, and after many Arguments, Altercations, and largely fingering of *Charles* his Money, *Charles* carried it: Which *Francis* disssembled as well as he could; however fearing the worst, he took more care to gain the Pope's Friendship, and the King of *England's*; but the Pope following Fortune, gave *Charles* the Investiture of *Naples*. His Election hastned the Interview between the Kings of *England* and *France*, in *June* between *Ardes* and *Guisnes*, who being Princes equally pompous and vain, made their Magnificence appear to the highest Profusion: This Interview was called *The Camp of Cloth of Gold*; when they had saluted one another on Horseback, they entred into a Pavilion erected on purpose for them, each with two or three Ministers of State, and there talked a few Moments about their Affairs; that done, they spent ten or twelve days in Turnaments and Feastings: After which *Francis* returned to *Ardes*, and *Henry* to *Guisnes*; but before they parted, they confirmed the Treaty in the solemnest manner, and took the Sacrament together upon it. However it were, *Charles V.* going from *Spain* to the Low Countries, and passing first into *England*, saw King *Henry* with less Splendor, and perhaps more Fruit; for *Henry* promised him, in case of any difference between him and *Francis*, he would be Arbitrator, and declare himself an Enemy to the Party that should not stand to his Award. His Intention wisely enough was to keep a Ballance; and therefore at his late Interview with *Francis*, he caused the Figure of an Archer to be placed over his Tent-Door with these Words, *He that accompanies or joins with him is Master.*

## Chap. 1. *The Reign of Francis I.*

But to leave King *Henry VIII.* for the present, and he great Emperor *Charles* to be crowned at *Aix la Chapelle* on the 22<sup>d</sup> of *October*: We are here to observe that *Spain* in his Absence was not altogether free from Disturbances; but more particularly, *Navarre* The War of revolted, and it would have been easy for *Francis*, *Navarre* 1521. while the Vice-Roys had drain'd the Garisons, to make head against them to regain that Kingdom; but he did not dream of it till the Spring following, and then he sent an Army thither under the Command of *Andrew de Foix* and Lord *D'Esparres*, who recovered it all in a few days, having met with no resistance but from the Castle of *Pampelona*, which at last surrendred upon Articles; but *D'Esparres* not satisfied with what he had successfully done, entred *Castile*, and besieg'd *Logrogne*: Upon this the Vice-Roys returning from subduing the Rebels, marched directly to fight him; but his Lieutenant General *Colombe* having casheered part of his Men, that by false Musters he might put a good deal of Money into his Pocket, he was necessitated to retire to *Pampelona*; but there not staying for a Re-inforcement of 6000 Men rashly gave them Battel, but was well beaten for it, insomuch that *Pampelona* and the rest of the Towns were recovered by the *Spaniards* in as little time as they had lost them, and the Emperor ordered most of its Castles to be demolished and Towns dismantled.

'Tis true indeed, this War did not contravene the Treaty of *Noyon*, since the six Months were expired; but *Charles* and *Francis* for all that would find Pretences to quarrel: *Francis* was the more forward to undertake, because he raised Subsidies as he pleased, whereas the other could raise none without difficulty; however he was a much better Husband, and made but very few idle Expences. The King of *England* kept himself neuter, the Pope was unconstant, but at last, whatever his Reasons were, he entred into a League with the Emperor for the mutual Defence of their Territories, to re-establish *Sforza* in *Milan*, and to recover *Ferrara* for the Holy See.

Now the Lord of *Sedan* who was Duke of *Bovillon* being disgraced in the *French* Court, he went to the Emperor's; but it hapning that the Emperor's Council had  
receiv'd



receiv'd an Appeal from a Judgment, which the Peers of his Dutchy of *Bouillon* had granted, in a certain Cause between the Lord of *Simay* and *D' Emery*, the Duke was so turbulent and impetuous, that he took it as an Affront, and would revenge it; wherefore reconciling himself to *Francis*, he was thereupon so rash and impertinent, as to send a Challenge to the Emperor in the Diet of *Worms*; and afterwards his Son *Florenge* with 3000 Men laid Siege to *Vireton* in *Luxemburg*: The King of *England* presently mediates between them, upon which *Francis* commanded *Florenge* to withdraw; but the Emperor not taking this to be a sufficient satisfaction for the Affront, raised a great Army under *Henry* Count of *Nassau*, who took four or five little Places from *Bouillon*, and then granted him a Truce for forty days. However the Imperial Troops having at the same time seized *St. Amand*, and besieged *Mortain*, as was also *Tournay* by the Governor of *Flanders*, *Francis* took this for no other than a Declaration of War: However *Henry VIII.* as much as he could to prevent it, desired both Parties might send Commissioners to him at *Calais*, to decide their Differences, and gave them plainly to understand, he would declare himself an open Enemy to him that should refuse it; so that both Parties being necessitated to comply, the Emperor at first demanded no less than the Dutchy of *Burgundy*, and to be discharged of all Homage for *Flanders* and *Artois*.

The Imperialists  
besiege  
Monzon  
in vain.

During this Conference the Count of *Nassau* passing the *Meuse* besieged *Monzon*, which some of the Garrison would have surrendered to him upon very disadvantageous Terms; but *Baynard* not only defended himself like a brave Soldier, but by counterfeit Letters sowed such Division between *Nassau* and *Sickinghen*, who commanded that part of the Emperor's Army that lay on the French side of the *Meuse*, that he made them raise their Siege: However 'tis memorable that Bombs, as 'tis thought, were now first used against this Place. *Francis* on the other hand having got his Army together, burnt and dismantled *Bapaume*, reduced *Landrecy* and *Bouchain*, and passed the *Scheld* to engage the Emperor himself, who under the favour of a Fog drew off and retired: Upon this

p. 1. *The Reign of Francis I,*

occasion the King to content his Mother, who had the Constable *de Bourbon*, because he disdained Love, gave the Command of the Van-guard to the Duke of *Alençon*, and what was worse slighted Advice he gave him to fall upon the Rear of the Emperor's Army.

On the other hand, the French Admiral *Bonnivet* having feigned a March towards *Pampelona*, turned port by *St. John de Luz*, and besieged *Fontarabia*, which he took on the 18th of *Octob.* In the mean

the Commissioners of both Parties were still at *Paris* and had agreed upon every thing, more particularly that the Emperor should raise the Siege of *Tournay*, and recal his Troops out of *Milan*; but as coming just then of the taking of *Fontarabia*, he refused to ratify the Treaty, unless they would restore that Place to him; and *Bonnivet* full of vain Desire to perpetuate the Glory of his Conquest, perswaded the King to preserve it, and so by a fantastical and ambitious Minister, involved the Kingdom in a War of 5 Years Duration. *Francis* was incamped upon the *Scheldt*, when he had News of the Treaty; but being not able to relieve *Tournay*, he retired to *Picardy*, and left the Army under the Constable and Duke of *Vendôme*, who took *Hesdin*, and some other little Places; but *Tournay* was at length surrendered upon Articles to the Imperialists.

*Tournay*  
surrendered to the  
Imperialists.

In *Italy*, the Pope and the Emperor not being able to make *Genoa* and *Milan* revolt, the Governor *Lautrec* and his Brother *Lescun* at length furnished the Pope with a pretence by their haughty and severe Proscriptions, which caused so many Exiles that they drew together at *Reggio*, against whom *Lescun* marched with 500 Horse, and endeavoured to surprize the Town; which the Pope made very loud Complaints in the Consistory, and protested that *Francis* having violated the Alliance between them, he thought himself no longer obliged to observe it, and so prepared for a Breach. In the mean time the King perceiving he must have a War on that side, sent *Lautrec*, now in *France*, thither; but he refusing to go till he had the 300000 Crowns that had been assigned him, he was at least by *Madam* the King's Mother and the Treasurers persuaded

The Italian  
War.

ded to it upon promise of immediate Remit but his Fears were just enough, for as soon he was out of sight, the King thought no more of him, *Madam* who hated him, diverted the Funds to other uses. The Enemy had besieged *Parma*, and 1 with 3000 Men in it; but News being come to the Duke of *Ferrara* had taken *Ferrara* and *St. Felix*, and that he might also get both *Reggio* and *Modena* from them, they raised the Siege and returned to *St. Lazare*; and the *Germans* for want of Pay having abandoned them in their March, had now been an end of their Army, if *Lautrec* had not pursued and smartly charged them: He might have oppressed them at *Rebeque* upon the *Oglio*; but quietly repassing that River in the Night, were after joined by 10000 *Swiss*, which Cardinal *Sforza* obtained of the *Cantons*, for the defence of the Pope and See of *Rome*. Now the Lords of the League having sent Couriers to command the *Swiss* both the one and the other Army to depart, those that carried the Orders to the Confederates were carried off and stopt, while the others going directly with Commands to the *French* Army, the *Swiss* immediately left them; so that *Lautrec* now with the remainder of the Forces got first to *Casson*, and then retired to *Milan*, which he held not long; for the Enemy incamped at *Marignan*, on the 19th of *Nov.* he least expected they should attempt any thing, he was walking unarmed in the Streets, when he retired to bed, he was amazed to find the Enemy in the Suburbs, which was basely quitted to the *Venetians*, and at the same time the *Gibeline* Faction let them into the City, the *Spaniards* ransacked for eight Days together: in the mean time having reinforced the *Cavalry* to *Como* and *Bergamo*, the first of which they took, as were also *Parma* and *Piacenza*. *Leo* with these Successes, falls into a Fever; so that he having been the grand Projector of this War, it might have been thought he would have recovered their Losses, if he had been minded things so little, that *Ferrara* and *Reggio* Towns *Leo* had taken from him,

*Spaniards*  
take *Mi-*  
*lan*, &c.  
from the  
*French*.

Dutchies of *Urbino* and *Camerino*: But the Affront they received at *Parma*, they having been beaten off by a few Soldiers and People half armed, gave the other Towns greater Courage to resist them; after which both Armies rested for six Weeks, the *French* for want of Men, and indeed both of them for want of Money.

During this Recess, as I may call it, *Colonna* took all the Care imaginable for the defence of and animating *Mil'm* against the *French*, and inspired them with Affection for *Francis Sforza*, *Lodowick's* second Son, and the Brother of *Maximilian*; *Leo* with the Emperor's Consent having designed to restore him to his Father's Dutchy; but he was yet at *Trent*, expecting a levy of 8000  *Germans*  to conduct him thither. In the mean time, notwithstanding the Cabals of the Imperialists and other Obstructions, the *Cantons* allowed *Francis* a Levy of 12000 *Swiss*, that marched into *Lombardy* under the Command of the Bastard of *Savoy*; soon after which *John de Medicis* engaged in the King's Service, and joined his Army with 3000 Men. *Laurec* thus strongly reinforced, besieged *Milan* in form; but hearing that *Sforza* and his Men were arrived at *Piacenza*, and that the Marquess of *Mantua* was to convoy him with his Horse to *Pavia*, from whence he designed to lay hold of the first favourable Opportunity to go to *Mil'm*, he decamped and posted himself upon the *Cisine* to prevent it; but his Brother *Lescun* taking *Nouv're* protracted the time, *Sforza gets* and gave *Sforza* an Opportunity to get into *Mil'm*, into *Milan*, whereby the Courage of the Inhabitants was greatly increased. Hereupon *Laurec* laid Siege to *Pavia*, but failing to take it, he advanced as far as *Monce* to receive the Money sent him from *France*; but a Body of the Enemy having posted themselves in the way, and the *Swiss* being impatient for their Pay, they would engage the General against his Judgment to fight the Enemies Army, that was very advantageously posted at *Bicoque* within three Miles of *Mil'm*, and where *Colonna* the General waited their coming: *Laurec* and his Brother in the Wings could do no great matter against them, but the *Swiss* did Wonders, tho they paid dear enough for their Rashness by the Death of

French un-  
successful  
in Italy.

3000 of their Number, and being forced to it. Next day their Blood being cooled, and *Lautrec* having passed the *Adda*, they retired home so disheartened, that for many Years they did nothing worth their antient Valour, but indeed became more manageable than before. *Lautrec* hereupon goes into France for Succours, and in his absence *Colonna* besieged *Cremona*, and *Lescun* in it, who capitulated to surrender within forty Days, if the French came not with an Army that should force their way over the Alps, and likewise promised, that the other Holds then in the *Milaneſe* should be evacuated, except the City of *Cremona*, *Novara* and *Milan*: The time came, he got some Days added, but at last entered the Treaty and returned to France; tho before his Departure he was farther mortified with the News that *Colonna* had made himself Master of *Genoa*, so much that *Francis* now being out of all hopes of doing any thing in the *Milaneſe* this Year, countermanded those Forces he was sending thither.

The Miscarriages indeed chiefly proceeded from the King's own Negligence, in not sending seasonable Supplies; however *Samblancay* the Superintendent of Finances suffered for it, who thro the Malice of the Chancellor *Duprat* was condemned to be hanged: the mean time they made use of all ways and means to get Money by alienating the Crown-Lands, selling of Offices and the like indirect Methods, without anything of Tallies, and new Imposts, whereby the antient Laws of the Kingdom were subverted: the mean while *Francis* had no less to do in *Gascony* and *Picardy*, than *Italy*; for the Emperor going to Spain thro *England*, prevailed with *Henry VI* to take his part against the French, and having quickly suppressed the Revolt of the *Castilians*, he with the mainders of that Insurrection and some others, raised up an Army, which besieged *Fontarabia*, while *Henry* landed another at *Calais* under the Duke of *Suffolk*, and sent an Herald to defy *Francis* at *Belgrade*. But *Belgrade* and *Rhodes* hapning to be lost about the same time to the *Turks*, Pope *Adrian* employed all his Cares to make a Peace, or at least a Truce between

Christian Princes, that so with united Force they might make War upon the Infidels. *Francis* would yield to nothing but a very short Truce, which not at all suiting with the Pope's Designs, he would needs bring him to it by force, and therefore engaged the Emperor, *Venetians* and King of *England* to drive him out of *Italy*; but the King for all this would have gone thither in Person, had not the Conspiracy of the Duke of *Bourbon* prevented it.

*Madam* had for many Years sought all Opportunities to ruin him, and the Chancellor and Admiral were here chief Instruments in it; so that besides other Mortifications, they proceeded in Parliament to strip him even of the Duchy of *Bourbon*, and the other great Estate of his Wife *Susanna*, who in the Year 1521 died Childless, the Succession of which *Madam* pretended did belong to her as next Heiress: The Constable made a very good defence, in vindication of his Right both to the one and the other, and believed his Cause would have been very good in any other Times, and against any other Party; but supposing they were resolved to cast him right or wrong, he rashly and in a Fury threw himself into the Emperor's Arms, and the King of *England* came into the Treaty made between them, which imported, that they three should share *France* between them; that *Bourbon* should have the antient Kingdom of *Arles*, and marry *Eleanor* the Emperor's Sister. Now while the King was at *St. Peter le Monstie*, and that two of the Constable's Servants there discovered the whole Correspondence to him, he would needs be satisfied from his own Mouth at *Moulins*, where the Constable owned he had been solicited by the Count of *Rieux*, but stily denied he had given any Ear to it; they would perhaps have seized him here if they durst, therefore he was only commanded to follow the King to Court, in order to which he travelled easy Journeys in his Litter; but hearing at *la Palice*, that there was a Decree issued to put his Estate under Sequestration, he dispatched the Bishop of *Aurun* to the King, to beseech him to stop the Execution of it; but finding nothing could be done in his favour, he fled to his Castel of *Chantelle*, but not being safe there, he escaped

to

minili-  
Death.  
1519-

Charles V.  
rosen Em-  
per.  
1520.

Now Maximilian Emperor of Germany dying on the 22d of January this Year, the two great Competitors for the Imperial Diadem were his Grandson Charles and King Francis, without shewing however the least Pique against one another: The Swiss denied Francis their Interest with the Electors; the Pope pretended to favour him, but in reality he was for neither of the two Princes, because they were too potent; and if he recommended Francis, it was only to get some suffrages from Charles, in order to the Election of some other German Prince; the Electors also were in suspense for a while, and after many Arguments, Altercations, and largely fingering of Charles his Money, Charles carried it: Which Francis disliked as well as he could; however fearing the worst he took more care to gain the Pope's Friendship, and the King of England's; but the Pope following France gave Charles the Investiture of Naples. His Election hastened the Interview between the Kings of England and France, in June between Ardres and Guisnes, who being Princes equally pompous and vain, made their Magnificence appear to the highest Profusion: This Interview was called *The Camp of Cloth of Gold* when they had saluted one another on Horseback, they entered into a Pavilion erected on purpose for them, each with two or three Ministers of State, and there talked a few Moments about their Affairs; that done they spent ten or twelve days in Turnaments and Feastings: After which Francis returned to Ardres and Henry to Guisnes; but before they parted, they confirmed the Treaty in the solemnest manner, and took the Sacrament together upon it. However it was Charles V. going from Spain to the Low Countries and passing first into England, saw King Henry with less Splendor, and perhaps more Fruit; for Henry promised him, in case of any difference between him and Francis, he would be Arbitrator, and declare himself an Enemy to the Party that should not stick to his Award. His Intention wisely enough was to keep a Ballance; and therefore at his late Interview with Francis, he caused the Figure of an Archer to be placed over his Tent-Door with these Words, *He who accompanies or joins with him is Master.*

to leave King *Henry VIII.* for the present, and great Emperor *Charles* to be crowned at *Aix la Chapelle* on the 22d of *October*: We are here to observe that *Spain* in his Absence was not altogether free

Disturbances; but more particularly, *Navarre* The War of 1521. was seized, and it would have been easy for *Francis*, if the Vice-Roys had drain'd the Garisons, to make against them to regain that Kingdom; but he did dream of it till the Spring following, and then he sent an Army thither under the Command of *Andrew de Foix* and Lord *D'Esparres*, who recovered it all in a few days, having met with no resistance but from the Castle of *Pampelona*, which at last surrendered upon Terms; but *D'Esparres* not satisfied with what he had successfully done, entred *Castile*, and besieg'd *Burgoyne*: Upon this the Vice-Roys returning from suppressing the Rebels, marched directly to fight him; his Lieutenant General *Colombe* having calheered off his Men, that by false Musters he might put a great deal of Money into his Pocket, he was necessitated to retire to *Pampelona*; but there not staying long, a Re-inforcement of 6000 Men rashly gave themselves up, but was well beaten for it, insomuch that *Pampelona* and the rest of the Towns were recovered by the Spaniards in as little time as they had lost them, whereupon the Emperor ordered most of its Castles to be demolished and Towns dismantled.



receiv'd an Appeal from a Judgment, which the Duke of his Dutchy of *Bouillon* had granted, in a Cause between the Lord of *Sinay* and *D'Emery*. The Duke was so turbulent and impetuous, that he took it as an Affront, and would revenge it; wherefore, excusing himself to *Francis*, he was thereupon so far from being impertinent, as to send a Challenge to the Emperor in the Diet of *Worms*; and afterwards his *Sheriffs* with 2000 Men laid Siege to *Vincennes* in *Germany*: The King of *England* presently mediated between them, upon which *Francis* commanded his Army to withdraw; but the Emperor not taking that to be a sufficient Satisfaction for the Affront, sent a great Army under *Henry* Count of *Nassau*, who took four or five little Places from *Bouillon*, and then offered him a Truce for forty days. However the Imperial Troops having at the same time seized *Strasbourg* and besieged *Mortain*, as was also *Tournay* by the Governor of *Flanders*, *Francis* took this for no other Declaration of War: However *Henry VIII.* and he could to prevent it, desired both Parties might send Commissioners to him at *Calais*, to decide their Differences, and gave them plainly to understand, he would declare himself an open Enemy to him that refused it; so that both Parties being necessitated to comply, the Emperor at first demanded no less than the Dutchy of *Burgundy*, and to be discharged of all Damage for *Flanders* and *Artois*.

The Imperialists  
besiege  
Monzon  
in vain.

During this Conference the Count of *Nassau* the *Maire* besieged *Monzon*, which some of the Garrison would have surrendered to him upon very advantageous Terms; but *Baynard* not only refused himself like a brave Soldier, but by countermeasures sowed such Division between *Nassau* and *Baynard*, who commanded that part of the Imperial Army that lay on the French side of the *Meuse*, he made them raise their Siege: However 'tis probable that Bombs, as 'tis thought, were now sent against this Place. *Francis* on the other hand got his Army together, burnt and dismantled *Landrecy*, reduced *Landrecy* and *Bouchain*, and sent the *Scheld* to engage the Emperor himself, who in the favour of a Fog drew off and retired:

occasion the King to content his Mother, who had the Constable *de Bourbon*, because he disdained her love, gave the Command of the Van-guard to the Duke of *Alençon*, and what was worse slighted advice he gave him to fall upon the Rear of the Emperor's Army.

On the other hand, the French Admiral *Bonnivet* feigned a March towards *Pampelona*, turned off by *St. John de Luz*, and besieged *Fontarabia*, which he took on the 18th of *Octob.* In the mean time the Commissioners of both Parties were still at work, and had agreed upon every thing, more particularly that the Emperor should raise the Siege of *May*, and recall his Troops out of *Milan*; but becoming just then of the taking of *Fontarabia*, he refused to ratify the Treaty, unless they would restore the place to him; and *Bonnivet* full of vain Desire to complete the Glory of his Conquest, perswaded the King to preserve it, and so by a fantastical and ambitious Minister, involved the Kingdom in a War of many Years Duration. *Francis* was incamped upon the Rhine, when he had News of the Treaty; but being obliged to relieve *Tournay*, he retired to *Picardy*, and left the Army under the Constable and Duke of *Vendôme*, who took *Hesdin*, and some other little Places; *Tournay* was at length surrendered upon Articles of Impeachment.

*Tournay*  
surrendered  
red to the  
Imperia-

## The Reign of F

ded to it upon promise of  
 but his Fears were just enou  
 out of sight, the King th no  
*Madam* who hated him, erred  
 uses. The Enemy had besieged  
 with 3000 Men in it ; but Nev  
 Besieged, that the Duke of *Ferrara*  
 and *St. Felix*, and that he might alto ge  
 and *Modena* from them, they raised  
 turned to *St. Lazare* ; and the Ge  
 Pay having abandoned them in their  
 had now been an end of their Army, I  
 but pursued and smartly charged them : th  
 have oppressed them at *Rebeque* upon the O  
 quietly repassing that River in the Ni  
 after joined by 10000 *Swiss*, which Car  
 obtained of the *Cantons*, for the defence  
 and See of *Rome*. Now the Lords of  
 having sent Curiere to command the  
 the one and the other Army to depart, to  
 ried the Orders to the Confederates  
 and stop, while the others going to ec  
 Commands to the *French* Army, the  
 ly left them ; so that *Laurec* now with  
 of the Forces got first to *Cassan*, and then  
*Milam*, which he held not long ; for  
 incamped at *Marignam*, on the 19th or  
 he least expected they should attempt any  
 he was walking unarmed in the streets,  
 ther a-bed, he was amazed to n  
 the Suburbs, which was basely rced  
*Venerians*, and at the same time u  
*Gibeline* Faction let them into t Cu--  
*Spaniards* ransacked for eight Days  
 in the mean time having reinforced un  
 to *Coma* and *Bergamo*, the first  
 ken, as were also *Parmi* and *Pia* a. J  
 with these Successes, falls into a  
 that he having been the grand  
 of this War, it might have be  
 would have recovered their Loss  
 minded things so little, that *Ferr*  
 Towns *Leo* had taken from him,

*Spaniards*  
*take Mi-*  
*lan, &c.*  
*from the*  
*French.*

p. 1. *The Reign of Francis I.* :

485

ties of *Urbino* and *Camerino*: But the Affront they  
 ved at *Parma*, they having been beaten off by a  
 Soldiers and People half armed, gave the other  
 his greater Courage to resist them; after which  
 Armies rested for six Weeks, the *French* for  
 of Men, and indeed both of them for want of  
 vy.

bring this Recess, as I may call it, *Colonna* took  
 the Care imaginable for the defence of and ani-  
 ing *Milan* against the *French*, and inspired them  
 Affection for *Francis Sforza*, *Lodowick's* second  
 and the Brother of *Maximilian*; *Leo* with the  
 or's Consent having designed to restore him to  
 ther's Dutch; ; but he was yet at *Trent*, expect-  
 levy of 8000 *Germans* to conduct him thither.  
 mean time, notwithstanding the Cabals of the  
 rialists and other Obstructions, the *Cantons* allow-  
*Francis* a Levy of 12000 *Swiss*, that marched into  
 ardy under the Command of the Bastard of  
 ; soon after which *John de Medicis* engaged in the  
 Service, and joined his Army with 3000 Men.  
 rec thus strongly reinforced, besieged *Milan* in  
 ; but hearing that *Sforza* and his Men were ar-  
 at *Piacenza*, and that the Marquess of *Mantua*  
 to convoy him with his Horse to *Pavia*, from  
 he designed to hold of the first favourable

1522.

French un-  
successful  
in Italy.

3000 of their Number, and being forced to  
Next day their Blood being cooled, and Los-  
ing passed the *Adda*, they retired home so dis-  
ed, that for many Years they did nothing to  
their antient Valour, but indeed became more  
able than before. *Luttre* hereupon goes in  
for Succours, and in his absence *Colonna* besieges  
*na*, and *Lesew* in it, who capitulated to him  
within forty Days, if the French came not.  
Army that should force their way over to  
take some considerable Place in the Dutchy of  
and likewise promised, that the other Holds  
in the *Milnefe* should be evacuated, except the  
of *Cremona*, *Nouara* and *Milan*: The time  
come, he got some Days added, but at last  
the Treaty and returned to *France*; tho' at  
Departure he was farther mortified with  
that *Colonna* had made himself Master of *Ge-*  
fomuch that *Francis* now being out of all hop-  
ing any thing in the *Milaneze* this Year, com-  
ed those Forces he was sending thither.

The Miscarriages indeed chiefly proceeded  
King's own Negligence, in not sending season-  
plies; however *Samblancay* the Superintendent  
Finances suffered for it, who thro' the Malice  
Chancellor *Duprat* was condemned to be hang-  
the mean time they made use of all ways  
to get Money by alienating the Crown-Lan-  
ling of Offices and the like indirect Methods  
nothing of Tallies, and new Imposts, while  
the antient Laws of the Kingdom were subvert-  
the mean while *Francis* had no less to do in  
and *Picardy*, than *Italy*; for the Emperor go-  
*Spain* thro' *Encluid*, prevailed with *Henry*  
take his part against the French, and having qu-  
prest the Revolt of the *Castilians*, he with  
mainders of that Insurrection and some other  
up an Army, which besieged *Fontenavia*, wh-  
*Henry* landed another at *Calais* under the  
*Suffolk*, and sent an Herald to defy *Francis*  
But *Belgrade* and *Rhodes* hapning to be lost a  
time to the *Turks*, Pope *Adrian* employed  
Cares to make a Peace, or at least a Truce bet

France, that it was almost France that might be won by the Emperor. Francis would have been a great deal better France, which was at all times the Emperor's Desire. He would have been by force, and therefore engaged the Emperor, and King of England to assist him, but the King of England was more than a Partisan, and not the Confidant of the Duke of Burgundy.

He had no more Personal Opportunities of seeing him, and the Chancellor and Admiral were of Instructions to him, to the which other motions they proceeded in Parliament to keep out of the Duke's and Emperor's, and the other State of his Majesty's, who in the Year of Christ's, the Succession of which Maximilian did belong to her as well as France. The he made a very good defence in favour of it both to the one and the other, and believed it would have been very good in any other and against any other Party; but supposing were resolved to cast him right or wrong, he and in a fury threw himself into the Emperor's, and the King of England came into the trade between them, which imported, that they would share France between them; that Bourbon should have the ancient Kingdom of Arles, and

1528.  
Francis  
challenges  
the Em-  
peror.

riage, which yet was not consummated till 5. In the mean time a Treaty of Peace at to nothing, there were Heralds from the to denounce War against the Emperor; who that of King Francis, that his Master had Faith, and two Years before refused to decide their Quarrel by a single Combat; Francis to clear himself of the Scandal erected a Scaffold in his great Hall, and there in the Presence of the Spanish Ambassador and others, caused a Challenge to be read, which gave the Emperor the Lie, and required him to fight him; the Ambassador refusing to carry the Challenge, it was sent by a Herald, and the King of England did the like by a Messenger of his own.

But tho the Emperor wisely enough eluded these Challenges, things went but badly with him in Italy, so that he was necessitated to set the Pope at Liberty, but first endeavoured to ty him to hard Conditions, and he had almost recovered the whole *Milanese*; then entering *Romagnia*, marched and overtook the Imperial Army at *Abruzzo*, to whom he presented Battel, but they retired to *Naples*. On the other hand, some of the French Ships made a Descent upon *Sardinia*, and plundered *Sassary*, which was the cause of great Misfortunes, for most of the Soldiers surfeited with eating died of the Disentery: The King grew very remiss in sending *Lantrec* Supplies; *Doria* and *Cere* could not agree, so that the first of them retired home with his Gallies to *Genoa*, with an Intention to restore the Liberty of his Country.

In the mean time the French Army lay under *Lantrec*, whose Brother *Philip* defeated the Spaniards at Sea, this heightened *Lantrec*'s Hopes, and so encouraged him, that they put in divers small *Naples*, and likewise cut off his Provision. The Plague began now to infect his Army, a Defection grew more manifest than, the General sent to the King, to give satisfaction whatever came on't: But instead of giving *Savanna* to the *Genuese*, D. Management of the Chancellor, seized by *Barbephens* Admiral of the

*Bonnivet* who had a Wound in his Arm, got before, for fear of falling into his Hands, and the Retreat to be managed by *Baynard* and *Vendôme* who acquitted themselves very generously, the French of them were slain by Musket-shot. The rest of the army not being pursued, retired towards the *Swiss* returned home by the Valley of *A-* and the *French* by the way of *Turin*: After Departure the Confederates easily recovered Places, whilst they in the Castle of *Nouarra* ordered to *Sforza*, *Loda* to the Duke of *Urbino*, *Alexandria* to the Marquess of *Pescara*. But notwithstanding all this ill Success, Madam knew how to temper the King's mind in favour of War, that all the Blame was laid upon the Forces of War; and the better to cover it, the King himself was persuaded to go with a great Army in *Per-* to *Italy*.

*Clement* the VII. being lately elected into the Chair, would fain have brought the Potentates to Peace or Peace; but *Henry VIII.* at *Woolsey's* Instigation being for neither of them, as supposing he might make mighty Advantages of *Bourbon* for the recovery of his Right to *France*, with this prospect he made a new Treaty with the Emperor, consisting of several Particulars; but however the same was in reali-



Francis  
marches  
into Italy.

1524.

peror's Money, that the Confederate States of Italy would not assist him, and that *Henry VIII* had raised no Men, he resolved to follow *Bourbon* by great Marches; being persuaded, if he could either reach or get before him, nothing could obstruct his conquering of that Dutchy. The King arrived at *Ferrara*, at the same time that the Enemy got to *Alba*, from whence they got in two days to *Parma*, having marched 20 Miles in one day, being resolved to keep *Milan*, and therefore incamped at *Binasque*; but upon the King's Approach they retired to *Loda*, and the King pursuant to *Bonnivet's* Advice, declining to pursue them, which in all probability would have done his Business, left *Trimouille* with 6000 Men in *Milan* to besiege the Castle, and went himself, and on the 27th of October sat down before *Pavia*; he thinking himself almost so sure of *Milan*, that he made a Detachment of 10000 Foot, and 600 Men at Arms, with 500 Horse of his own Army, under the conduct of *John Stuart Duke of Albany*, to go and conquer the Kingdom of *Naples*; and not long after he sent 4000 more to *Savona*, under the *Marquess of Saluzzo*, to make War upon those of *Genoa*.

1525.

In the mean while the Siege of *Milan* was found to be no more advanced after two Months continuance than the first day: At the same time *Charles of Bourbon* returned out of *Germany* with a Reinforcement of 10000 Foot, and 1000 Horse, and joined *Loy's* Army near *Loda*, which making together a considerable Army, they tried all manner of ways to put relief into *Pavia*, which yet was in no great danger unless it were from its own Garrison, who were ready to mutiny for want of Pay. *Castle St. Angelo* between *Pavia* and *Milan*, would have cut off their Provision had they left it behind them; but the same being entrusted to an *Italian* by *Bonnivet*, he quickly surrendered both Town and Castle into their Hands: But upon the King's best Commanders were for raising the Siege, and gave so many important Reasons that his unaccountable he did not comply thereunto. *Bonnivet's* Obstinacy, and the Shame he fancied would be to quit the Design, after he had with so many magnificent Speeches proclaimed he would take

or die before it, obliged him to continue the  
 e. The Armes were now very near, and the Enemy  
 rving the confusion of the *French*, they drew nigh  
 Park-Wall of *Pavia*: on the 24th or 25th of Feb.  
 fight, and having thrown down about 60 Fathom  
 t, marched directly to *Mirabel-Castle*, the King's  
 tters; the King's Cannon tho well planted could  
 o great Execution while it was dark, but as soon as  
 ew light, it so annoyed their Rear, as to break  
 Ranks, at which he greatly rejoiced, and much  
 still at the News of the Duke of *Alençon's* having  
 ured a great Body of the *Spaniards*, and taken four  
 s of Cannon: So that believing they were half  
 ed, he imprudently went out of his Camp to *The Battel*  
 ge them; at first he broke in amongst their Horse; *of Pavia.*  
 Their Harque-busiers having put his Men to a  
 Bourbon and Lanoy with their Men gave a furi-  
 Charge, *Alençon* fled and died with Grief at Ly-  
 the *Swiss* lying open, made but a poor Fight, and  
 withdrew; but 3 or 4000 *German* Foot stood to  
 last, and were all cut in pieces; so that all the  
 n falling upon the King, and his Horse killed un-  
 him, at last meeting and knowing *Pomperan*, he sur-  
 ndered himself to him: All the *French* Baggage and  
 on were taken, and 8000 men slain upon the  
 Francis 1  
 made a

On the other hand, the Emperor during the six Years Peace, endeavoured to compose the Affairs of the Empire, and going now to *Ratisbonne* he obtained a Supply against the *Turks*, who were with a powerful Army ready to fall upon *Hungary*, and with a Fleet by Sea upon *Italy*; wherefore he made use of this occasion to require *Francis* to lend him Money, and his *Gens d'Arms*: But to the first he answered, *He was no Banker, and for his Horse, they were the Strength of his Government, and that he would lend them no more than he would do his Sword, but would fight at the head of them, that he might have his share in the Honour or the Danger.* And therefore he and the King of *England* made a League to set 80000 Men on Foot against the common Enemy, and *Francis* more particularly offered to defend *Italy*: Indeed the Union appeared very strict between *Francis* and *Henry VIII.* who being desirous to confer together about their Affairs, met at *St. Joquevert* in *October*, between *Bologna* and *Calais*; they were both of them much dissatisfied with the Pope, and projected Leagues and Designs against him: While the Pope and the Emperor had an Interview at *Bologna*, with the same Demonstrations of Affection as at first, but with much different Sentiments; for they could hardly agree at last in any one particular, and parted very ill satisfied with one another; and more especially the Emperor was concerned that the Pope was not so forward as he expected to excommunicate *Henry VIII.* for his going to divorce *Catharine* his Aunt. On the other hand, *Henry* made most vehement Instances to *Francis*, that he would impetrate the Pope he might have Judges appointed on the Place, to examine into his Marriage: But in short, after long canvassing this matter to and fro, *Henry's* impatience, or somewhat else, caused the Marriage to be proclaim'd null by his own Arch-bishop *Cranmer*; at which the Pope and Emperor were highly concerned, and the same ended at last in the Pope's Excommunicating the King, and the Reformation of the Church in *England*; but of this enough.

This Year in *October* the Pope in his Gallies arrived at *Marseilles*, and was there magnificently entertained

Henry  
VIII. di-  
vorced.

1533.

an Princes, *Bourbon* and others, were con-  
the King should be carried to *Spain*, the  
of the former having been to drive the  
of *Milan*, and not to introduce the *Spa-*  
to restore *Sforza*; yet the Emperor car-  
t as absolute Master, and *Sforza* was no-  
ned of; the Pope and *Venetians* were for  
is Interest, and they altogether thinking  
antage of *Pescara's* discontent, proposed  
bsence to make him King of *Naples*: He  
cruple the Offer at first, in respect to the  
it; but appearing to be satisfied at last,  
learnt the whole Intrigue, he communi-  
the Emperor, and so taking the Opportu-  
five the unhappy *Sforza* of his Dutchy,  
is strongest Places from him by a Wile, and  
him up in the Castle of *Milan*, with a  
ation, but he died in the beginning of  
th an ill Character.

otiation was all this while carried on at  
whither went *Margaret* the King's Sister  
to that purpose, from whence by the In-  
*bourbon* she returned without accomplishing  
; however she scattered Money in those  
that she gained some of the Emperor's  
id most of the King's Guards, with whom  
ned a Project for his Escape: but the Em-

*Lawrence* all in intire Sovereignty to the Emperor; also the Homage for *Flanders* and *Artois*, and his pretensions to *Naples*, *Milan*, *Genoa*, *Alsace*, *Tenelle* and *Hesdin*; to get *Henry d'Albret* to restore the Kingdom of *Navarre*, but if otherwise not assist him; to restore the Duke of *Bourbon* and his Followers to their Estates, as likewise to give *Philippe Chaulons* his Liberty and the Principality of *Orange* and to *Michael Antony* his Marquilate of *Salerno*; to give the Duke of *Guelbres* no assistance, and in Death to procure his Cities to return to the Emperor; to pay the King of *England's* Arrears of *France* which was 500000 Crowns; to lend the Emperor when he should go to take the Imperial Crown 12 Gallies and 4 Great Ships, and to pay 200000 Crowns, instead of the Land Army he promised him. Farther, the King engaged his Word if he could not procure the full Execution of the Articles, he would voluntarily return a Prisoner again.

The Emperor's Chancellor would not sign this Treaty, so that he was forced to it himself; then the Princes conversed familiarly together; and the King being set at Liberty, his two Sons were given in Ransom and carried into *Spain*. But *Francis* fell from one Captivity into another, being quickly after his return smitten with the Beauty of *Ann de Foix* whom he afterwards honoured with the Title of Dutchess of *Esampes*. As soon as he was in France he highly complained both at home and abroad of the Injustice of the Treaty, which enraged the Emperor to a high degree; however he sent *Bourbon* to *Rome* and endeavoured to amuse the Pope; but when it was understood by the Imperial Ambassador that his Master must have *Burgundy*, and would give of no Equivalent, he complied for fear the King of *England*, and the Princes of *Italy*, with whom *Francis* was now in Treaty, should agree with the Emperor. It was proclaimed the 28th of June at *Paris* between the King, Pope, *Venetians*, *Florentines*, *Sforza*; that they would procure the Liberty of the King's Children, restore *Naples* to the See of *Spain*, maintain *Sforza* in *Milan*, the King reserving

*Francis*  
set at Li-  
berty.

nothing in *Italy* but *Genoa*. All seemed to favour the Confederates, *Milan* revolted, the *Spanish* Army an ill State; but of all the Members of this there were none but the *Venetians* that did in perform their Obligation, the Pope proceeded and ambiguously, *Sforza* was amused by the *Franks*, and the King giving himself up to Pleasure his Army under the Marquis of *Saluzzes* did not *Italy* till *September*, neither did his Gallies join early to regain *Genoa*, and prevent *Bourbon's* 2: And the *Venetian* General the Duke of *Urbino* some grudge to the House of *Medicis*, declined to give the Castle of *Milan*, so that *Sforza* at last forced to surrender it to *Bourbon*, but reserved a Revenue to himself, and the Liberty of going to the Emperor to make his own Justification. *Urbino* being still the same Man, retarded the Reduction of *Genoa*, and made them lose the opportunity of *Milan* after he had been considerably reinforced as well as the taking of *Genoa*.

II pass over the Contests between Pope *Clement* 7 *Colonna's*, and the Progress of the *Turks* in *Asia*, to which the *Austrians* would have King *Francis* have contributed; and observe that amidst the intricacies of the Emperor's Affairs concerning *Milan*, he offered the Confederates ten Months Truce; but they were trotting up and down about it.

too late, *Turin* soon surrendred, from whence the Duke had before retired to *Verceil*.

Now *Sforza* dying while the Emperor tarried in *Sicily*, and without leaving any Children behind him, and being under *Charles* his Power, he made use of it as a Lure to amuse *Francis* all his Life after; wherefore his Chancellor told *Vely* the French Ambassador, his Master would not dispose of that Dutchy, till he were satisfied how the King intended to demean himself in these Particulars, the first was in the War against the *Turks*, then in the Reduction of all Christian Princes to the Catholick Religion, and lastly in settling a firm Peace thro *Christendom*; to which he added, that the Emperor was desirous rather to bestow the Dutchy upon the King's third Son than the second, and required the second should accompany him to the Siege of *Algiers*. Hereupon the King demanded the Dutchy for his second Son *Henry* Duke of *Orleans*, and offered to give 400000 Crowns of Gold for the Investiture: But the Emperor gave little heed thereunto, made an Alliance with the *Venetians*, married his Bastard Daughter to *Alexander de Medicis*, confirmed now in the Government of *Florence*, made great Preparations both of Men and Money, and at *Rome* made great Complaints and Menaces against King *Francis*, would needs give an Assembly of Cardinals an account of all Transactions between them from the time of *Lewis XII.* accused him of having ever broken the Peace, and being a common Disturber; and lastly concluded that of three things the King must chuse one, either to take *Milan* for his third Son, upon condition *Savoy* was restored to its own Duke, or accept of a single Combat between them personally with what Arms the King pleased, upon condition the Conqueror should employ his Forces as the Pope pleased against the Hereticks and Infidels, or resolve upon a War, that should be as bloody as to run one of the two.

*Francis* answered all this in very modest terms; and divers Overtures were made that they might not come to a Rupture, wherefore the King commanded his General *Brion* to undertake nothing more in *Piedmont*, but to return into *Dauphine*, after he had provided and well garisoned the Places he had taken;

while

The Emperor's Complaints against Francis.

opportunity to go and deliver the Pope, but he  
 by many Excuses and Pretences, the Pope on the  
 10th of June surrendred himself to the Imperialists,  
 remained a Prisoner for six whole Months; during  
 which the *Venetians* his Allies seized upon *Ravenna*  
*Cervia* with the Salt-Pits, *Malatesta* on *Rimini*,  
 Duke of *Ferrara* on *Reggio* and *Modena*, and the  
 City of *Florrence* almost brought under the Yoke  
 by the *Medicis*, threw it off, and returned to their  
 former State of Government.

By the Disorders of the Soldiers and other causes  
 arising a Plague at *Rome*, they were like to carry  
 the Pope to *Cajeta*, and thence into *Spain*, which the  
 Emperor most passionately desired. In the mean time  
 the Union between the Kings of *England* and *France*  
 being more strict, and the Emperor having refused  
 to render the Pope and the King's Children, they  
 resolved to carry the War into *Italy* with all their  
 Forces; wherefore having concerted their Measures  
 accordingly, *Francis* on the 17th of *September* having  
 called an Assembly of the most notable Persons of the  
 three Estates of the Kingdom, for their Advice touch-  
 ing the Liberty of his Children, he offered to return  
 a Prisoner, if they thought he was obliged so to do,  
 rather than undertake any thing prejudicial to the State;  
 to which each of the three Orders separately, upon  
 the 20th of that Month answered That his Person

1527.

An Assem-  
 bly of  
 Notables.



The Peace  
of Cam-  
bray.

Dugass had taken, but St. Paul was by *Leva* surpris'd at *Landriens*, and taken Prisoner. After which there was a kind of a tacit Truce between the *French*, and the minds of all of them seem'd to be a Peace: About *June* it was first concluded between Pope and Emperor, upon advantageous Terms to the former; and in *July* *Margaret* the Emperor's Sister and *Louis* the King's Mother, meeting at *Cambray* in order to a Treaty, the same was concluded by the Ambassadors of the Pope, King of England, the *Venetians*, and published on the 5th of *August*. The Articles were almost the same as those of *Madrid*, saving that *Francis* was to retain *Burgundy*, to which the Emperor reserv'd his Rights to be pursued by friendly Methods; that the Sentence of *Condemnation* against *Pourbon* should be revoked, and his Estate restor'd to his Heirs; and as for the King's Ransom was to pay to the Emperor two Millions of *Gold Crowns*, i. e. 1200000 *Crowns* ready Money, for the Release of his Children; 400000 to the King of England, as from him; and for the security of the rest should engage to him the Lands which *Mary of Luxemburg* formerly had in *Flanders*, *Brabant*, and *Hainault*: Further, that he should redeem the *Flower de Luce*, which was a valuable Jewel that Duke of *Burgundy* the Good had pawn'd to the King of England, which he should likewise satisfy on the Emperor's behalf the Sum of 500000 *Crowns* in Gold, which he promis'd that King, in case he did not marry his Daughter. The *Venetians* and *Florentines* were compris'd in the Treaty; King Henry, tho' the Treaty was concluded without his Knowledge, yet for the need of the Interest of *Francis* for the vacating of his Marriage, he forgave him the 500000 *Crowns*, gratified his Son Henry with the Redemption of the *Flower de Luce*.

And here not to enter upon the particulars of the great Sultan *Solyman's* Progress in *Hungary*, or in manner how the *Florentines* lost their Liberty to the House of *Medici*; we are to acquaint you that *Francis* had much ado to make up the 1200000 *Crowns* promis'd by the Treaty of *Cambray*; but at last *Francis's* mercenary carried them to *Endaya* in *June* this

received the two Princes in exchange, and the  
soon after married *Eleonora* the Emperor's Sister *King mar-*  
~~trix~~; she was not handſom, and ſo never poſſeſſed *ried.*  
Heart of her Husband, which wandered other  
: However *Francis* during the Calms of Peace, *Francis*  
he Love of Ladies, joined that of Learning: *incoſtrages*  
XII. had cauſed him to be brought up in the *Learning.*  
age of the *Varre*, and ſo got a great Guſto for the *1531.*  
Sciencs, ſo that he kept near him the ableſt Men  
in Kingdom, who ſtudied to make handſom and  
edical Diſcourſes to him upon all parts of Learn-  
and moſtly while he ſate at Dinner; which he  
oved ſo well, that he became as knowing as the  
beſt Maſters. In acknowledgment of thoſe ineſti-  
e Benefits, he preferred many of them; he alſo  
ated the Royal Profeſſors at *Paris* for the Sci-  
and Tongues; and further had a Deſign to build  
College, and ſettle a Fund of 50000 Crowns for  
Education and Maintenance of 600 Gentlemen;  
got together a great number of antient Manu-  
: And in ſhort, he merited the glorious Sir-  
of the Father or Patron, and Reſtorer of Learn-

ow the long and tedious Wars, and his Captivity,  
ing accuſtomed the Nobility to all ſorts of Crimes  
Violences, he cauſed the Grand Tours or Seſſions

On the other hand, the Emperor during the Peace, endeavoured to compose the Affairs of the Empire, and going now to *Ratisbonne* he offered Supply against the *Turks*, who were with a Army ready to fall upon *Hungary*, and with by Sea upon *Italy*; wherefore he made an occasion to require *Francis* to lend him More of his *Gens d'Arms*: But to the first he answered was no *Banker*, and for his *Horse*, they were the Strength of his Government, and that he would do them no more than he would do his *Sword*, he fight at the head of them, that he might have in the Honour or the Danger. And therefore the King of *England* made a League to set 80,000 on Foot against the common Enemy, and *Francis* particularly offered to defend *Italy*: Indeed there appeared very strict between *Francis* and *Henry* who being desirous to confer together about Affairs, met at *St. Joquevert* in *October*, between *Logn* and *Calais*; they were both of them dissatisfied with the Pope, and projected League Designs against him: While the Pope and Emperor had an Interview at *Bologna*, with the Demonstrations of Affection as at first, but with much different Sentiments; for they could not agree at last in any one particular, and particularly ill satisfied with one another; and more especially the Emperor was concerned that the Pope was not so forward as he expected to excommunicate *Henry VIII.* for his going to divorce *Catherine* his Aunt. On the other hand, *Henry* made moment Instances to *Francis*, that he would let the Pope he might have Judges appointed on the spot to examine into his Marriage: But in short, by canvassing this matter to and fro, *Henry's* Impatience, or somewhat else, caused the Marriage to be proclaim'd null by his own Arch-bishop at which the Pope and Emperor were highly concerned, and the same ended at last in the Pope communicating the King, and the Reformation Church in *England*; but of this enough.

This Year in *October* the Pope in his Gallies came at *Marseilles*, and was there magnificently entertained.

Henry  
VIII. di-  
vorced.

1533.

## § 1. *The Reign of Francis I.*

King *Francis*, who upon this occasion shewed his Magnificence to the Cardinals, and made the even of his Mind and Eloquence to outshine the lustre of his Gifts. They parted on the 22<sup>d</sup> of ~~the~~ much satisfied, only that the King had extracted from his Holiness four Cardinals Hats: But for that there was no new League made between them contrary to the expectation of all the World: And as the business of the King of *England*, *Francis* could not prevail with the Pope to revoke the Excommunication; but his overhast, humanly speaking, lost *England*: For 'tis observable, if the Pope had delayed the Judgment but ten Months, Death would have disengaged him from those Intricacies by the death of *Catharine*, which hapned in *January* follow-

ing *Francis* his Constancy to the *Romish* Faith  
now to be much staggered by two strong Tem-  
ptations; the one was King *Henry* soliciting him to  
conform with the Pope, in order to the preserving of the  
Unity that was between them; while his Sister  
*Margaret* on the other hand pressed him to call in *Philip*  
*of Spain*, and give him Audience concerning the  
business he had to propose for accommodating the differ-  
ences about Religion; however his Answer to *Henry*  
of *France* was to the effect, and for the other

1534.

drawn up in *Latin* but in *French*, a matter we are deficient in, in respect to some Proceedings of our Law, and wants to be reformed.

Ghent's  
revolt.

1539.

The Emperor still caressed the King, perhaps because he should not undertake the Protection of the *Ghentois*, who now revolted because of some Imposts laid upon them by Queen *Mary* of *Hungary* their Governors; but *Francis* was so far from accepting their Offers, notwithstanding his late great Formality in confiscating *Flanders* and *Artois*, that by an excess of Generosity he gave the Emperor notice of it: But the Rebellion for all this growing greater and greater, the Emperor desired leave to go thro *France* thither to suppress them; and the two Sons of *France* with the Constable *Montmorancy*, who opposed the Council in tying *Charles* to any previous Conditions, went as far as *Bayonne* to meet him, and offered to go into Spain as Hostages, which he refused: The King himself, tho indisposed, went as far as *Chastelrand*, where they embraced each other, and *Francis* caused him to be received in every City with the same Honour, and suffered to exercise the same Authority as himself, for he held the Chapter of his Order on St. *Andrews* Day at *Bordeaux*, granted Pardons, and cleared the Prisons in many Places. He made his Entry into *Paris* on the first of *Jan.* when the Parliament went in a Body to complement him; the Sheriffs bore the Canopy of State over his Head, the two Sons of *France* being on either side of him, the Constable marched before with his Sword drawn: He released all Prisoners, and the City presented him with the Silver Statue of *Hercules* as big as the Life. At his Departure the King accompanied him to St. *Quentin*, and his two Sons to *Valenciennes*; and *Francis* not only promised to go and visit him in *Flanders*, but granted him a free Passage for a thousand of his *Italian* Forces to go for *Flanders*, and furnished them with Provisions.

Emperor's  
Passage  
thro, and  
Reception  
in France.

1540.

The Emperor in some time having subdued the *Ghentois*, and taken severe Revenge upon them, required that *Francis* should restore the Duke of *Savoy* to all his Territories, to declare himself a Friend to his Friends, and an Enemy to his Enemies: Upon which the King finding himself deceived in his Expectations,

grew

instead *Verand* of the Duke, for which he  
him Lands in France, and to complete the  
of his Daughter *Margaret* with Prince  
Savoy.

For the King at last conceived himself in  
at the Duke should do him Justice, about the  
of his Mother *Lorain*, who was the Duke  
is Sister, as also the late *Philippe* his Prede-  
or which and a free Passage for his Troops,  
sident of the Parliament of Paris, was sent  
but not receiving a satisfactory Answer, the  
ared War against him in Feb. this Year: In  
of which, the Admiral *Briou* entered his  
with the Army that had been raised to fall French in-  
lan, and at the very noise of his March all  
of the *Bress* and those of *Savoie* on this  
at *Cenis*, opened their Gates to the French  
pposition; the Duke was wholly unprovided  
, so that he could do no more till the sum-  
urn than only temporize, and in the mean  
nd himself by Submissions and Respects:  
e Emperor, he having foreseen the Clouds  
ering from all Quarters against him by the  
ng, King of England, Princes of Italy and  
gave out he was going to make War a-  
amous *Barbarossa*, and having actually im-  
rica with 50000 men, took *Constantinople*, and



towards the Reformation, courted both the King and the Emperor divers ways. The Emperor on his part had another Game to play, which was to recover the good Will of the Protestant Princes, amuse the *Turk*, as also the *French King*, with making new Offers of the Low Countries, under the Title of the Kingdom of *Belgica* to *Charles Duke of Orleans*, but *Francis* believed nothing of it.

1541. But here a new Cause of Rupture was offered between the King and *Charles*, which was, the Murder of his two Ambassadors, *Fregosa* and *Rincon*, by the *Spaniards*. The first was going to *Constantinople*, to preserve Amity with *Solyman*; the other to *Venice*, to endeavour to unlink that Republick from the Emperor's Interest, and enter into a League with *France*. The Fact was perpetrated, as they were going down the *Po* in a Bark, by the contrivance of *Du Guesst*; and *Langey* Governour of *Piedmont* being informed of it, the King had quickly an Account thereof, who demanded Reparation of the Emperor, but was chiefly answered by Recriminations. Farther, it having been well known the *Spaniards* had murdered many other of the King's Subjects and Messengers in divers Places, the King resolved to declare War against the Emperor, if he did not give him satisfaction within a limited time, tho whilst he was yet on his Voyage to *Algiers*, he had so much Generosity as to undertake nothing against him; but next year he sent him a Defiance in outrageous Terms, with bloody Reproaches, having before-hand commanded publick Prayers and a general Procession to be made to appease the Displeasure of God, and implore his Assistance.

French  
Armies set  
on foot a-  
gainst the  
Emperor.

- After the Death of *Rincon*, *Isclain Baron de la Garde* was sent to sollicite *Solyman* against the Emperor, as also the Republick of *Venice*; while *Francis*, in pursuance of his Declaration of War, set five Armies on foot; one about *Luxemburgh*, commanded by *Orleans* his second Son, under the Conduct of the Duke of *Guise*; another at *Perpignan* by the Dauphin, with *Amnebaut* and others for his Council; the third was to be sent under *Longueval* and *Marin* into *Brabant*; a fourth under the Duke of *Vendosme* to scour the Frontiers of *Flanders*; and the fifth was to be in *Piedmont*, under

the Places belonging to the Duke of *Savoy*, that not possess'd by the *French*; so that the unfortunate Prince had nothing left him but the City and : of *Nice*, where he made his Residence.

the Fear they had conceived in *Italy* lest the Em- should conquer *France*, made several petty Prin- der the Count of *Rangon* their General, private- confederate against him; and having set 1000 men t, tho they failed in their attempt upon *Genua*, hen the *Spaniards* rais'd the Siege of *Turin*, they *Sarignan*, *Racenis*, *Carmagnole*, and most of the islate of *Saluzzes*. On the other hand, the Count *Paul*, with 6000 *German* Foot drawn out of King is his Army, ruin'd the Country of *Tarentaise*, recovered *Chamberry*, which the Inhabitants of Valley had surprized; but *Bury*, whom the King iade Governor beyond the Mountains instead of , was hemmed in with 1200 men by the Marquess ast, in *Casal* which he had surprized; *Humieres* nt to command in his room, with a Reinforce of 10000 *German* Foot, of whom *Christopher* of *Wirtemburgh* was General.

hen the News of the Emperor's going to swallow *France*, came to *James* King of *Scotland*, he g to mind the antient Alliances between the two ns, after he was put back three several times, 16000 men at last arriv'd at *Dien* from whence



on him to set forth, that the Provinces belonging to the Crown were unalienable; that they could not give away the Sovereignty of *Flanders* and *Artois*; and that *Charles* of *Austria* (as they called him) being still a Vassal for those Countries and the County of *Cherolois*, had committed Felony; therefore it was enacted, he should be summoned by a single peremptory Edict, at the nearest Place of safe access, to answer the Advocate General upon his Conclusions of the Forfeit, Reversion and Re-union of those three Countries; and in the mean time, the King declared all the Vassals in those Countries acquitted and discharged of their Oaths to him, from all Faith and Homage, and enjoined them to serve the King upon the Penalty of the Forfeiture of their Fiefs, and to be proclaimed Rebels, whereof Publication was to be made upon the Frontiers. *Charles* hereupon fuming with Rage declared that since they recalled him into *France*, he would return with such powerful Justifications, he would make the Treaties of *Madrid* and *Cambray* to be duly observed, and in the mean time his Troops ransacked the Frontiers of *Picardy*.

Truces  
made.

*Francis* his Attempt did not answer this grand Decree of his Parliament; he took only *Hezain* and *St. Paul*, into which last they put 3000 men in Garrison; but as soon as the King was gone, the Imperialists took *Monstreuil* upon Articles. During the Siege of *Therouane*, a Conference was held at *Bormy*, at the Solicitations of *Eleonora* of *France* and *Mary* of *Hungary*, where a Cessation was agreed for three Months in the *Low Countries*, in order to a Peace: Some thought the King accepted of it with a Design to carry his Forces into *Italy*, in concert with *Solyman* and *Barbarossa*; but failing therein, *Solyman* returned angrily home. But the King being informed that his Affairs went very ill in *Piedmont*, that *Humières* was besieged by *Dagast* in *Pignerol*, and the *French* like to be driven out of that Country, he resolved to prevent it, and in some measure to satisfy *Solyman* to go thither in Person; but falling sick at *Lyons*, the Dauphin and *Monsieur* bravely forced the Pass at *Susa*, drove *Dagast* to *Quiers*, and gained several advantages which made the King hasten thither, in hopes of recovering the *Milan*.

He; his Army was above 40000 strong, yet did nothing memorable, so that they now agreed to a Truce those Countries beyond the Mountains, and proposed that with the *Low Countries* for the like time, which the unfortunate Duke of *Savoy* was still kept of his Dominions.

The King upon his return, made *Montmorancy* stable of *France*, and *Amnebaux* and *Montcien* deschaals; and there was a second Conference set on at *Locate* to treat of a final Peace: However they did agree to nothing but the Prolongation of the Truce for six Months; but the Pope fearing the War between these two Princes might obstruct the League which he, the Emperor and *Venetians* had concluded against the *Turks*, solicited them so earnestly, that both were resolved to meet at *Nice*, and accept of his Mediation: The Pope would have lodged in the Castle, *Francis* advised the Duke of *Savoy* underhand against it, at which and his Visit to the King, the Emperor took some umbrage; however the Pope being content to lodge in the Town, the Conference went on, the Princes saw not one another, from some Jealousy or other, and all that could be agreed on, was Prolongation of the Truce for nine Years: But the Emperor promised to see the King at *Aigues-Mortes* in *Languedoc* before he returned into *Spain*, as he actually went and dined in his House the King doing

1538.

*Nine Years  
Truce agreed at  
Nice*

drawn up in *Latin* but in *French*, a matter we-  
ficient in, in respect to some Proceedings of our  
and wants to be reformed.

thenois  
revolt.

1539.

Emperor's  
Passage  
thro, and  
Reception  
in France.

1540.

The Emperor still caressed the King, per-  
cause he should not undertake the Protection  
*Ghentois*, who now revolted because of some  
laid upon them by Queen *Mary of Hungary* the  
vernels; but *Francis* was so far from accepting  
Offers, notwithstanding his late great Fort  
confiscating *Flanders* and *Artois*, that by an  
Generosity he gave the Emperor notice of it.  
Rebellion for all this growing greater and  
the Emperor desired leave to go thro *France* to  
suppress them; and the two Sons of *Francis* the  
Constable *Montmorancy*, who opposed the Co-  
tying *Charles* to any previous Conditions, went  
as *Bayonne* to meet him, and offered to go in  
as Hostages, which he refused: The King himself  
indisposed, went as far as *Chastelraud*, where  
embraced each other, and *Francis* caused him  
received in every City with the same Honor  
suffered to exercise the same Authority as himself  
he held the Chapter of his Order on St. *Andrew*  
at *Bordeaux*, granted Pardons, and cleared  
tions in many Places. He made his Entry into  
the first of *Jan.* when the Parliament went  
dy to complement him; the Sheriffs bore the  
py of State over his Head, the two Sons of  
being on either side of him, the Constable  
before with his Sword drawn: He released  
ners, and the City presented him with the Sta-  
tue of *Hercules* as big as the Life. At his Depart-  
King accompanied him to St. *Quentin*, and  
Sons to *Valenciennes*; and *Francis* not only pro-  
go and visit him in *Flanders*, but granted him  
Passage for a thousand of his *Italian* Forces  
*Flanders*, and furnished them with Provisions.

The Emperor in some time having subdued  
*Ghentois*, and taken severe Revenge upon them  
red that *Francis* should restore the Duke of  
all his Territories, to declare himself a Friend  
Friends, and an Enemy to his Enemies: Upon  
the King finding himself deceived in his Expecta-

### **A. I. *The Reign of Francis I.***

suspicious of those about him; and there being Men only that had engrossed his Favour, viz. Constable, Cardinal of *Lozain*, and *Brion* the Archbishop of *Arles*; and this last by the means more particularly of *Estampes*, having got the start of the two, they contrived to ruin him, got him imprisoned at *Bois de Vincennes*, tried at *Melan*, and tho' he said very little against them, yet by the means of Chancellor *Poyet*, who managed the Trial; they undivested of his Offices, declared unworthy of any for the future, condemned to pay a Fine 100 Crowns, and shut up in the *Bastille*; however 18 Months after by the means of his Kinswoman *Desprez* he had a review of the Cause, and was cleared of the Fine in 1542. but being a Man of a haughty spirit, the Affront stuck so close to him, that he died 1 Year after.

The Chancellor not long after had his turn, and was  
ruined and ruined ; so that he died at last in *Paris*,  
fitted with Poverty, Ignominy and old Age ; hav-  
ing succeeded in his Office by *Montaigu*, Presi-  
dent in Parliament, a Man of rare Probity, a Virtue  
worthy in his Family. Neither did the Favour of  
Constable last long after the loss of *Poyet*, the King  
driving him the Court in 1542. and would never re-  
lin as long as he lived : Common Fame attributed  
cause of his Removal to the Counsel he gave for

towards the Reformation, courted both the King and the Emperor divers ways. The Emperor on his part had another Game to play, which was to rectify the good Will of the Protestant Princes, and as also the French King, with making new use of the Low Countries, under the Title of the Lordship of *Belgica* to Charles Duke of Orleans, but believed nothing of it.

1541.

But here a new Cause of Rupture was offered between the King and Charles, which was, the Murder of his two Ambassadors, *Fregosa* and *Rincon*, by the Spaniards. The first was going to Constantinople to preserve Amity with *Solyman*; the other to Venice to endeavour to unlink that Republick from the Empire, and enter into a League with France. The Fact was perpetrated, as they were going down the *Po* in a Bark, by the contrivance of *Du Guise*, the *Largely* Governour of *Piedmont* being informed thereof, the King had quickly an Account thereof, and demanded Reparation of the Emperor, but was answered by Recriminations. Farther, it being well known the Spaniards had murdered many of the King's Subjects and Messengers in divers Places, the King resolved to declare War against the Emperor, he did not give him satisfaction within a limited time, tho' whilst he was yet on his Voyage to *Algiers*, he was so much Generosity as to undertake nothing against him, but next year he sent him a Defiance in other Terms, with bloody Reproaches, having before commanded publick Prayers and a general Fast to be made to appease the Displeasure of God, and implore his Assistance.

French  
Armies set  
on foot a-  
gainst the  
Emperor.

1542.

After the Death of *Rincon*, *Isclain* Baron of *de* was sent to sollicite *Solyman* against the Emperor, as also the Republick of *Venice*; while Francis, in pursuance of his Declaration of War, set five Armies on foot; one about *Luxemburgh*, commanded by his second Son, under the Conduct of the Duke of *Guise*; another at *Perpignan* by the Duke of *Armebaut* and others for his Council; the third to be sent under *Longueval* and *Morin* into *Brabant*; the fourth under the Duke of *Vendosme* to scour the frontiers of *Flanders*; and the fifth was to be in *Italy*.

the Mareschal de Annebaut, which having been there idle above two months, was ordered to join Dauphin in *Roussillon*, which made them 45000. They had represented to the King the taking French *Perpignan* to be a very easy thing; but the Emperor *attack* provided it so well, that it made a very good De- *Perpignan* and Discords in the mean time arising amongst *in vain*. Commanders, with a Flux in the Army, besides great Rains that fell, they were ordered to de-

*Orleans* had better Success than his Brother, signalized his first Campaign by the taking of *Salliers, Ivoy, Arlon, Montmedy, and Luxemburgh*. But, as if he had been gluttoned with his good me, he left the Army in *September*, and went to upon his Father at *Montpellier*, which gave the an opportunity to recover *Luxemburg and Medy*, tho the Duke of *Guise* afterwards won last Place again from them.

the Inhabitants of *Rochel, Marennas* and the *A Revolt of the Rochellers.* having revolted upon the Government's *1543.* favouring to settle the Gabel in those Parts, the went thither to suppress the Commotion, and *Rebel* caused a great many of the Seditious to be put in Chains before him, with a Design to put to Death; but his Heart relented at the humble request made to him by their Advocate, and there

The Success of the French in the Netherlands.

the Duke of *Gueldres* held the Emperor in prison for some Weeks about the Country of *Lindree*; at last fixed upon the fortifying of *Lindree*; he had given the necessary Orders for it, he was camp at *Maroles*, and from thence repulsed the *Rheims*, whither he had caused the Ladies to divert him. In the mean time the Dauphin led part of the Army in taking the Castle of *Mauberge*, while *Orleans* entered *Luxemburg* took the capital City of the Dutchy, which was ordered to be fortified.

On the other hand, the Emperor having taken the way of *Italy* into *Germany*, first attacked the Duke of *Cleve* and took *Duren*, and so obliged the Prince that he submitted, and promised to give his Alliance with the French, and Title of *Gueldres*: But *Solyman* to make his Promise good, *Francis*, besides his falling by Land upon *France*, sent his Fleet under *Barbrossa* to the Coast of *Italy*, where he was joined by the Count of *Toulon* with 22 Gallies, and both of them carried the Siege to *Nice*; the Town they quickly possessed themselves of, but the Castle making an obstinate defence, and *Barbrossa* not caring to stay for the *Doria*, retired to the Coast of *Provence* and wintered, not without committing many crimes upon the very French themselves, whom he blamed for their Negligence and want of Care, but at the Approach of Spring he sailed away; and Englobing back his Land-Forces to this side the Duke of *Savoy* and *Du Gues* employed them to take *Montdevin* and fortify *Carignan*; which they took, and put the *Swiss* Garison to the Sword: Hereupon *Englobin* was sent by the Emperor to command his Army on that side, instead of *Francis* who was recalled; and being just upon taking the Town and unwilling another should reap the fruit of his Conquest, he went to meet *Englobin* with his whole Army, chusing rather, if we may so say, to let the Prey escape, than that another should have the Quarry.

The Emperor on the other hand, after he had brought the Duke of *Cleve* to submit, laid

Landrecy; and finding Force did not well prevail, Francis  
ought to have gained it by Famine: Indeed they relieved  
Landrecy. much in a Siege of two Months, when the  
Emperor putting himself at the head of his Army, ap-  
peared within two Leagues of the Besiegers: The  
Emperor believing he would give him Battel, drew his  
Army from the further side of the *Sambre* to join  
with those on this side, which giving Francis an  
opportunity to put Relief into the Town, he retreated  
very securely in the Night, and put his Army into  
frontier Garisons, while the Emperor also in four  
or five days after marched off also, but by Intelli-  
gence seized upon *Cambray*, and built a Citadel erected  
the Burghers own Charge to bridle them. Emperor  
takes Cam-  
bray.

On the pass over the Earl of *Furstemburg's* failing to  
keep *Luxemburg* from the French, and the severe Frost  
that hapned this Year, which froze the very Wines  
in their Casks, so that they were fain to cut it with  
axes, and the Lumps were sold by the pound; and  
the Count sent the Country to *Piedmont*, where the brave  
Count having taken all the Posts about *Carignan*,  
kept his Blockade on the 1st of *February*, while  
the Emperor on his part thought to have seized on *Car-*  
*ignan* to put in Supplies; but the Count getting  
word before him, left him no possibility of saving  
Place, but by hazarding a Battel; so that they



Francis his  
Death.

and to allow him in particular the Religion, and promised to send 100000 Father, and as much to the *Landgraves* such time as he could assist them with in the *Interim* his Concern for the Dead increasing his inveterate Distemper, lingring Fever that was upon him is one, of which he died at the Castle of the last of *March*, and made an End of a Generous and Christian Prince. He commended to his Son to diminish the Tax had too much raised, not to recal *Admiral De Tournon*, to whom he began Crowns, and *Annebani* in the Admiralty him, That Children ought to imitate their Fathers, that the *French* being

ous in War, the Father and Restorer of good  
ure and the Liberal Arts.

was a Prince that hardly had his Equal in Libe-<sup>He Cha-</sup>  
Magnificence and Clemency ; and if he had <sup>rafter.</sup>  
such great Co-temporaries as *Charles, Solyman*  
*senry*, none could have compared with him in  
; Eloquence and useful Learning. He would  
have been a great Prince in all things, had he  
retimes suffered himself to be prepossess'd by the  
counsels of his Ministers, and a Passion towards  
n. These, to fix their own Power, set up his  
ity above the antient Laws of the Government,  
o an Irregularity therein : The Women he  
being vain and prodigal, changed his noble  
of Fame to Fastuosity and Vanity, and made  
en throw away that Money in idle Expences,  
he had designed for some great Enterprize.  
ft ten Years of his Life, the Anxiety of his  
per made him a good Husband : For notwith-  
g his Buildings and various Liberalities, at  
th he left all his own Demefnes free from Incum-  
, 400000 Crowns of Gold in his Coffers, and  
er of a Years Revenue ready to be paid in. His  
was a Salamander in the Fire, with this Motto,  
• & *Extinguo*. And I may also note here, that  
Red into Dutchies and Peerages, the County of

Peace be-  
ween the  
English &  
French.  
1550.

light thought fit to enter into a Treaty of Peace with France, which was concluded on the 24th of March this Year; whereby they promised to give up *Bologna* upon the payment of 400000 Crowns in Gold, viz. one half in hand, and the other six Months after: *Scotland* was comprehended in this Treaty. And now the House of *Guise* began to grow mightily; of whom *Francis* Duke of *Aumale* had upon his Father's Decease assumed his Title, and his Brother *Charles*, called the Cardinal of *Guise*, became very great, not so much by his Merit, tho he had a great deal, as by his Compliance to the King's Mistress; and his Interest prevailed so far, that he got the President of the Parliament of *Paris* turned out, not long after which *Diana* caused the Seals to be taken from the Chancellor *Olivier*, and given to *Bertrandi*.

1551.

The Abuses of the Banquiers and Datary of the Court of *Rome*, about the Resignation of Benefices, were come to that pass at this time, that all the French Clergy complained of it, and the King redressed it by an Edict: About which, and more especially the Ditchy of *Parma*, he was at ill terms with the Pope; so that *Henry* judging it to be the highest piece of Folly to furnish the Enemy with that wherewith he might make a War, forbade all his Subjects upon severe Penalties, to carry either Gold or Silver to *Rome*, or any other Place under the Pope's Obedience; but at the same time he made a most grievous Edict on the 25th of June, for the discovering and punishing the Religionaries in his Kingdom, who observed from that very time, as they have in a manner experimented ever since upon the like occasions, that no time could be so bad to them, as when the French Court was imbroiled with that of *Rome*. A little before this the Pope sent his Nephew *Coma* to dissuade the King from protecting *Parma* and *Miranda*; but being able to effect nothing, *Gonsague* besieged *Parma*, and *De Monte* the Pope's Nephew *Miranda*, and so a War begun between the King and the Pope: The Enemy being strongest, the King's Forces durst not attack them; but they made such a terrible Havock about *Bologna*, that the Pope sent to his Army to hasten to his Subjects Assistance, and so the Siege was raised.

Henry at  
War with  
the Pope.

had failed of his Word in part, yet being still desirous to keep in with *France*, he would needs without being required, have the King comprehended therein, as if he had been absolutely a Party concerned: And here is observable, that in the Writings or Instruments of this Truce, *Solyman* styles *Charles V.* barely King of *Spain* and no more; whereas *Henry* was entituled King of *France*, the most Serene Emperor of *France*, his most dear Friend and Ally.

But to leave this Treaty, we are here to take notice, that before King *Henry* was crowned he had the News of the Emperor's having vanquished the Protestant Princes of the League of *Smalcalde*, and taken the Duke of *Saxony*, the chief Commander, and others Prisoners. By which Blow all *Germany* seeming to have been subjugated, the *French* were mightily concerned at it, and so were the Pope (who had ground of other Quarrels with the Emperor) and Republick of *Venice*; so that the King and the Pope were for entering into a defensive League, for fear the Emperor should fall upon them: And *Henry* with much eagerness endeavoured to preserve the Alliance of the *French*, and to break the Truce between *Charles* and *Solyman*, that the latter might renew the War in *Hungary*: In which case the *French* Ambassadors assured, that their King would not fail to do him the Office of

New Methods of  
raising  
Money.

*Presideaux*, and to erect the *Chambre de Monoyes* to a Sovereign Court : He also got Silver Plate of all such as lent him any, to convert it into Testons ; and levied a Tax of twenty Livres upon every Stæple, Jewels and Church-Fabricks, not excepting even the Mendicants ; the Dutcheſs of *Valentinois* was ſaid to have a good ſhare of this Collection.

Henry ſei-  
zes Lorain.  
1552.

At the ſame time the King and Confederate Princes made both their Manifeſto's and Arms to appear together ; and *Maurice* was like to have oppreſſed and taken the Emperor himſelf at *Inſpruck*, while the King on his ſide being about to take the Field, left the Regency in the Queen ; and the firſt thing he did was to ſeize upon *Lorain*, and the young Duke *Charles* whom he bred up in *France*, and gave the Government of the Country to the Count of *Vaudemont* ; then he took *Metz*, *Toul* and *Verdun* by ſurprize, which Cities have ever ſince been under the French. The King's Deſign was alſo to have ſeized *Alſatia*, but *Strasburg* was upon its Guard, and ſent him ſome Proviſions : But *Haguenau* and *Viſburg* opened their Gates to him. In the mean while *Maurice* having reſtored almoſt all the Cities and Princes to their Liberties, and fearing if he did not accept of terms, his Father-in-law's Head muſt pay for it ; he made a Peace with the Emperor, without the Intervention of King *Henry*, to whom he ſent an Envoy to excuſe it ; and at the ſame time the Electors of *Mentz* and *Triers* with ſome other German Princes finding the King penetrate ſo far, they ſent to intreat him, that ſince he had no other Deſign but to be the Protector of the German Liberty, and that they had recovered it, not to advance any farther. He was a little ſurprized at the Complement, but diſſembling his Diſpleaſure, answered, *he was very well content, ſince they were ſo ; wherefore at the ſame time, that he might not diſoblige them, and having alſo Information that Mary Queen of Hungary Governeſs of the Low-Countries, had ravaged the Frontiers of Champagne, he marched into Luxemburgh, took Rochemars, Damvilliers, Tvoys and Montmedy, as the Mareſchal de la Mark did the Caſtle of Bouillon, which the Emperor had taken from his Grandfather one and thirty Years before. This*

*done,*

cess to be formed against the whole City by the Master of the Requests, who by a Sentence on the 26<sup>th</sup> of Oct. declared it guilty of Rebellion, and so all their Privileges to be forfeited; he condemned them to maintain two Gallies for the Governor, to furnish the two Castles with Ammunition, and to pay a Fine of 200000 Livres: Besides he took away their Bells, suspended the Parliament, which continued so for a whole Year, ordered their Town-hall to be rased, and a Chappel built on the same Place where they should pray for the Soul of *Moneins*; That the Jurats with an hundred of the most eminent Citizens should dig up his Corps with their Nails, and carry him each with a Flambeau in his Hand to St. *Andrew's* Church, and stopping before the Constable's Door, cry out for Mercy: Besides all which there were above 100 of the most noted of them put to Death; so that this great Severity alienated the Affections of the People from him, and the *Lorain* Branch began to reign in their Hearts: However some time after the King, more benign and easy, moderated the Rigour of the Sentence in many particulars, and his Son *Charles IX.* conferred more ample Privileges upon them.

The remainder of the Year was mostly spent in Rejoicings and Divertisements; and the King upon his being crowned at *St. Dennis*, added Tiltings, running of the Ring Balls, great Entertainments and Allu-

Bourde-  
aux severe-  
ly punished.

lightthought fit to enter into a Treaty of Peace with  
 France, which was concluded on the 24th of March  
 this Year; whereby they promised to give up *Burgundy*  
 upon the payment of 400000 Crowns in Gold, viz. one  
 half in hand, and the other six Months after: *Scarlato*  
 was comprehended in this Treaty. And now the  
 House of *Guise* began to grow mightily; of whom  
*Francis Duke of Anjou* had upon his Father's De-  
 cease assumed his Title, and his Brother *Charles*, called  
 the Cardinal of *Guise*, became very great, not so much  
 by his Merit, tho he had a great deal, as by his Com-  
 plaisance to the King's Mistresses; and his Interest pre-  
 vailed so far, that he got the President of the Parlia-  
 ment of *Paris* turned out, not long after which *Dumoulin*  
 caused the Seals to be taken from the Chancellor *Olivier*  
*et*, and given to *Bertrandi*.

1551. The Abuses of the Banquiers and Datary of  
 Court of *Rome*, about the Resignation of Benefices  
 were come to that pass at this time, that all the French  
 Clergy complained of it, and the King redressed it  
 an Edict: About which, and more especially the  
 City of *Parma*, he was at ill terms with the Pope  
 that *Henry* judging it to be the highest piece of  
 to furnish the Enemy with that wherewith he  
 make a War, forbade all his Subjects upon  
 Penalties, to carry either Gold or Silver to *Rome*  
 any other Place under the Pope's Obedience; &  
 the same time he made a most grievous Edict on  
 25th of June, for the discovering and punishing  
 Religionaries in his Kingdom, who observed from  
 very time, as they have in a manner experimented  
 since upon the like occasions, that no time could  
 so bad to them, as when the French Court was im-  
 led with that of *Rome*. A little before this the  
 sent his Nephew *Carna* to dissuade the King from  
 taking *Parma* and *Miranda*; but being able to effect  
 thing, *Gonsague* besieged *Parma*, and *De Monte* the  
 Nephew *Miranda*, and so a War begun between the  
 and the Pope: The Enemy being strongest, the  
 Forces durst not attack them; but they made such a  
 ble Havock about *Bologna*, that the Pope sent to  
 my to hasten to his Subjects Assistance, and so the  
 was raised.

Henry at  
 War with  
 the Pope.

the mean time *Aramon* the King's Ambassador, *At War with the Emperor.*  
 is disposed *Solyman* to a Rupture with the Empe-  
 the *Turkish* Fleet put to Sea in the *Mediterranean*,  
 the King's Navy of forty Gallies under the Prior of  
 sa, blocked up *Andrea Doria* the Emperor's Admi-  
 i *Nice* and *Villa Franca*; but not agreeing among  
 selves, he was reinforced and got off: By this  
 the King finding the Emperor sufficiently embar-  
 d on all Hands, resolved on a War against him,  
 sent *Brissac* his Governor of *Piedmont* to begin the  
 ure on that side, while the Duke of *Nevers* should  
 e like in *Champagne*, and the Duke of *Vendosme*  
 l enter *Artois* and *Hainault*. The Season was  
 vanced, so that the two last could do no more  
 commit some Ravages, and take a few small Forts.  
*Brissac* took *Quiers* and *St. Damian*; at the noise  
 ich *Gonsague* who had besieged *Parma* again,  
 but yet durst not fight *Brissac*; while at Sea,  
 the General of the *French* Gallies, took divers  
 from the Enemy.

on the *German* side, there was something else  
 ving of much more Importance: We have told  
 efore of the Emperor's defeating the Protestants;  
 which time forward the Landgrave of *Hess* by a  
 Devil was detained Prisoner, while *Maurice* his  
 law, now the Emperor's General, was engaged  
 reducing of the other Protestants: but King



The Battel  
of Renty.

fighting and spiteful Words, and I know not  
kind of Songs had been made on either side : But  
Henry had ravaged *Brabant*, *Hainault*, the Count  
of *Cambray* and *Namur*, he entred into *Artois*,  
laid Siege to the Castle of *Renty*. The Emperor  
upon resolving to relieve it, would fain have seized  
on a Wood, the Situation whereof must have  
of great advantage to him; upon this followed a  
Engagement, which was the 13th of *Aug.* when  
Duke of *Guse* signalized himself very much;  
Emperor seeming to have the worst of it, found  
Retreat, leaving some Cannon and about 2000  
slain in the Field : However the King for want of  
visions raised the Siege, returned home, and left  
of the Army with the Duke of *Vendosme* to cover  
Frontiers, but he could not hinder them from ravaging  
the Country as far as *St. Riquier*, from whence they  
up along the *Autie*, and pretending to have an  
upon *Monstreville*, fortified the Village of *Mesnil*  
on the *Canche*.

The War  
of Sienna.

The same Night the Battel of *Renty* was  
came News to the Camp of the Battel of *Mons*  
the Country of *Sienna*, which allayed the Emperor's  
Sorrow, and the Joy of the *French*; but before  
speak of this Event, we must observe somewhat  
was previous to it. At first the Duke of *Florence*  
a mind *Sienna* should be a free State, the Pope  
have it to be under the Power of the Emperor  
some particular Interests: *Garcias de Toledo* com-  
ed the Imperial Army now in *Tuscany*, and to  
that of *France* : The Imperialists got most of the  
ces, as well along the Seathoar as the Valley of *Arno*.  
But they met with nothing but Blows at *Monte Catini*,  
but having notice the *Turkish* Fleet was at *Sessa*,  
that *Brissac* had gained great Advantages in *Piedmont*,  
*Garcias* was obliged to send back the best part of  
Forces into *Naples* and the *Milanese* : These  
tures, and *Dragut's* descent upon the Isle of *Elbe*,  
no great Success, with his retiring, as also *Terracina*,  
the greatest part of the *French* Commanders, to  
*Arca*, which last imagined there was no farther  
in *Sienna*, hapned in 1553. but this Year the King  
*Peter Strozzi* to command the Army instead

he put his Troops into Garison on the Frontiers-  
way: But before he had left *Germany*, he had  
perceiv'd that his Agents had made a Truce for two  
years with the Pope, which confirm'd the possession  
of the *House of Farnese*.

The Emperor was so much concerned for the loss of *Emperors*  
*Toul* and *Verdun*, that without considering the *besieges*  
was so far spent, he laid Siege to *Metz* with *Metz in*  
60,000 Men; and at the same time the Count of *Reux* *vain*  
of *Picardy*, after he had burnt *Noyon*, *Roye*,  
*Chawwy*, and the Royal House of *Folembray*, he  
besieged and took *Hesdin* by Storm, tho' it was reco-  
ver'd the same Year by the Duke of *Vendosme*. How-  
ever the *Parisians* were so terrified lest *Reux* should  
surrender, that the King ordered their City to be  
besieged on that side, but at their own Charge. In the  
same time *Metz*, tho' ill fortified, was gallantly defend-  
ed by the Duke of *Guisse*; who did in short thereby  
earn a never dying Fame, insomuch that tho' the Mar-  
quis of *Brandenburgh* now openly declared for the  
Emperor, after he had surprized the Duke of *Aumale*,  
tho' were the Severities of Winter, so great were  
the signs of the Imperialists, and so much Valour  
showed by the Besieged, that the Emperor at last  
in the first of *Jun.* after the loss of 30,000 Men, drew  
back and retired to *Thionville*, while the French to do  
Justice, instead of knocking his Soldiers on the

turns in their respective six Months: However necessity extorted from the Ministers for the People of *Genève* what Compassion could never obtain: For observing there was great Danger, and yet greater Expence in settling the Gabel in that Province; they took it off, and forced the People to pay 1200000 Crowns to exempt themselves from that Grievance.

1555.

*Brissac* was not idle all this while in *Piedmont*, he failed indeed to take *Valseniere*, they would not let him out of envy put his grand Project of attacking *Sienna* in execution; however he took *Vercell* and *Turce*, and by Intelligence surpris'd *Casal*: After which the Marechal attacked the Citadel, and in a few days forced it to capitulate. In the mean time the *English* mediated a Peace between the Princes, without Success; but neither Party being well prepared for War, the Summer pass'd on this side without any great Exploits; but beyond the *Alps* the Imperials took *Porto Hercole*, while the *French* succeeded ill at the Siege of *Calvi* in *Corfica*: The Marechal of *Brissac* took *Ulpian*, and tho' but little assisted by the Count, bravely made Head against the Duke of *Alva*, who had 25000 Men under him, with which however he could not take *St. Ja.*

The Death  
of the King  
of Navarre  
and Queen  
Jane of  
Spain.

*Henry d' Albret* dying on the 25th of *May*, the King had a Desire to seize the remainder of that petty Kingdom, and to give *Anthony d' Bourbon*, who had married the Heiress, some Lands in Exchange; but *Anthony* hastned to take possession, at which the King gave divers Instances of his Displeasure. To this we are to add the Death of another Illustrious Person, who was *Queen Jane*, the Widow of *Philip* the First, and Mother of the Emperor *Charles V.* aged 73 Years: She had been kept up as one distracted ever since the Death of her Husband, tho' they still reserv'd to her the Title of Queen of *Spain*, which in all publick Instruments was join'd with that of the Emperor her Son, who now being grown crazy in Body, and wearied with the Toils of Empire, resign'd his Hereditary Dominions to his Son *Philip*, and a Year after the Empire to his Brother *Ferdinand*.

Charles re-  
signs his  
Dominions.

This Year having also proved fatal to *Julius III.* he was succeeded in the Papal Chair by *Peter Caraffa*, who

they brought it to capitulate; but as soon as the French General was gone, *Doria* recovered those Places before Winter, except *Boniface* and three more.

We will not enter upon any particulars here of the End and Death of *Edward VI.* King of *England*; only to observe, that after his Sister *Mary* had weathered point against the Lady *Jane Grey*, and was on the Throne, she was married to *Philip* Prince of Spain the Emperor's Son, which could not be a bad Match to the French; however all this Year, the Month of *June*, there had been a kind of tacit truce of Arms between the King and the Emperor, during which Cardinal *Pool* undertook to mediate Peace. The Emperor indeed would willingly have accepted of a Truce, since that would have been very advantageous to the *Low-Countries*, which they would have time to settle, and as it were solder themselves with *England*, but for the same reasons it was not so for *Henry*; and further, neither would his Honour nor Interest allow him to suffer the *Siennois* to be excluded, as the Emperor absolutely required: As he had Information, the Emperor was much debilitated both in Body and Mind; wherefore he took resolution to carry on the War, and having raised an Army of 50000 Men, he divided them into three

1554

Truce con-  
cluded.

1556.

precaution to secure himself: And in the mean time the Duke of *Alva* being informed of this Treaty, after he had secured the *Milanese* and *Piedmont*, went for *Naples*, while King *Henry* was again engaging the *Turks* on his side. Now tho this League was concluded before the end of 1555, it did not hinder the Mediation of *Mary Queen of England*, to effect a Truce between the Emperor and King for five Years, and the same was signed in *February* this Year; the Emperor contributing very much to it, as being very well satisfied this Calm would consolidate the new begun Reign of his Son. When the Cardinal of *Caraffa* heard of it, he made great Complaints to *Henry*, and insisted he would at least put those Places he had left in *Sienna* into the Pope's Hands for security; the King was for some time irresolute upon the matter, but at last *Valentinus* and others siding with the Cardinal, they hurried him to the Precipice, and made him resolve to declare War against the *Spaniards*: But first it was thought fit to send to the Emperor and King *Philip*, to require them to re-call the Duke of *Alva* and his Forces out of the Ecclesiastical State, where they had already taken *Ofria* and divers other Places. In the mean time, whilst the Army for *Italy* was making ready, *Strozzi* was ordered to assist the Pope, to whom they sent 3000 Men under the Command of *Montluc*, who made *Alva* retire out of the Neighbourhood of *Rome*.

1557.

French un-  
successful  
in Italy.

Moreover, all things being ready, the Duke of *Guise* with a gallant Train in the beginning of *January* arrived in *Italy*, and took *Valentia*; about the same time that the Admiral *De Coligny* made an Attempt upon *Doway*, but failing of that he ravaged *Artois* and burnt *Lens*. *Valentia* being taken, *Brissac* would have attacked the *Milanese* then unprovided; but the King's express Directions were otherwise, and so the Duke marched directly for *Rome*, where he was very honourably received, but found things in little readiness for the intended Enterprize upon *Naples*: However in *April* he entred that Kingdom upon the vain Promises of the *Caraffa's*, attacked and took *Campiglio*, and then *a Crovirelle*, where the French Impetuosity run aground. In the Interim *Alva* was fallen upon the Ecclesiastical State,

who as he was a mortal Enemy to the *Medicis*, imagined he had made choice of him to renew Intrigues concerning the Liberty of the *Florentine*. The Cardinal of *Ferrara*, who was Intendant for the King of the Government of *Sienna*, bore Umbrage at it, but there was no occasion, for he grew careless, and did little. In the meantime Marquess of *Marignan* invested *Sienna* for *Cosmo*, ever the Duke of *Florence* had the disadvantage of three first Months; *la Corne* one of his Commanders thinking to surprize *Clusio*, lost 1200 men, and himself made a Prisoner; *Strozzi* defeated *Malatesta* near *Petia*, and slew 2000 of his Men, then he received a Reinforcement, recovered one of the Castles of *Sienna*, which *Malatesta* had surprized by Treachery, and ravaged all the Duke's Country to the Gates of *Florence*. But the career of his Fortune quickly stopt, his Brother *Leo* was slain at *Marignan*; however he escaped to *Montalien*, where he allied: But things now growing worse and worse, *Malatesta* at last capitulated for *Sienna* it self, which he enjoyed its Liberty in the form of a Republick; the Emperor gave it his Son *Philip*, who in 1558 sold it to the Duke of *Florence*.

It is not altogether to keep to the Actions of the Field.

turns in their respective six Months: How  
extorted from the Ministers for the Peo-  
ple what Compassion could never ob-  
serving there was great Danger, and yet  
pence in settling the Gabel in that Province  
it off, and forced the People to pay 120000  
to exempt themselves from that Grievance.

1555.

*Brissac* was not idle all this while in  
failed indeed to take *Valseniere*, they w-  
him out of envy put his grand Project  
*Sienna* in execution; however he took  
*Torre*, and by Intelligence surprised *Ci*  
which the Marechal attacked the Citad-  
few days forced it to capitulate. In the  
*English* mediated a Peace between the Prin-  
Success; but neither Party being well  
War, the Summer passed on this side  
great Exploits; but beyond the *Alps* the  
took *Porto Hercule*, while the French suc-  
the Siege of *Calvi* in *Corfica*: The Marechal  
took *Ulpia*, and tho but little assisted by  
bravely made Head against the Duke of  
had 25000 Men under him, with which  
could not take *St. Ja.*

The Death  
of the King  
of Navarre  
and Queen  
Jane of  
Spain.

*Henry d' Albret* dying on the 25th of  
King had a Desire to seize the remainder of  
Kingdom, and to give *Anthony d' Bourbon*  
married the Heiress, some Lands in *Es-*  
*Anthony* hastned to take possession, at w-  
gave divers Instances of his Displeasure.  
are to add the Death of another Illustrious  
who was Queen *Jane*, the Widow of *Philip*  
and Mother of the Emperor *Charles V.*  
She had been kept up as one distracted  
Death of her Husband, tho they still re-  
the Title of Queen of Spain, which in  
Instruments was joined with that of the  
Son, who now being grown crazy in Body,  
with the Toils of Empire, resigned his  
Dominions to his Son *Philip*, and a Year  
pire to his Brother *Ferdinand*.

This Year having also proved fatal to  
was succeeded in the Papal Chair by *Ad-*

g quickly embroiled with the Spaniards, had  
 : against them, but in the French; and there-  
 ng sent to require King Henry's Assistance,  
 equital promised his for the conquering of  
 dom of Naples, the wisest Counsellors were  
 s giving ear to these Proposals; besides, they  
 d France was drained of Money, that they  
 k enough to defend themselves against Spain,  
 and the Low Countries, with whom they  
 on find England joined; that it would be a hard  
 preserve Piedmont, and therefore they were  
 condition to undertake a Foreign War upon  
 it of a faithless and variable People, and the  
 e of an old Man, who had one Foot in the  
 and no other Weapons but the Spiritual Sword,  
 little use and effect in a Temporal War.  
 r the Cardinal of Lorraine carried the King to  
 rary opinion, that the Duke of Guise might  
 e Command of the Army in Italy; at which  
 stable was not dissatisfied, as expecting they  
 : embarrass themselves in an Affair that would  
 good Success. Thus the Alliance was rough  
 it Paris, and finished at Rome; the same being  
 : and defensive, not only between them, but  
 : States of Italy, excepting Piedmont: And the  
 ce of it was, That towards the Expences of

Henry  
 makes an  
 Alliance  
 with the  
 Pope a-  
 gainst  
 Spain.



Forces out of the Ecclesiastical State,  
already taken *Offia* and divers other  
mean time, whilst the Army for *Italy*  
dy, *Strozzi* was ordered to assist the  
they sent 3000 Men under the *Comma*  
who made *Alva* retire out of the *Ne*  
*Rome*.

1557. Moreover, all things being ready,  
*Guise* with a gallant Train in the begin  
arrived in *Italy*, and took *Valencia*;  
time that the Admiral *De Coligny* m  
upon *Doway*, but failing of that he

te, and invested *Rome* it self; so that the Pope's communications doing him no good, he called back Duke of *Guise* into *Romagna*, and there received the News of the unfortunate Battel of *Sr. Quintin*.

For the Truce being broken between the two Crowns, *Tip* raised an Army of 50000 Men, and knew so how to manage the *English*, tho they had limited by many Restrictions, that they suffered themselves to be induced to espouse his Quarrel: Hereupon *Mary* declared War against the *French*, and some thousands of Men to join the *Spaniards*.

Duke of *Savoy*, who was Governor of the Low Countries, and *Philip's* Generals made a Feint of attacking several Towns, but on the 3d of *August* late before *Sr. Quintin*, which was neither very well aided nor fortified, so that the great *Coligny* had time to force his way to it thro the Enemies up with 6 or 700 Horse and 200 Foot: The Reputation of so famous a Commander served for some as a strong Bulwark to the Place, into which the attempted to put Relief divers times. At last Constable his Uncle drew near, and passed the with the King's whole Army, designing to put Men thro the Marshes into the Town; but this done with so much precipitation, that hardly 500

Battel of

Spaniards  
take St.  
Quentin  
by Storm.

severely paid for it by the loss of *Calais*. However we must not derogate at all from the Valour and Conduct of the Duke of *Savoy*, and the brave Exploit of the famous Count *Egmont*; while on the other hand this was the greatest Blow *France* had felt since the Battels of *Cressy* and *Poitiers*. *Philip* for some particular Reasons would not let the Duke of *Savoy* pursue the Game, whereby *France* must have been lost, and indeed *Charles V.* having received the news of this important Victory, asked the Courier, if his Son were in *Paris*; they went therefore on with the Siege of *St. Quentin*, and the Admiral delayed to capitulate so long, till he saw the Town stormed at five several Breaches, and was taken Prisoner with his Brother *Dandelot*, who got away the following Night; and the Spanish Army spent the rest of the Campaign taking *Catelet*, *Han* and *Noyon*.

*Paris* was so frightened with these Disasters, that a thousand Horse on that side the *Oyse* would have made it a Desert; however they laboured hard to keep it, the King raised more Forces, and the Duke of *Guise* with his Army had Orders to return home: He had also recourse to *Solyman*, to borrow some Money of him, and have his Fleet at Sea; the first he excused by alledging their Law forbade them to lend any to the Christians, but the other he promised. In the mean while the great Cities of *France* opened their Ports freely to the King (who yet persecuted the poor Protestants at this time) and he then really found true what his Father had told him upon his Death-bed: That the French were the best People in the World, and that it was both Hard-heartedness and ill Policy to vex them by extraordinary Taxes, since they were so freely bleed for the necessities of the State.

The Duke of *Guise* according to order leaving *Italy* and the Pope and Duke of *Ferrara* to make an Accommodation with the Spaniards, he seemed to have brought back with him the Courage of the King's drooping Council and flying Armies. They proposed to give him the Title of Vice-Roy, but that being too much he was constituted Lieutenant General of the King's Armies, within and without the Kingdom: And he went into *Compeigne* to draw the Forces together.

Th

There were two good Edicts made this Year, the one to retrench the Abuses of Claudestine Marriages, and the other to secure the Lives of poor Infants born out of Wedlock: And in the beginning of the next, the King who now wanted nothing but Money, assembled the States at *Paris* on the 6th of *January*; the same year since King *John's* time having served for little else but to increase the Subsidies: It was this time thought fit to divide them into four, they distinguishing the third Estate from the Officers of Justice, and the Treasury; they altogether granted him three millions of Gold as he demanded, and the same was raised upon Things, and by Methods the least burdensome to the Subjects. At their first Meeting they participated of the publick Joy for the happy Success of the Duke of *Guise*; for in eight days time, commencing from the first of *January*, he had taken *Calais*, and in a few days more the Town of *Guisnes* which was raised, and that of *Han*; the Governor of *Calais* had fifty Persons of note were detained Prisoners, the rest were turned out both Soldiers and Inhabitants; *Edward III.* having done the very same to the French when he won that City from them 210 Years before. The Reason of the unhappy loss of this Place was the *English* Garrison's having been drawn out to

1558.

Termes  
defeated.

whence were formed two contrary Factions in the Kingdom, as we shall hear hereafter. Whilst he was at *Luxemburg*, *Termes* took *Donskirk* and *Bergues*, but was not only forced from the Siege of *Gravelin* over the *Aa* by the Approach of Count *Egmont*, but *Lamoral* getting before him forced him to a Battle near the Sea side, where by the multitudes of his Enemies, and an horrible Shower of Cannon-ball poured upon him from on board ten *English* Ships that lay upon the Coast, his whole Army was in a manner cut off, and himself taken Prisoner.

This Check did but heighten the Glory of the Duke of *Guise*, so that soon after the Queen of Scots his Niece was married to the Dauphin, to whom the *Spaniards* granted the Crown and the rest of the Regal Ornaments, which the *English* had demed to *Philip*.

Nothing of Action passed this Summer between the Armies, tho both Kings took the Field; but by the Intervention of the Pope's Nuncio and others, *Philip* was brought to give ear to a Peace. The Confidant indeed had been set at liberty two Months before, and was most kindly received by the King, but before his enlargement had in a manner agreed upon all the Articles with the *Spaniards*: However that he might not bear the Reproach of so disadvantageous a Treaty, he got the Cardinal of *Lorain*, *Mareschal De St. Andre*, the Bishop of *Orleans*, and *Aubespine* the Secretary of State, to be joined with him. The great Objection was the Restoration of *Calais*, but Queen *Mary* dying in that Juncture, *Philip* for some time carried on the Interests of Queen *Elizabeth*; but abandoned them at last, the Commissioners for the two Crowns agreed at *Chateau* in the Country of *Cambroy* upon Articles, towards the beginning of this Year: And the same in Substance were these; That the two Kings should mutually restore all they had taken from each other for eight Years past; That *Henry* should restore to the Duke of *Savoy* all his Territories, but still with a Reservation of his Rights, till examined into by Commissioners, and by way of security keep *Turin*, *Pignerol*, *Cy vrs*, *Chival* and *Villeneuve* of *Asti*: That he quitted all the Places he held in *Tuscany* to the Duke of *Florence*, and those in *Corfica* to the

Peace between  
France  
and Spain.  
1559.

Gau

use, gave his Sister *Margaret* in Marriage to the  
 e of *Savoy* with 300000 Crowns in Gold, and his  
 ghter *Isabella* to King *Philip* with 400000: So  
 in short, *France* lost by this Peace 198 strong  
 es, for three only which were given them; and  
 : were *Ham*, *Le Carelet* and *St. Quintin*. In the  
 a time Queen *Elizabeth*, not to be wanting to her  
 would have something in lieu of *Calais*, or the  
 itself; and therefore it was agreed, that Place  
 the re-conquered Country should be either re-  
 d, or 500000 Crowns paid her, neither of which  
 nk was ever performed.

his Year the Question was decided at *Venice* Precedency  
 urning the Precedency between the *French* and *disputed*.  
*iards*; *Vargas* had been there Ambassador for  
*des V.* but being recalled upon his Resignation,  
 e however was given to the Republick, that he  
 ld quickly send him thither again, and in his ab-  
 e *Loyola* would take the Place of Ambassador for  
 Emperor; but the *French* Ambassador opposed it,  
 o he did upon the Return of *Vargas*. The business  
 canvassed off and on for almost a Year, and then  
 ed the Battel of *St. Quintin*; the *Venetians*  
 ended their doubts upon *Charles V.* being still Em-  
 e; but when that Difficulty came to be removed  
 the Substitution of *Ferdinand*, they would fain  
 out the matter off from themselves to the

much of the Interest of *France* for his own; whatever it were, the Government now changed its Maxims in two Particulars, which was not to intermeddle any more with the Affairs of *Italy*, and to renounce their Correspondence and Alliance with the *Turks*, as a thing very prejudicial to *Christendom*, and scandalous to the *French Nation*.

Reforma-  
tion car-  
ried on and  
persecuted.

In the mean time the Reformation went on a great pace in *France*, and found very considerable Favourers of it; but the King requiring the President of the Parliament and other Members to execute his Edict of *Chateau-Briand* with utmost severity against them, the matter came to be debated in that Court, where most Voices inclining to a mitigation of Punishment, the King having notice thereof, went into Parliament on the 10th of *June*, and made them debate it in his Presence, which yet did not daunt some of them from boldly delivering their Sentiments upon the principal Points of Religion, demanded a Council, and that in the mean time Executions should be suspended. The King having had the Patience to hear them to the very last Argument, ordered the President and divers others of them to be seized, being an Act whereby that August Assembly never received so shameful a Rebuke and Blenish, and appointed Commissioners to try them; but the Tragical End which intervened three Weeks after, put some stop to those violent Prosecutions.

For the Court being full of Mirth upon the Marriage of the King's Daughter, *June 27*, and Tournaments being appointed for the same, Death, as we may say, having placed himself in Ambush, amidst those Jollities gave a Blow, as fatal as unforeseen, which converted all those gawdy Dresses into mournful Weeds; for about the end of the third days Tilting the King who had broke several Lances before would needs joust again with his Beaver open against the Earl of *Montgomery*, which the other would have excused; but the King not admitting of it, the Earl having broken his Lance against his Breast-Plate, hit him also above the right Eyebrow with the Truncheon that remained in his Hand, wherewith he fell backward to the Ground, and never spake a Word more; however

K. Henry's  
Death.

## Chap. 2 The Days of Henry II.

221

He turned not away from the world, nor was he ever  
ill the rest of his life. He was not a man of  
the great heart of his time, nor of the great mind.

This Prince was raised by his mother, and his  
or rather William's, towards the virtuous and re-  
verend. But the education given to him was not  
towards his education, but towards his  
ness, an agreeable conversation, and a wonderful fa-  
cility of expressing himself both in public and pri-  
vate. He might also have been celebrated for his love  
to Learning, if the dissipation of his Court, autho-  
rized by his own example, had not perverted the soul  
and checked his generous passions and of extra-  
vagant Vices and vicious Pleasures, to which these  
Vices and Impurities were and all the Rewards in  
keeping, and to furnish that Sex with vain Delights  
and Amusements, who still reign and govern by Ex-  
perties. Most of these Vices that run great States,  
reigned in his Court, as Gaming, Impudence, Liber-  
tinage, Blasphemy, and a Curiosity, as bound as un-  
pious, to pry into the Secrets of Nature, by the  
abhorred Fictions of Magic. But yet not to forget  
to say somewhat of this King's Person; He was of  
a noble Stature, serene and good; Countenance,  
pleasant Aspect, and dextrous in all brave Exercises,  
tho his Agility and bodily Strength were not attended  
with the firmness of Mind, Ambition, Power.



the Duke of *Montmorancy*, and *Henry* who was grand Prior of the Order of *Malta*, and Governor of *Provence*.

## C H A P. III.

## The Reign of FRANCIS II.

affairs in  
the Govern-  
ment.

UPON the Decease of *Henry II.* the Factions which were formed during his Reign, began to appear; to which if you add the different Parties in Religion, and other Malecontents of the Kingdom, it prefaged no good to this Country: On the one side were the Princes of the Blood and the *Contable*, on the other the House of *Guise*: The Queen Mother sometimes sided with one, and then with the other, and the young King was exposed as a Prize to the first Occupier: As for the *Guises*, they were five Brothers, the Duke, the Cardinal of *Lorain*, Duke of *Angoulême*, the Cardinal of *Guise*, and the Marquess of *Elbeuf*; but the two first acted all. Then on the other hand, among the Princes of the Blood, were *Anthony* King of *Navarre*, *Lewis* Prince of *Conde*, the Duke of *Montpensier*, and the Prince *de la Roche-sur-yon*: *Anthony* was valiant and fearful, *Lewis* valiant, hardy, of great Courage but mean Fortune, and not supported by his King his Brother, which last to his very Death fluctuated between the Popish and Protestant Religion, his Brother espoused the latter: The *Mareschal de Andre* was wholly of the *Guise's* Party, the *Contable* proved a great Temporizer, and at length adhered to the *Guisian* Faction, being persuaded by his Wife's second Son, that the Title he bore of the first *Catholick* Baron would not allow him to fall in with those who impugned the *Catholick* Religion. *Montpensier* and *Roche-sur-yon*, tho both of the House of *Bourbon* were led by the same Motives, without respect to the proximity of Blood: Whereas the Admiral *Coligny* and his Brother *Dandelot* favoured the Reformed Religion, and the Interest of the Prince of *Conde*.

had the Honour to be allied. Now the King in with the *Guises*, and the Constable his Game near lost, he would have persuading of *Navarre* to come to Court, and assume and Authority his Birth justly entituled him the young King; but he declining, or at least *The Guis- an Party prevails.* the *Guises* were left alone to play their d they sent the Princes of *Conde* and *de la* *yon* into *Spain*, the first to carry the Collar Order to King *Philip*, and the other to get confirmed: They also banished the Dutche's *nois* from Court, after they had first despoiled the rich Jewels and other things the late bestowed upon her. Chancellor *Olivier* was gain to his Office; the Queen persuaded the discharge the Constable, because he had said, King Henry's Children were like him, but a daughter of his; and would have the Cardinal recalled.

ing of *Navarre* came too late, but being exhorted by his Friends to stand his ground, quickly found pretences to remove him, and a special Commission to carry the new Queen of the Frontiers; however he staid till the King's coronation was over, the same having been performed 2 of Sept. at *Rheims* by the Cardinal of *Lo-*  
m proceeded on his Journey, and having de-

master of the King's Household, the Duke of Guise took it, who with his Party after the Coronation carried the King to *Bar*, where he renounced to his Brother-in-law the Duke of *Lorain*, the Sovereign; he had over that Country.

Reformed  
persecuted.

Now the Reformation of Religion prevailing, the King believing that to execute his Father's Will was to extirpate such as opposed the Church of *Rome*, there was in each Parliament a particular Court erected that took cognizance of nothing else, and these then named *Chambres Ardentes*, because they in a manner burnt all that were convicted without Mercy; there was no kind of base and wicked Calumnies forebore to be used, in order to the rooting of the poor Reformed out, and the most profligate and perjured Villains were hearkened to upon this occasion: So that being persecuted in every Place, they first made use of their Pens to defend themselves, and their Arguments were chiefly such as tended to remove those from the Administration that were at the head of it; they wanted not Replies, and particularly *du Tillet*, one of the Registers in Parliament, made one that availed little.

In the mean time, the Ministers laboured in good earnest for the Execution of the Articles; about which time there were a great many military Men about the Court, that wanted either their Pay, or some Reward for their Services; and the Cardinal of *Lorain*, who then managed the Treasury, being importuned with their Importunities, and withal fearing some Conspiracy amidst the Multitude, he got an edict to be published, whereby all that followed the Court with such Suits should withdraw upon pain of Death. Now the King had been afflicted with a *French* Ague for some Months, which rendered him incapable of minding Business, besides he was naturally weak; and when he came to be cured, many Pustules appeared on his livid Face, that indicated some internal Indisposition; wherefore he was carried to *Blas* for change of Air, where some Persons were employed to get young Infants Blood to bath him in, which many believe him to have been infected with *Neurasthenia* Disease. All this while the Reformed were levelly persecuted; *Anne du Bourg*, a Person of eminent

King sick.

Quality

lity, rare Merit, and great Virtue, openly declared himself to profess a Belief contrary to that of the Church; his Example made the Parliament ear to expose him to an infamous Execution; but an accident hapned, which hastened his Ruin, for being in his Prosecution excepted against the President *St. Andre*, who yet would appear, he threaten'd God would compel him to keep away; wherefore the President, as he was going from the Palace, hapning to be assassinated, tho the Murderer could never be discovered, yet this exasperated those that were at the Helm so far, that *du Bourg* was condemned and put at *Greve*: A Multitude of others were imprisoned, put to Death, or banished. But *Robert Stuart*, a Scotch Gentleman, suspected to have murdered *St. Andre*, endured the greatest Torments of the Rack with utmost Constancy and without Confession, where he was cleared.

Now it was, that the ordinary People of their Heads set up Images in the Corners of the Streets, and if any passed by without saluting of them were severely abused for it. About the same time the Mother of the Queen of *Scots*, who governed that Kingdom for her Daughter, being very desirous to stifle the Reformation there also, they sent French under *La Brosse* to assist her in that pious

The Reformed's Designs against the Guisards.

Barbarous Executions of the Protestants.

whom he was to chase one : On the other hand the Persecution of the Protestants was an Act as bad the same still increased upon them ; inasmuch that last after divers Consultations, and weighing the notions of several of their Divines, who affirmed might take up Arms in their own defence, and way for a free Access to the King to make the monstrances ; they elected for their private or public Chief the Prince of Conde, and *Renaudie* undertook and resolved that a certain number of unmarried should be chosen in every Province, who under the Chiefs as they nominated, should go upon a Day prefixed to *Ambaise*, there present themselves to the King, and seize the Duke of *Guise* and the Cardinal of *Lorraine*, that they might be tried before the States : The Design was kept exceeding private, last *Renaudie* having vainly, upon the near approach the time, opened the whole Mystery of his Plot to an Advocate of his own Religion, named *Amboise*, he discovered the same at Court : Upon this they took all manner of Precaution for their own Safety, caused the Prince of Conde and the Admiral to go to Court, granted an Abolition of all that was against the Reformed, except the Conspirators, and at the same time the Duke got the Title of Lieutenant-General of the Kingdom confirmed to him, as well as the King should be present as absent, and his Horse Guard always to attend the King's Person : The Court went immediately to *Ambaise*, the Prince of Conde was informed how things went as he was on his Journey to Court, which yet he perfectly headstrong *Renaudie* did his Design ; some of the party were decoyed out of the Castle of *Nor*, contrary to Faith imprisoned, while *Renaudie* in small Parties marching thitherward with a design to disengage them, were most of them either taken Prisoners, and he himself was killed in the rest of *Christen-Renand* : The *Guisards* were found enough to have the Chiefs of them dispatched by *Motte*, one of their Captains, having attempted to surprize *Ambaise*, an Order was exhibited that had been in Arms either dead or alive, should be returning to their own Houses : T

ed near 1200 of them, and the Principal of them in the sight of the Queen Mother and the whole Court, not one of them confessing there was any Design against the King's Person, but only against the Protestants.

There were indeed more than Presumptions that the Duke and the Admiral were privy to the Design; never there being neither Men nor Arms found in the Duke's House, he would needs justify himself, and

the Lie to any that said he was guilty of it: but out of a most profound Dissimulation, applauded his Generosity, and told him, he was also ready to maintain his Innocency; and the Danger being now over, he wrote in the King's Name to all the Parliaments, Governors and great Cities, to give them an account of the Danger the King had escaped, and the great Service the Duke of Guise had done him; insomuch that the Parliament of Paris believing him, they gave him the Glorious Title of *the Conservator of his Country*. The Admiral was sent by the Queen to quiet the Commotions in *Normandy*: And now *L'Hospital* made Chancellor, in the room of *Olivier* lately deceased, and the same brought about by the Queen's request.

Indeed they had hitherto in *France* called those that confessed the Reformed Religion *Lutherans*, tho they

Resolutions  
of the  
Grandeess.

ble Ear to the *Hugonots*, and even to read some Writings they addrest to her for their Justification. With the same prospect, or to dive into the Designs and Interests of the *Grandeess*, she summoned them all to *Fontainebleau* upon the 20th of *August*, under pretence of taking their Advice upon the present State of Affairs, according to the ancient usage of the Kingdom. The Constable, Admiral and *Dauidalot* went thither with a Train of 8 or 900 Gentlemen; the King and Queen on the first day of the Assembly briefly declared the occasion of their being called together, and that was to remedy the Differences about Religion. The Chancellor opened the matter more largely, at which the Admiral prostrating himself before the King, presented him with divers Petitions from *Nismes*, imploring him to put a stop to the Persecution of the Reformed, and allow them the free Exercise of their Religion: Hereupon the Bishop of *Valence* spake very freely concerning the Abuses and Vices of the Clergy, and the Severity used towards the Protestants, which suffered, and thought the best way would be to refer the Decision of those Controversies to a National Council: He was seconded by the Arch-Bishop of *Vienne*; they were opposed by the Cardinal of *Lorraine* and the Duke of *Guise*. At last the Result of it was an Edict of the 24th of *Aug.* to summon the Synods to meet at *Melun*, *Decemb.* 10. and to require the Bishops to attend the King on the 10th of *Jan.* to consult of a fit Time and Place for a National Council: they were much alarmed with this at *Rome*, Pope *Pius IV.* finding other ways would not do, ordered a General Council to be convoked.

The contrivances of the two Brothers *Anthony* and *Lewis de Bourbon* (who would not appear at the Assembly of *Melun*) to make themselves the stronger, and set aside the *Guises*, having been discovered and defeated, there appeared in the mean while divers Comotions in the Provinces, which intimated the whole Body of the *Hugonots* were upon the point of making a General Rising: They preached publicly in *Nismes*; the two Brothers *Anthony* and *Paul Richemont*, endeavoured to make themselves Masters of *Valence*, *Montelimard*, *Romans* in *Dauphine*, and

and *Arles*, but they were prevented by *Maugeron*; *Montbrun* also was routed in *Dauphine*, from whence fled to *Switzerland*, neither did *Maligny* succeed in his Project of seizing *Lyons*. The Princes all while promised unto themselves a much stronger Party in the States than the *Guises*, and prepared to sit either well guarded and armed; but the *Guises* commanding all in the King's Name, besides other Intensions, ordered them to come to Court, attended by with their own Domesticks, to justify themselves in such matters as should be laid to their Charge: They boded but ill, however they resolved to go; the Cardinal of *Bourbon* their Brother being first deceived, was an Instrument to deceive them; so that the King of *Navarre* relying upon the Dignity of their Person as an inviolable Safeguard, refused 700 Gentlemen of *Poitou*, who offered to attend him, and above 200 Soldiers in several Provinces that were ready for that purpose, as he did also the wise Counsel of the Archbishop of *Vienne*, who after he had done all he could to dissuade him from it, died of Grief, and of the Sorrows he had justly conceived, lest the *Guises*, whom he had already highly offended, should revenge themselves upon him.

The King with the Queen Mother, the Princes of *Montbeller* and *de la Roche-sur-von*. and the *Guises*. on



restore the Discipline of the Church, but came to no Result of any Importance. Some days after came about a dozen of the most famous Reformed Ministers, among whom were *Theodore Beza*, *Marlorat*, *Morel*, *Peter Martyr* and *Viret*; the King and the whole Court, Princes of the Blood, Cardinals, Prelates, Council of State, and the *Grandeess* both of the one and the other Religion were present. The 4<sup>th</sup> of September was the day they opened; the Papists complained bitterly of the Learned *Beza*, for saying the Body of Christ was as far distant from the Eucharist, as the Earth is from Heaven, for which the Cardinal of *Tournon* called him a Blasphemer. At last they resolved to reduce the Dispute to two Heads; the one about the true Church, and the other about the Eucharist: In short, the *Romanists* own that *Beza* stood up stoutly for his Opinions, in opposition to the Real Presence and other Tenets of the Church of *Rome*, which they would by no means relinquish, especially that of the Bodily Presence; and *Laynes* a *Spaniard* treated the Reformed Ministers with the Epithets of Wolves, Monkeys and Serpents; so that their Spirits being at last heated and exasperated, the Conference broke up on Nov. 25. and the *Hugonots* now opened their Meetings in every Province. At the same time the Queen, in retribution of the Services done her by the Admiral, pretended at least to give him a helping hand in many Occurrences, and even sent Orders to the King's Ambassadors at *Rome*, to be instant with the Pope to have the Communion administered in both Kinds, and a Liberty to pray to God in the *French* Tongue, which by no means could be obtained: However it were, the *Triumvirate* could not endure the Credit the Admiral was in, and retired from Court, making Religion the Pretence of their Discontent. The King of *Spain*, who affected the Title of Catholick, exprest a great deal of Resentment at their favouring the *Hugonots*, and particularly against the King of *Navarre*, that he might thereby have a *Salvo Conscientia*, not to do him right concerning his Kingdom, and a Pretence to intermeddle with the Affairs of *France*.

Soon after a Priest was taken going into *Spain* with a Petition to *Philip*, in the Name of the Catholicks, together

er to make a Funeral for that King at his Charge, hereby made appear to the World his Gratitude he Favours he had received, exceeded the Fear of Resentments of *Lewis XI.* a mortal Enemy to the King and Servants of his own Father. The Count, who had been sent for several times, but advancing slow Journies, when he heard the News of the King's Death, doubled his Pace, and on the 18th of May arrived at *Orleans*, where making use of the Power belonging to his Office, he commanded the Guards that were at the Gates, and threatned them hanging, if he found them any more as it were hindring the King in that manner in a time of Peace, in the very Heart of the Kingdom. As for the Prince of *Condé*, tho' he might go where he pleased, yet he was not to leave the Prison, till he knew his Prosecutors Accusers: To which the *Guises* replied, all had done by the King's Command, but they produced Order for it. So that 13 Days after he came out, he went to *Ham* in *Picardy*, attended with Honour and Respect, by those very Men that had served as Enemies upon him during his Confinement.

---

## C H A P. IV.



1561.

irresolute and inconstant Prince to confirm what he had promised her, during the Imprisonment of her Mother, which was the Regency. The next Session of the States was on the 2d of Jan. wherein the Admiral *Bourdeaux* spake for the third Estate; the Earl of *Chastellain* for the Nobility, and *Quintin* a Canon for the Clergy: The two first laid the Liberties of the Government upon the Vices of the King, the other defended them, and reflected particularly upon the Admiral, who demanded Reparation, and before the Estates broke up; but before this, there were many private Interests carrying on, more particularly the King of *Navarre* put them upon calling the Treasurer to an account; and that the Particulars should be laid before them of all the Grants made by *Henry II.* offering himself to give up all that had been granted upon him. The Constable and *St. Andre* were more touched by this than the *Guises*, upon which the Estates closed with the former, and easily adjourned to *May*, and to the City of *Pontoise*, where at the same time there should come but two Deputies from each Government.

Conde declared innocent.

In Feb. *Conde* appearing in the Council, and asking the Chancellor whether there were any Proofs against him, he answered, No; and all the Princes present having testified, they were satisfied of his Innocency, the King commanded him to take the Oath, and an Order was made to declare him whole and sound, which was verified by the Parliament of *Paris*. It's most certain, Popery in *France* must now have had it not been for the *Guises*; but the Consequences of the Queen's Intrigues, and some particular Interests of *Conde*, being brought off from the Princes, by the Remonstrances made to him by the Cardinal, his own Wife, Son, and others, entred into a League with the Cardinal and the Duke of *Guise* his Brother, which by the *Hugonots* was then called the *Troiscent*. And then they crowned the King on the 15th of July at *Rheims*, where the Duke of *Guise* according to the Seniority of Peerage had the Precedency of the Duke of *Montpeier* a Prince of the Blood.

K. Charles crowned.

It had been agreed by the Treaty of the Peace, that the Rights of the King's Predecessors

the Territories of *Savoy* should be decided in three Years; the King *Francis* his Commissioners the last Year willing to accomplish it, the Duke at last so wrought upon the King, that he commanded *Turin*, *Cibione*, *Aiers* and *Villa Nuova d' Ast*, should be given him in exchange for *Pignerol*, *Savillan* and *Perouse*, which, notwithstanding the Remonstrances of the King's Lieutenant beyond the *Alps*, was at last executed by the Duke of *Savoy's* making some farther Concessions of Money to the King and the French Garisons.

But to leave *Savoy*, the Conduct of the Queen *Re-* First Edit  
*France* is now very remarkable, who besides in favour  
 her things put forth an Edict in favour of the Re- of the Re-  
 formed; whereby all Persons were enjoined not to mo- formed.

them, the Imprisoned were released, and the Ex-  
 called home; whereas on the other side she excited

the Constable to complain aloud of these things,  
 prejudicial to the Church of *Rome*. In the mean  
 the Constable being not willing openly to join  
 himself with the Duke of *Guise*, endeavoured a Recon-  
 ciliation between him and the Prince of *Conde*, whom

the King commanded to embrace one another, and  
 make a sincere and cordial Friendship; for which an  
 Instrument was drawn up, and signed by the two Secre-  
 taries of State. The Parliament on the other side  
 explained aloud of the Queen's Edict in favour of

the Queen to come to her and disarm; but the Representations of the Admiral *De Coligny* and others to him, concerning his Engagements to the Party, brought him back to the Army again. Now the number of Cities which the *Hugonots* had seized being too many for their Forces, they soon lost most of them again, with a great many of their Men, such as *Blow*, *Angers*, *Mans* and *Tours*: The Duke of *Anmale* recovered all the Places about *Roan*, and *Fstampes* Governor of *Bretagne* took *Valongne*, *St. Vire*, *Lo*, and *Bayeux*; and the greatest Cruelties were committed at *Vire*, because, they said, the *Hugonots* had been most cruel there.

Their Enemies prevail against the Hugonots.

Now the Prince his Party beginning to grow cool upon this matter, and many desiring leave to return home, he sent *Soubize* to *Lyons*, *Hangest-Yvay* to *Bourges*, *Rocheboucaud* to *Angoulesme*, *Dandelot* into *Germany*, and *Brinquemauts* to *England*; whereof the two last were to hasten the Supplies that had been promised him. The King's Army was increased to 25000 Foot and 5000 Horse, and were divided into two Bodies; one of them, with whom the King was in Person, commanded by the King of *Navarre* and *Guise*, went to besiege *Bourges*, the other under *St. Andre* invested *Poitiers*, both which were reduced. Upon this most of the Officers were for besieging *Orleans* and the Prince therein, whereby they might have cut off the the greatest Head of the Faction: But the Queen and Duke of *Guise* were for attacking *Roan*, where the Army arrived September 20, just in the nick to hinder the Progress the *Hugonots* might have made with the help of the *English*, who had confederated to assist them with 6000 Men, and Queen *Elizabeth* to have *Havre de Grace* put into her Hands, and not long after executed. The Fort of *St. Catherine* was taken by Storm, and even *Roan* it self after an obstinate Resistance was taken by Assault, and given up for eight days together to the Pillage of the Soldiers: *Montgomery* and the *English* escaped in his Galley, while the *Guisian* Faction hanged up divers considerable Persons in the City: But the Prince by way of Reprisal caused the Heads of divers Papists that were in his Hands, to be chopped off; yet at length both Parties began to come to a Temper, and to make good the

together with certain very dangerous Instructions; the Parliament durst not, because of the Quality of the Persons involved in this Affair, search too deep, but thought fit only to condemn him to acknowledg his Crime in a full Assembly, bare-foot and bare-headed, with a lighted Torch in his Hand, and to be shut up between four Walls in the Convent of the *Chartreux*. Again, a Batchelor of the *Sorbon* having asserted the Pope had an absolute Power over all Kings, he was also punished for the same.

We are come now to another Year, in the first Month of which the Regent who desired to support her self by the *Hugonots*, got an Edict in their favour; containing amongst other things, Liberty for them to preach in all parts of the Kingdom, except walled Cities, and particularly *Paris*: The same was authorized by an Assembly of Notables, and verified, tho' not without much difficulty, by the Parliament of *Paris*, with this Clause, *In consideration of the present Juncture of the times, but not approving of the new Religion in any manner, and till the King should otherwise appoint,* the other Parliament also prescribed divers Modifications.

1562.  
An Edict  
in favour  
of the Hugonots.

When the *Triumvirate* had withdrawn from Court, the Admiral for a time appeared the most Potent; but at length declining in the Queen's Favour, tho' she still made use of him, and he and *Conde* observing

Things hereupon began to be in an extreme hurry and confusion; the Duke of *Guise* went to *Paris* attended with 1000 Horse, and his Enemies would have made it even Treason in him to march in by *St. Denis* Gate, thro which their Kings usually made their Entry; as also because the Magistrates went out to meet and harangue him. The Queen hereupon imagining the Duke would snatch the Government from her, had recourse to *Conde*, who was retired to his own House, and wrote divers Letters to recommend her Son to him, as also the Kingdom and her self, and that in so pressing and affectionate a manner, as gave him all cause to arm himself, tho he had not the least inclination to it.

The *Parisians* having now their Arms restored unto them, *Conde* who was the weaker Party durst not challenge the upper hand of the *Triumvirs*; but to save these things, the Cardinal of *Bourbon* his Brother so accommodated matters, that the Chiefs of both Parties should leave the City at the same time; wherefore the Prince retired to his House near *Meaux*, and *Guise* to *Fontainebleau* where the King was, and had such a Retinue as made the Queen sensible his Forces were much more numerous than the Prince's. In this State the Queen, whose Inclination was to keep a balance, sent for the Prince of *Conde*, who having passed the *Siene* at *St. Cloud*, put the *Parisians* without any just Reason in Arms: Upon which the *Confederate Guisians* let the Queen know, it was convenient the King should be carried to *Paris*, lest he should fall into the *Hugonots* Hands, which she very unwillingly complied with.

*Conde*  
seizes *Or-*  
*leans*.

Upon this the Prince of *Conde*, partly out of spite for having been deluded by a Woman, for so he took it, and partly out of Anger to see his Enemies Master of the King's Person, and many other Motives, moved with 2000 Horse to *Orleans*, on one of whose Gates *Dandelot* had cunningly seized the day before, to wit the 1<sup>st</sup> of *April*, which they made as it were the Place of their Arms.

Here the Prince took an Oath of all the Party, and wrote to the *German* Princes, setting forth the cause of his taking up Arms; then sent the Queen's original

Letter.

Letters, to persuade them to assist and redeem the King from the Captivity of their Enemies: At the same time he published his Manifesto, and sent after it the Copy of the League made between the Pope, *Spain*, and the *Guises*, to exterminate all the Sectaries of the new Religion. Soon after his Party seized upon many considerable Cities in the Kingdom, and with too much Zeal and Fury abolished the Exercise of the *Romish* Religion, overturned the Altars, beat the Images in pieces, burnt the Relicks, and tormented the Monks and Priests: The Prince himself having been able by no methods, nor even those of Punishment, to put a stop to their Fury. Now tho all the Kingdom was in a Flame, the good Chancellor did all he could to remedy the Evil; the Queen also would have *Conde* come to Court, assuring him, that whatever had been done against the Protestants was much against her Will, and that with his Assistance she would endeavour to redress it: The Prince was inclined to it, when he had the News of the *Hugonots* having been massacred as they came out of the Church at *Sens*, which put him quite off. However there passed still many Messages and Proposals between the Parties; and the Prince insisted that the Edict of *January* should be observed, that there should be Justice done for such as were massacred, and that the *Triumvirate* should leave the Court: Whereas the other side pe-

*Massacre  
of Sens.*



The Queen lived now somewhat more easy than before, but all she could do could not separate the Prince from the Admiral; but his Wife hapning to die, she endeavoured to chain him to the Court with the charms of a voluptuous Life, and the tempting Beauty of one of her Maids of Honour, who in about nine Months time produced the Fruit of their Dalliances, and was a common Discourse every where, as well as the Passion of *Marschal St. Andre's* Widow for the Prince: The good Admiral did by no means like it, and therefore used such Remonstrances to him, that he got him married again to the Duke of *Langueville's* Sister.

On the other hand, Queen *Elizabeth* refusing to surrender *Havre de Grace*, *Brissac* formed the Siege of it, whither the Constable and his Son went in about fifteen days; the *Hugonots* were more forward than the Catholics to recover it from their own Friends the *English*, who would keep it as a Recompence for *Calais*: The Noble *Ambrose* Earl of *Warwick* was Governor of the Place, wherein there was a Garison of about 4000 men; the Attacks were very brave, the Resistance much nobler; but a dreadful Plague having crept within the Town, forced *Warwick* sore against his Will to capitulate; and the Surrendry of the Place was so much the more mortifying to him, because next day there appeared a Reinforcement of 1800 men within sight of the Port, and a few days after a great Fleet under Admiral *Clinton*: The *English* hereupon did vast mischief by Sea to the *French* Merchants, but at last agreed to a Peace in 1564. whereby it was stipulated, that either of them should preserve their Rights and Pretensions, which respected the City of *Calais*, to which the *English* had a just Claim.

In the mean time, King *Charles* being entred into the 14th Year of his Age, was carried to *Roan*, and declared Major there; tho the same Edict was not registred in the Parliament of *Paris*, without much difficulty: But the King severely answering the Remonstrances of their Deputies, and saying, they should lay aside that obsolete and vulgar Error; that they were the Tutors or Guardians of their Kings, Defen-

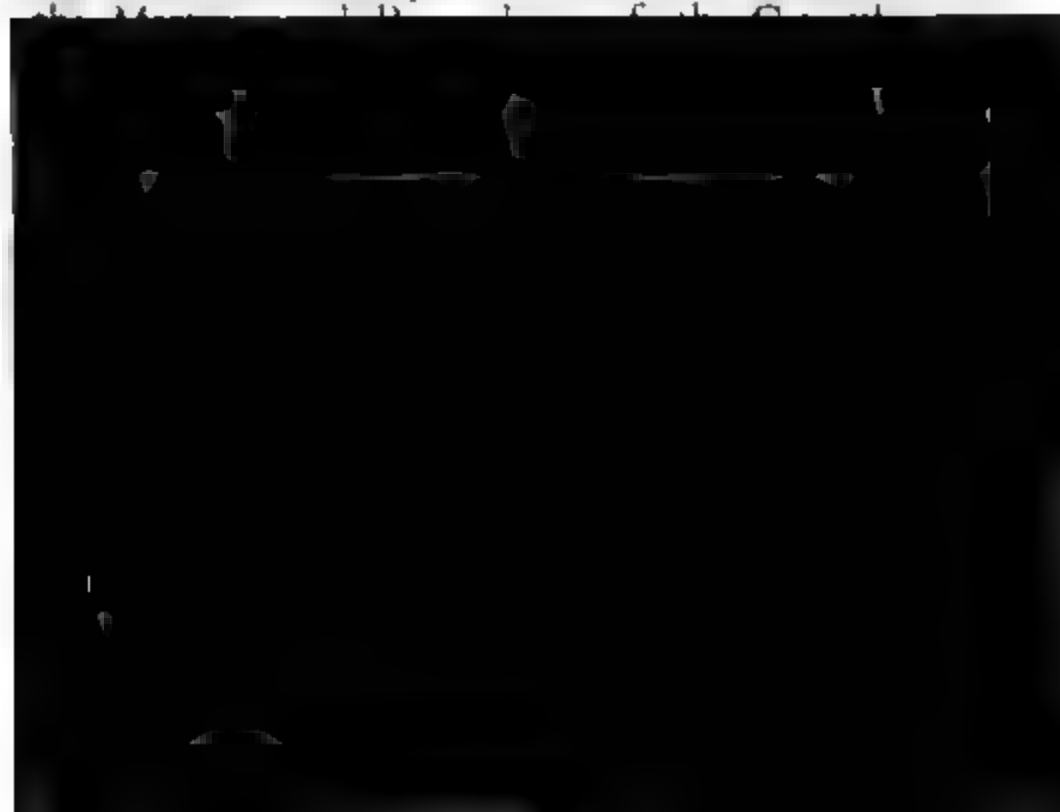
English  
lose Havre  
de Grace.

den

usual Rules of War and Martial Laws. The King *Javarre* was wounded at the Siege, but not mortally; being too assiduous in his Amours with *Madam de* it, it heated his Blood too much, so that being intent to be cured, and adventuring to go by Boat to it, he was seized with a trembling Fit, and after *King of* fell into a cold Sweat, the Symptoms of approach- *Navarre's* Death, which hapned at *Andelus*, November 17. *Death.* now as at all other times shewed himself irresolute ther to die a Protestant or a Papist; however before his Departure he sent to forewarn his Wife from going to Court, and to be upon her Guard.

to the Misfortune of *Roan*, 5000 Men raised for *Con-* *The Hu-*  
*under Duras* were cut in pieces by *Montluc* in *Guy-* *gonots*  
. But here to pass over many minute Actions that *decline.*  
red in most of the Provinces, we shall observe in  
gross, that *Sommerine* for the Popish Party made  
ere War in *Provence*, against the Protestants un-  
his Father the Count of *Tendes*: In *Dauphine*,  
es for the *Hugonots* opposed *De Suse* for the  
holicks, *Burgundy* escaped for a time, *Normandy*  
red much, *Joyeuse* preserved one part of *Languedoc*  
for the *Romanists*, and *Montluc* in *Guyenne* exceed-  
the bounds even of Severity it self against the *Hu-*  
*ts*, whose Party had the disadvantage almost eve-  
where, except *Languedoc*, where they held the best  
es save *Tholouse*.

shall make no Interruption in this Place concern-



Battel of  
Dreux.

Conde  
taken Pri-  
soner.

*English*, but was so closely followed by the *French*, that the Armies on the 20th of December came to a Battel near *Dreux*: The *Hugonots* at first had very considerable Advantage, but falling too soon upon the Baggage, the *Romanists* had their full Revenge on them for the Duke of *Guise* standing upon an Alecton, and observing the Enemy scattered, he detached some Parties to charge their Foot, who were separate from the Horse, upon whom he fell himself and routed them. Here the brave *Conde*, who never gave ground, was taken Prisoner by *Darville* the Constable's Son; the *German* Horse fled to a neighbouring Wood, the Admiral joined them with 400 more he had raised with whom he was resolved, if the *German* would have ventured it, to have begun the Charge at the next day. They counted 8000 dead upon the Field, and as many almost of the one side as the other, the Admiral retreated to *Orleans*, *St. Andre* had been killed in the Battel. The Duke of *Guise* showed the Prince of *Conde* all manner of Respect, they lay together with such Demonstrations of Friendship, that one would have thought they intended for the future to live lovingly like Cousin *German*s, as they were. When the main Body of the King's Army was at last defeated, some fled to *Paris*, and declared all was lost. Upon the first News whereof the Dutchess of *Guise*, who had a great Court about her, was abandoned in a Moment: But for the Queen she only said, *Woe be it then pray to God in French*; and began highly to comfort the Friends of the Prince of *Conde*: but next day when the true News came, things appeared quite with another face; the Dutchess of *Guise* was enraged, and the Queen ordered Bonfires to be made, tho' with some Reluctancy, and gave the Command of the Army (*St. Andre* was dead, who was really the General in the late Action) to the Duke of *Guise*, on whom the Army had already conferred it.

1563.  
Siege of  
Orleans.

The Admiral on the other hand having left his Brother *Dandelo* with 2000 Men in *Orleans*, marched to *Berry*, and afterwards *Normandy*, where he received the Money from *England*, and mustered his Forces. Here he was forced to leave the Siege of *Caen*, upon the News of *Guise* having invested *Orleans* on the

February; the Suburbs were quickly lost with 800 of  
Besieged, and the Bridg Tower was gained; and  
Hugonots were in very great Consternation, when  
Paltror Mere, watching a convenient opportunity  
the Duke went to meet his Wife, shot him in Guise  
Shoulder, whereof he died: Mere being after slain.  
As taken Prisoner, was put to death for it; and  
long all along taken the Admiral for his Abettor,  
other did all he could to purge himself to the  
King; but whether he were guilty or no, as 'tis sup-  
posed he was not, yet that Duke's Children took the  
bloody Revenge we read of in any History in  
World.

The Duke before he died advised the Queen to make *A Treaty*  
Peace, and indeed while he was yet living she had *about a*  
time to treat about it; first at St. Mesnin with the Prin- *Peace.*  
ce of Conde, then with the Prince and Constable  
of Orleans, to which Place they were both brought  
with a strong Guard; but not being able to agree,  
the Prince was allowed to go and confer with his  
Father at Orleans, who positively insisted he should  
maintain the Edict of January: But the Prince was  
content with a more moderate one, which restrained  
the Religion for the most part to their private Fa-  
ctory, and excluded it from Cities, granted a general  
truce, and discharged the Prince of all the Money  
that had taken belonging to the King. The Admiral

The Queen lived now somewhat more easy the fore, but all she could do could not separate Prince from the Admiral; but his Wife having died, she endeavoured to chain him to the Court the charms of a voluptuous Life, and the tempting of one of her Maids of Honour, who in nine Months time produced the Fruit of their amours, and was a common Discourse every where, as well as the Passion of Marechal St. Andre's Wife for the Prince: The good Admiral did by no means like it, and therefore used such Remonstrances, that he got him married again to the Duke of Devonshire's Sister.

On the other hand, Queen Elizabeth refusing to surrender *Havre de Grace*, *Brissac* formed the Siege of it, whither the Constable and his Son went in fifteen days; the Hugonots were more forward than the Catholics to recover it from their own hands, than the English, who would keep it as a Re-compence for *Calais*: The Noble *Ambrose* Earl of Warwick Governor of the Place, wherem there was at that time of about 4000 men; the Attacks were very frequent, the Resistance much nobler; but a dreadful Storm having crept within the Town, forced *Warwick* against his Will to capitulate; and the Surrender of the Place was so much the more mortifying to the Hugonots, because next day there appeared a Reinforcement of 1800 men within sight of the Port, and a few days after a great Fleet under Admiral *Clinton*: The English hereupon did vast mischief by Sea to the Merchants, but at last agreed to a Peace, in whereby it was stipulated, that either of them should preserve their Rights and Pretensions, which was the City of *Calais*, to which the English bore the Claim.

In the mean time, King *Charles* being now in the 14th Year of his Age, was carried to *Rouen*, declared Major there; tho the same Edict was registered in the Parliament of *Paris*, without difficulty: But the King severely answering the Remonstrances of their Deputies, and saying, they lay aside that obsolete and vulgar Error; that they were the Tutors or Guardians of their Kings,

English  
lose Havre  
de Grace.

#### 4. *The Reign of Charles IX.*

: 565

f the Kingdom, and Keepers of the City of *Paris* returned, and the Edict at last was past by

here to pass over the Complaints of the Relati-  
the late Duke of *Guise*, and Demands of Justice  
Death, as also the Tumults and Mutinies of  
ople of *Tholouse* against their Parliament, which  
specious pretence to the Cardinal of *Armagnac*  
bers to enter into a League for the defence of  
Religion against the *Hugonots*; from the sad Exam-  
iereof divers others did the same in several Provin-  
ut of which that Grand one at last was framed in  
eign of *Henry III.* We are to proceed to shew, *Edicts*  
hancellor during the Calm of Peace contrived *made.*  
Reglements for Policy and Justice: All Curates  
reed from quartering Soldiers; Plantiffs were  
d to deposit so much Money, before they were  
ted to plead; tho this Edict in time was abo-  
by non-usage, rather than repealed; by another a  
of Merchants was established. But now to close  
mual Revolution, the last Day of it was rendred  
that signal, by the Death of the Mareschal *de*  
; one of the greatest Commanders of his Age.  
w it was that the Year was ordered to com-  
: from the first of *Jan.* tho the Parliament did  
gree to it till 1567. At the same time, tho the

1564.

*The Court  
at Bayon-  
ne, and  
why.*

from one House to another, the every 1  
with the Duke of *Alva*, and the Even  
ed, it tended only to a secret Alliance b  
Kings for the extirpation of the Prote  
the *Spaniard* gained his much desired  
was to maintain an irreconcilable Divi  
and 'tis certain, that from henceforwar  
stants lost all that little Credit and Conf  
been between them. The Court at ti  
from *Bayonne*, passed by *Nerac*, where  
the Exercise of the Popish Religion,  
*Jane d' Albret* had expelled from the  
having visited diverse Places. went and

in divers Particulars, and proposed several of redressing their Grievances : Hereupon brated Edict of *Moulins* was made, and dated the 10th of *July*, which in the whole comprehended three Heads ; some whereof were to confirm the Edict of *Paris* two Years before, and that at *Rouffillon* explained it : The other to make some Regulations of Justice ; amongst others, that a Prisoner, if he made not Satisfaction within six Months, after Judgment signified to him ; that no Oaths of Witnesses should hereafter be held valid for more than 100 Livres ; that all Substitutions made contrary to the Ordonnance of *Orleans* should be restrained to the fourth Degree ; that they should be published in the next Registers Office, and registred in the next Registers Office presenting to the King ; that Donations between Parents and Children, should be insinuated within four Months in the next Registries as were nearest to the Habitations of the Parties, upon pain of Nullity.

Before the Court parted from *Moulins*, there was an Accommodation patched up between the *Guise's* and the *Coligny's*, there being no Proof against the Duke concerning the Murder of the late Duke. In the Place a Reconciliation was made between the Cardinal of *Lorraine* and the *Maréchal de Montmorency*.





War re-  
newed.

ments. At this time and the like Complaints they  
twice or thrice to the Prince of Conde and  
who dissuaded them all they could from another  
but when there was certain notice given them, the  
Prince and the Admiral were to be seized, they  
resolved they should defend themselves by Arms.  
The first thing they did was to seize Rosoy in Brie.  
The King had also a mind to surprize the Court that was  
at *Monceaux*; but the Queen having Information  
retired to *Meaux*, whither they sent a Petition  
to *Montmerancy*. The Council were divided in the  
pinions, whether the King should tarry there  
but the worst Advice prevailing, he took his  
by Night towards *Paris* surrounded by his  
Guards, who were next day attacked by the  
his Cavalry, without being able to break them :  
ever his Forces increasing every day, he seized upon  
Avenues of *Paris*; so that for eight Days together  
there passed nothing but Messages to and from  
the Constable and the Chancellor doing all they were  
to prevent a Civil War; but the *Romanists* stood  
so stiff, that the Edict of Pacification for the  
*Hugonots* was but provisional, the latter at last seized  
on the Bridges of *Poissy* and *Argentueil*, and  
many small Castles on the other side of the Seine  
that they commanded all the Roads to *Normandy*,  
*the Maine*, and *Anjou*, and stopped Provisions  
coming into the City : Infomuch that the People's  
patience and unjust Suspicions of the Constable,  
him resolve to drive them from thence, who were  
above 3000 men in all, to the King's Army that  
about 20000 strong; wherefore he attacked them  
the 10th of Nov. with great Fury; his Son the  
marshal broke in upon them, and made a great Sla-  
ughter, but the Body which the Constable commanded  
was routed, and he himself wounded in several  
places, the last of which was mortal. Night coming  
put an end to this bloody Conflict, and Dandau  
Day after arriving from *Poissy*, the *Hugonots* by  
Advice, to prevent ill Reports of their Defeat, drew  
in Battalia, and with wonderful Resolution charged  
their Enemy to the very Walls of *Paris*; from the tower  
which, when the *Turkish* Ambassador observed the

Battel be-  
tween the  
Hugonots  
and Catho-  
licks.

n return to the Charge, he said, *If his Army had but thousand Horse equal to those white Com., he would conquer all Europe.* The brave Constable died next, and 'tis said, that a *Cordelier* importuning him with tedious Exhortations, he desired he would let alone, saying, *He had not lived fourscore Years without learning to die a Quarter of an Hour.* The King, glad to be rid of him, made her young Son Duke of *Anjou* nominal General of the Army, filled not up the Office of Constable.

The fifth Day after the Battel, the *Hugonots* marched to *Montereau*, were joined by a Body of *Germans* or *John Casimir* the Elector *Palatin's* Son; and so they staid fifteen days to wait for the Troops were raising for them in several Provinces, and were declared in their Favour; *la Nove* by the favour of the Inhabitants recovered *Orleans*, and then they took *Ponts-jur-yonne*. The Admiral who had joined with the Cavalry, would attempt *Sens*, but young *Coligny* stoutly opposed him: Their Arms prevailed also at *Anguedoc*, and about *Avignon*, from whence they marched to *Orleans*, whereby they freed the *Princess of Conde*, and the Wives of the other chief Commanders, from the fears they were in of being taken by the Enemy, because they had but a few Soldiers in the Army. As for the Forces of *Auvergne*, *Tours* and

The *Lame*  
Peace.

the contrary. The more quicksighted of the Hugonots were not at all for this Peace, as foreseeing the evil Consequence of it; and therefore they called it from *Biron* who was *Lame*, the *Lame Peace*, and *Mal-affaire* from *Mesme* who was Lord of *Mal-affaire*. However the Prince protested he was necessitated to it, and in consequence thereof the Siege of *Chartres* was raised, and divers Cities were given up, but *Roche* and some others refused to obey; *Casimir* retired home with his Troops, where he found *William* Prince of *Orange*, now fled from the Rage of *Alva* in the *Netherlands*.

Sea-Ad-  
ventures.

In the time of Peace the Admiral applied himself to increase the Trade and Navigation of France; he had settled a Colony in *Florida*, which had been utterly starved, had not an *English* Vessel by chance supplied and brought them into *England*. The Admiral not knowing this, fitted out three Ships more together, but they forcing their Commander to go to *New Spain* to seek for Provisions, and there taking a rich Ship from the *Spaniards*; this gave them a pretence to fall upon the *French* and destroy them. However *Gargues* sailing sometime after from France to *Florida*, he recovered *Fort Charles* from the *Spaniards* and took two others; and all the *Spaniards* he caught, he hanged up with this Inscription, *Not as Spaniards, but as Pirates*; but upon his return into France, he was, upon the Prosecution of the *Spanish* Ambassador, like to have been hanged himself for it. *Monsieur* was less successful in his Designs of making Settlements upon the *African* Coast, wherein he was opposed by the *Portuguese*; and upon his return home, he and his men by the Complaints of the *Portugal* Ambassadors were like to suffer as *Pirates*, and therefore forced to keep out of the way.

But to return again to the great contending Power of the Kingdom, the Intention of those that made the Peace of *Chartres* was not to keep it, but to make their advantage better than they had done before, so that it could not last long. The Hugonots still retained *Sancerre*, *Vezelay*, *Montauban*, *Castres*, *Montfaucon* and *Roche*, which they fortified: They kept Correspondence with *Queen Elizabeth* and the Prince of *Germany*; and the Admiral had a particular In-  
g

ce with the Prince of *Orange*. On the other hand, *Hugonots* would not let the *Romanists* enjoy either Peace or Liberty of Conscience; in three Months above 2000 of them were killed in divers Places, Massacres, popular Tumults, and other wicked ways; nothing seemed more cruel than what the People at *Ligny in Barrois*, where a *Hugonot* upon a Holy day refused to comply with some paltry Ceremony; haled out of his House by the Mob before the Justice, and burnt upon a Pile of Wood, which fetched from his own Dwelling.

The Prince of *Conde* was then at *Noyers in Burgundy*. Designing to whither the Queen sent those Forces designed for surprise Siege of *Rochel*, to take him by Force, since they could not catch him by Craft; and at the same time endeavoured all they could to unlink the Party, with the Prince on the contrary struggled to keep together. However he sent *Teligny*, and then *de Rohan* his Sister's Mother, to intreat the Queen to maintain the Peace and the Edicts, which signified nothing; nay, they had his Mother-in-law left the Court, where *Bisshop of Orleans* was now made Chancellor, and the *Pacifick* *Hospitall* turned out, but he News that some Forces by secret Orders were sent about *Noyers* to surround him, and that if he were four or five days longer, he would have no way

from Dauphiné, marched into France: *Amalric* followed them for a time in the Rear, but having passed the *Saône* at *Vorrier*, he left them that he might wait their Passage over the *Loire*, where he was to join *Antoine* who lay at *Genay*; but *Doux-Tant* passed it near *Boissy*, and took *La Courte*; the Admiral advanced to meet him, while *Antoine* marched to *Limoges*, and placed Guards upon all the Passages of *France*; but the Furlow of *Doux-Tant* marched over the Bellieff of them. *Doux-Tant* not long after died near *Limoges*, and by his Will left the Command of his Forces to *Rad Montfeld*, who presently after joined with the Admiral. A very sharp skirmish passed between them and the Enemy, besides which there hapned nothing remarkable but the Sieges of *Nort* and *La Charrie*, neither of which could be taken by the Royalists; however *Teligny* seized *Chastelrand*.

In the mean time *Montgomery* was sent into *Beaumont*, which he recovered from the Queen of Navarre, then having drawn some Troops together in *Languedoc*, he surprized *Tarbes* in *Bigorre*, and frightened *Terris* from the Siege of *Navarrins*; upon which he besieged him in *Orreze*, and took it. On the other hand, *Montluc*, that he might not be idle, having borrowed some Forces of *Danville*, in conjunction with the Men raised by *La Vallerie*, forced the City of *Mont de Marsan*, and put all the Garrison in the Castle to the Sword again, when the Hugonots had taken *Luzignan*, *St. Maxian* and *Mireban*, the Admiral had thought of seizing *Saumur*, but he unluckily altered his Design and besieged *Poitiers*; but the Place was so gallantly defended by the young Duke of *Guise*, that the Admiral took the Pretence of *Chastelrand*'s being besieged by *Montluc*, as a fair occasion to leave it, and go and relieve the other; which when he had well effected, he endeavoured to attack the Enemies Army on the other side of the *Creuse*, but they were so well incamped that he did not think it proper to fall upon them.

Admiral  
besieges  
Poitiers  
in vain.

The Battel  
of Mon-  
contour.

Both Armies soon after decamped, and the Admiral having posted his Troops between the River *Dive* and *La Thoue*, the Duke of *Angou* incamped over against him. It's remarkable, that the Ground on which the *Romanists* were, was called *Champ Papist*.

and the other of the *Hugonots* *Champ Piedgris*. The Battel began at 8 in the Morning, and lasted two Hours, when the *Romanists* at last prevailed, and gained a compleat Victory: The *Hugonots* losing here 300 Horse, besides 4000 *German* Foot, and 5000 of their *French* Infantry, all their Cannon, and most of their Baggage; *La Noue* and *Dacier* were taken Prisoners. The other side lost but a very few Men; however the Admiral's *German* Horse under the Counts of *Nassau* and *Mansfield* retreating in excellent order, stopt the Pursuit, and got to *Parthenay*, from whence they marched next day to *Niort*.

Now the brave Admiral, tho' condemned to Death by the Parliament of *Paris*, by whom there was a great Reward set to bring him in dead or alive, bore up gallantly under his adverse Fortune; and the very same Night the Battel was lost, having held a Council with his Officers, he sent to the Princes of *Germany*, Queen of *England*, and the *Swiss*, to give them an Account of what had passed, and crave their Assistance, and then retired towards *Niort*. However the King's Affairs did not wholly proceed as they had projected; *Lusignan* was indeed surrendred upon Articles, *Parthenay* abandoned, and *Niort* also not long after; from whence the Admiral was gone to the Countries of *Aunis* and *Gascoign*: While on the other hand the Protestant Forces commanded all the Roads of *Laure*.

were more tired than they of this two Months Siege, and having lost one way or another above ten thousand Men, they renewed the Treaty, by which they were to march out with all Ensigns of Honour: there were no more remaining of this brave Guesclier than 800 Foot and 100 Horse, who were basely ordered by the Duke of Anjou's Forces: Upon the Piles who had promised in the Capitulation to bear Arms against the King in four Months put himself into Angoulême, which was all the honors had left in Poitiers and Angoulême besides.

The Admiral in the mean time did all he could recruit himself, and having received fresh Reinforcements from Germany under the Prince of Orange towards the end of November they made themselves Masters of the Passage over the Garonne by Aiguillon; but Montluc broke their Design of upon Guyenne, by breaking their Bridge at Agen, yet having made a new one, and being joined by Montgomery from Gascon and Bearn, they went upon Guienne, and incamped in the Neighbourhood of La Rochelle, and committed great Devastations by Sword. From thence they marched farther into the Guedoc, drew near the foot of the Pyrenées, were re-inforced from time to time repassed the Adour, they staid till the end of January, and then marched and laid Siege to Lamoignon, but being driven from thence, they took up both Money and Reinforcements at Nismes, marched to Aubenai, passed the Rhosne by Poussin, under the favour of a Flood by Montbrun on the opposite Shoar; then along that River, they attacked Montluc, but surprized St. Stephen in the Country. Here the Admiral after his Recovery from a dangerous Fever seized St. Rambert upon the Loire; he re-inforced with some Horse and Foot from La Rochelle they marched into Burgundy, alarmed Charles, surprized Arnauld le Duc, by a long March they spent one day for that purpose. The King's Counsellors never have believed they would have marched through many Countries, and do so much, and meet with little Interruption, and were surprized to find them

1570.

various  
travels  
of War.

ly on their March for *Paris*: Wherefore the  
*De Cossé* had Orders to draw the King's  
 together, and march to meet them; he passed  
 at *Deffise*; and being satisfied of the Prince's  
 in a tattered Condition, he thought him-  
 beating them, but a great Skirmish that hap-  
*Arnay* convinced him it was not so easily  
 therefore he let them go quietly towards

these times there were divers other Exploits  
 in other Parts, but more particularly about  
 here some of the King's Troops having be-  
 shfort, they were drove from thence by *La*  
 he was soon after forced to take shelter in  
*Galliard* took all the Forts the *Hugonots* had  
 after the Surprizal of *Marans*; and built a  
 ucon, which *La Noue* besieged, and so they  
 a Battel, wherein the latter prevailed; and  
 his Blow, took *Fontenay* upon Articles, re-  
*Oleron*, *Mantennes*, *Soubize* and *Bronage*,  
 was a Place of great Consequence; so that  
 manists in those Parts were forced to retire  
 d' *Angely*. But to stop the further Progress  
*Hugonots*, the Duke of *Montpesier's* Son was or-  
 go into those Parts, tho the News of a Peace  
 to his Expedition,

the Prince's Army still advancing towards *Paris*, Peace con-  
 er many Negotiations a Peace was agreed to cluded.



were more tired than they of this two Months Siege, and having lost one way or another above ten thousand Men, they renewed the Treaty, by which they were to march out with all Ensigns of Honour; and there were no more remaining of this brave Garrison than 800 Foot and 100 Horse, who were basely plundered by the Duke of *Angoulême's* Forces: Upon which *Piles* who had promised in the Capitulation not to bear Arms against the King in four Months time, put himself into *Angoulême*, which was all the *Hugonots* had left in *Poitou* and *Angoulême* besides *Rebel*.

The Admiral in the mean time did all he could to recruit himself, and having received fresh Re-inforcements from *Germany* under the Prince of *Orange*, towards the end of *November* they made themselves Masters of the Passage over the *Garonne* by taking of *Aiguillon*; but *Montluc* broke their Design of seizing upon *Guyenne*, by breaking their Bridg at *Aiguillon*; yet having made a new one, and being joined by *Montgomery* from *Gascogn* and *Bearn*, they went up the *Garonne*, and incamped in the Neighbourhood of *Toulouse*, and committed great Devastations by Fire and Sword. From thence they marched farther into *Languedoc*, drew near the foot of the *Pyrenees*, and being re-inforced from time to time repassed the *Aude*, where they staid till the end of *January*, and then they marched and laid Siege to *Lunel*, but being repulsed from thence, they took up both Money and Refreshments at *Nismes*, marched to *Aubenas*, passed the *Rhone* by *Ponsin*, under the favour of a Fort built by *Montbrun* on the opposite Shoar; then coasting along that River, they attacked *Montelimar* in vain, but surprized *St. Stephen* in the Country of *Forez*. Here the Admiral after his Recovery from a dangerous Fever seized *St. Rambert* upon the *Loire*; and being re-inforced with some Horse and Foot from *La Charité*, they marched into *Burgundy*, alarmed *Chalons*, and surprized *Arnay le Duc*, by a long March they made in one day for that purpose. The King's Council could never have believed they would have marched thro so many Countries, and do so much, and meet with so little Interruption, and were surprized to find them so nigh

1570.

Various  
Traverses  
of War.

Directly on their March for *Paris*: Wherefore the Marshal *De Cossé* had Orders to draw the King's arms together, and march to meet them; he passed *Saizé* at *Deffise*, and being satisfied of the Prince's being in a tattered Condition, he thought himself of beating them, but a great Skirmish that happened near *Arnay* convinced him it was not so easily; and therefore he let them go quietly towards *Barite*.

During these times there were divers other Exploits performed in other Parts, but more particularly about *Normandy*, where some of the King's Troops having been driven from *Rochfort*, they were drove from thence by *La Roche*, tho' he was soon after forced to take shelter in *Normandy*. *Galliard* took all the Forts the *Hugonots* had in *Normandy*, after the Surprizal of *Marans*; and built a Fort at *Lucon*, which *La Noue* besieged, and so they came to a Battel, wherein the latter prevailed; and following his Blow, took *Fontenay* upon Articles, recovered *Oleron*, *Mantennes*, *Soubize* and *Bronage*, the last was a Place of great Consequence; so that the *Romanists* in those Parts were forced to retire to *John d'Angely*. But to stop the further Progress of the *Hugonots*, the Duke of *Montpesier's* Son was ordered to go into those Parts, tho' the News of a Peace stopped to his Expedition,

the Prince's Army still advancing towards *Paris*. Peace con-

Judges in these Causes: To remove all manner of Suspicion, Doubt or Jealousy, they should keep as Pledges for their own security, *Rochel, Montauban, Cognac, and La Charite*, upon condition the two Princes and 20 Gentlemen with them should jointly oblige themselves, and swear to give them up in the same condition at the end of two Years. It was likewise stipulated, that they should restore to the Prince of Orange and his Brother *Lodovick* the Principality of *Orange*, and all other Lands belonging to them in *France*, together with all their Titles and Writings that had been taken from them.

There were many Reasons to induce both Parties to make this Peace; and the Queen besides other Motives might be inclined to it, that she might the better pursue her Pleasures and Gallantries, to which she was much inclined: Tho others will have her Designs herein to tend to the disarming of the *Hugonots*, that they might afterwards have been more easily ruined, which is very likely. She had had two excellent Lures to deceive the Queen of *Navarre* and the Admiral, and those were a War against the *Spaniards* in the *Netherlands*, and the Marriage of *Margaret* the King's Sister with *Henry* Prince of *Navarre*. The Duke of *Guise* had an extreme Passion for that Princess, at which the Cholerick King was so angry, that he commanded his Bastard Brother to kill him, which the Duke prevented as soon as he could by marrying *Catherine* of *Cleves*. It was high time also to get the King married, who was now in his 21<sup>st</sup> Year, the Queen first attempted to get the Queen of *Scots*, his Brother's Widow, for him; then *Elizabeth* Queen of *England*; who after near two Years Negotiation having answered, That the King was too Great and too Little, i. e. too great a King to come and live in *England*, and too young for her who was 38 Years old; she at last got him mar-

*K. Charles* married to *Elizabeth* the Daughter of the Emperor *Maximilian II.* and the Nuptials were on the 26<sup>th</sup> of *November* celebrated at *Metziers*.

The Queen Mother had an Alliance with *England* much in her Head, or at least feigned so, the better to blind the *Hugonots*, and hinder *Elizabeth* from giving them any Assistance; wherefore she made a fresh over-

1571.

of Marriage between that Princess and her second  
the Duke of *Anjou*, and the matter at last pro-  
d so far as to treat about the Terms; and there  
but one thing they could not agree upon, which  
be Duke's having liberty to exercise his own Re-  
2, at least in his Chamber, which put the Affair  
stand till the Massacre on *St. Bartholomew's* day,  
broke the Treaty quite off.

3 pass over many memorable things abroad,  
e War of *Cyprus*, the famous Battel of *Lepanto*,  
but to mention the great Frost that hapned from  
nd of *November* 1530, to the end of the *February*  
wing: We are to shew that notwithstanding the  
t of Pacification, new occasions of Quarrel arose  
7 day between the *Romanists* and the Reformed; and  
f colour of remedying the same, the King sent  
to *Rachel*, to confer with the Heads of the *Hu-*  
s, whose Deputies followed *De Crosse* to Court,  
received all seeming Satisfaction, tho at that time  
King's Council were forming a most terrible De-  
of drawing them into a Trap: Nay the King, to  
all colour of sincerity, interceded with the Duke  
roy to restore those Lands belonging to the Coun-  
of *Entremon*, which he had seized, because she  
married the Admiral contrary to his Commands,  
any Favours indeed startled the Admiral, so that  
at *Cat* *Lepanto* *the* *King* *to* *the*

Clergy tremble, and the People to cry out, The King was in the high Road to *Hugonotism*; and the *Guises* themselves, tho they had a Hand in the Design, apprehended lest the King should turn all this Dissimulation into a Storm, that might at last fall on their Heads, whom he did not much affect. There was now none but the Duke of *Anjou* whom the *Hugonots* were afraid of; and to remove all Jealousies, the Queen Mother began her Practises, to obtain the Crown of *Poland* for him, tho King *Sigismund* was not yet dead. This contented them all, insomuch that the Queen of *Navarre* herself went to Court to make up the Match for her Son: Pope *Pius* to prevent it put the King of *Portugal* upon demanding that Princess in Marriage: King *Charles* answered, *He was engaged elsewhere*; then excusing himself to the Pope's Legate with many fine Words added, *O that I might be permitted to explain my self further!*

1572.

Strange were the Amusements made use of in respect to the War in the *Low-Countries*, and other matters, the better to cover the damnable Conspiracy that was a hatching: The Prince of *Navarre's* Marriage was agreed to be at *Paris*, for which Pope *Gregory XIII.* now in the Chair, easily granted a Dispensation: However the assigned Day was put off under some Pretences, and the Admiral seemed unwilling to expose himself in *Paris*; but to try the last bait, Count *Lodowick* had a good Sum of Money given him, and *La Nove* and *Genlis*, two Officers in great Credit with the Admiral, were joined to him, that they might try to secure some Places in the *Netherlands*. In short *Lodowick* surprized *Mons, La Nove Valenciennes*, whilst many other Places in *Holland* and *Zealand* stood up for the Prince of *Orange*; so that the Admiral now believing the War, which he so much desired, certain, he went to *Paris*, and his Example drew all the other Lords of that Party to Court, the Princes of *Navarre* and *Conde* were highly caressed. The *Rochellers* did all they could to perswade the Admiral to withdraw, which by no means he could be brought to: But the *Mareschal Montmorancy* more clear-sighted than he, feigning himself out of order with his Voyage from *England*, got leave to retire to *Chantilly*. The King

*Tavarre* was married on the 18th of *August*: But  
 at all the Feasts and Rejoicings upon this occasion, *Consulter*  
 Heads were at work how to execute their bloody about the  
 àcre: The Persons concerned were the King, *Massacre.*  
 his Mother, Duke of *Anjou*, *Rais* and *Briague*.  
 thought the first Resolution was taken at the In-  
 ne of the Duke of *Guise* at *Blois*, in that very Cham-  
 where he himself was massacred: And that  
 difficulties afterwards arising, another Coun-  
 was held at *St. Cloud*, where the Duke of *Anjou*  
 died, and was afterwards murdered himself in the  
 place, and as some affirm upon the very same

That different ends soever the Queen Mother, and  
 King had in this barbarous Design, *Morevel* who  
 had assassinated the Lord of *Mont* was employ'd  
 to take away with the brave Admiral; and therefore  
 he 22d of *August*, as he was going home from the *Admiral*  
 were on foot, and walking slowly, because he was assassina-  
 ted.  
 ing some Papers, he shot him with a Blunderbus,  
 with one of his Right Hand Fingers, and wounded  
 grievously in the Arm. The King was then play-  
 ing Tennis with the Duke of *Guise*, which he left  
 in a great Rage when he heard of the Adventure.  
 Admiral shewed no great Concern at it, no body  
 to Arms; only the King of *Nature* and the

Paris  
Massacre.

still horrid enough: It's computed t  
5000 Persons of all sorts perished,  
them by more, as I may say, than one  
Age nor Sex, nor even Women with  
ed: 7 or 800 Persons thrust themselves  
as thinking to be protected under the V  
but they were quickly haled out fro  
the Vallv of Misery, and had their  
out with a Pole-Ax. A Butcher boasted  
self on the Tuesday, that he had dispat  
the Night before; and another shewin  
he had killed 400 for his share. A  
nent Persons perished b: these Barbar  
'tis strangely remarkable, that of  
Men there was none died with his Sw  
but *Guaracha*: and of 6 or 700 *Houffes*

into *Normandy*. Those that were lodged in the  
it self were not spared, but being hunted out of  
Chambers, their Throats were cut one after ano-  
and their Bodies exposed naked at the Gate; and  
Queen Mother being at a Window, feasted her  
Eyes with that horrible Spectacle; nay, divers  
the *Romists* themselves were sacrificed upon this  
sion, either for their Money, or for some Revenge  
ther.

When the Admiral was slain, they threw his Body *King's De-*  
the Court, and the Duke of *Guise* wiped the *meanor af-*  
off his Face to know if it were he; after which *ter the*  
Head was cut off, and his Body hung up by the Feet *Massacre.*  
the Common Gallows. But to say no more of this  
barous Massacre, the King and Queen's Cabinet  
council had at first resolved to throw the *Odium* of  
upon the *Guises*, and the King writ Letters to the  
vinces, commanding the Governors to assure the  
ple, he would not break the Edict of Pacification;  
in one of them he expressly said, *He was joined*  
*to the King of Navarre, and the Prince of Conde, to*  
*venge the Death of the Admiral his Cousin;* but find-  
this would not do, he changed his Note and sent  
ord every where, that what had been done was by  
Order, to prevent the effects of that detestable  
conspiracy the Admiral and his Friends had plotted to



the French King, the Duke of  
Lands, endeavoured to sooth Queen  
began a third time to propose a Marriage  
and the Duke of Alençon, which came

I shall but just mention in this Place  
mena that appeared in the Heavens,  
be a Star fixed to one certain Place,  
Lozenge; and that as soon as it began to  
Disease brake out in France which  
since at every tenth Year it still doth  
causing most horrible Contortions and  
every Joint, till 1606. when it began to  
called the bilious Evil or Cholick of Pe  
reigned chiefly in that Country. Where  
the King's three Armies did little: Le  
no means take Sancerre; Danville co  
nothing. but ruin his Army before S

*Cholick of  
Poison.*

*Civil Wars  
renewed.  
1672.*

blockade, and during that time sustained 25000 *Siege of*  
 shot, nine Grand Assaults, besides others, *Rochel.*  
 Mines, and frequent Conspiracies. But the  
 People in defence of their Religion and Liberty,  
 every Women did all that was gallant and  
 to save the Place; their Courage tailed them  
 to the Assistance from *England*, which *M. Argo-*  
*is* to have brought, appeared to be but very  
 and with them he could not get into the Har-  
 bour of the King's Ships that obstructed him.  
 All the Siege the People enjoyed a perfect  
 they having established a very good Order for  
 distribution of their Provisions, so that they had  
 for two Months longer, when the Place was re-  
 may, the very Sea shewing it self charitable  
 passionate towards the good Town of *Rochel*,  
 upon the Coast vast Quantities of Shell-Fish,  
 substance of the Poor. Whereas the bloody  
 lay under all manner of Inconveniences, and  
 the such Divisions amongst them, that like *Cad-*  
*Soldiers*, they were like to cut one another's  
 There were three sorts of them, viz. the  
*Ants*, who were dissatisfied with the Queen's *Divisions*  
 ment; the *Faithful*, who were *Hugonots*, who in the *Ar-*  
 the ruin of their Families, had followed *Mon-*  
 my.  
 and the *New Ones*, whom the fear of being  
 had forced to go to *Mais*: Out of these

*Sancerre*, whose Surrendry was hourly expected, the Edict of Pacification was more restrictive than former, and allowed only Liberty of Conscience, no publick Worship, except to *Roche*, *Nismes*, *Montauban*; they might have obtained the *Sancerre*, where they made such obstinate resist, and were reduced to that Extremity, that they fed upon the most unclean Creatures, but even Parents were surprized feeding upon their own Children that had been starved to Death. At length *Polish* Ambassadors artied for them, and so they delivered. The King lost at the famous Siege of 12000 men, and among them the Duke of *Alençon*. But to say no more of this Siege, the Duke of *Alençon* returning from hence to *Paris*, was there received by the King of *Poland* in a publick Entry; but it was an ill Omen, that his Heralds mistook their banner for the Arms of his new Kingdom.

The King, now impatient to be rid of his Brother, would reign alone; yet the other was as backward to be gone, not from any reasons of State, but that he had to the Princess of *Condé*, who he could not obtain his Ends. Wherefore the King attributing the King of *Poland's* Delay to the Queen, told her an Oath, That one of the two must leave the Kingdom, and one Day he caused his Closet-Door to be shut against her. At last the King would conduct his Brother to the Frontiers, but was forced to *Paris*; for a few Days after he had menaced his Brother, he was seized with a lingering but malignant fever, which made him very giddy and sick at Heart most every Moment. In the mean while the Queen, parting with her Son the King of *Poland*, impatiently let fall these Words: *Farewel, my Son, do not stay there long*; which being overheard and divulged, made People think oddly of the King's illness. King *Henry* was magnificently entertained by the Princes of *Germany* where he came; only the Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, and the gravest of his time, being desirous to make the youth and his bloody Council know the Injustice of Massacres, received him not very obligingly, but with the Satisfaction to put him into some Apprehensions of a most terrible Revenge.

The King  
sick.

There was some likelihood, that *Anjou's* Departure  
 would contribute much towards calming the Affairs of  
 the *Protestants*, but it did not prove so; for the *Protestants*  
 dragged in their Assemblies of *Milaud*, *Montau*  
 and *Nismes*, made greater Demands than before,  
 and *Alençon* and the *Polisigns* thought it was their  
 to govern all. Therefore the Duke forged with  
 himself to undertake the Lieutenantancy of the War  
 in the *Low-Countries* against the *Spaniards*, and the  
 would have been glad of it; and he also would  
 be the general Lieutenantancy as the Duke of *Arjens*  
 the *Montmerancy* would have him stick to the last,  
 thought the King to grant it him; but the Queen,  
 expected no good to herself from this Son, desir-  
 ing that Office might be conferred upon the Duke of  
*Orleans*, who had married her sonning Daughter, and  
 prevailed in it. In the mean time, *Alençon* had  
 sought a most particular Union with the *Hugonots*,  
 promised to take them under his Protection, into  
 a League were entered the King of *Navarre*, *Condé*  
 the *Politique Romanists*. *Tore* and *Turenne* ma-  
 the *Indrignes*, and they altogether demanded an  
 Assembly of the States: The Queen to amuse 'em assign-  
 ed an Assembly of Notables at *Compeign*, to deliberate  
 whether it would be convenient to call 'em; but when  
 they could not make their Party strong enough  
 they resolved to retire to *Sedan*, where they

1574

Assembly of  
 Notables

disappointed, *Mantignon*, *Montpazier*, and the Prince *Ducfin* his Son, marched each with an Army against them : *Mantignon* besieged and took *Montgomery* in *Donfrent*, which hapned four or five Days before the King's Death ; from whence he returned to the Siege of *St. Lo*, where the brave *Coulombiers* died valiantly upon the Breach with his Sword in hand, for the defence, as he himself exprest it, of the Gospel, but his two young Sons were saved. After which *Guitry* gave up *Carenton* : As to *Languevic*, *Damville*, whom the Queen-Mother was more intent to destroy than the *Hugonots*, seized upon *Montpelier*, *Lunel*, *Beaucair* and *Pezenas*.

The King's Distemper that lay asleep in the Winter, awakened in the Spring, and the Queen-Mother was never wanting to seize all that might disturb her Regency ; she cut off *la Mole* and *Catonas*, as if they intended to bewitch the King ; another was broke upon the Wheel, and *Rugier* sent to the Gallies : *Montmarancy* and *Cosse*, tho' highly accused by these upon the Rack, upon a Presumption of their own Innocency, repaired to Court, for which they were committed to the *Bastile* ; there was also an Order given to seize *Conde* at *Amiens*, but he made his Escape to *Strasbourg*, and openly abjured Popery.

On the other hand, the King after the Siege of *Rochel*, was very desirous to ease the People of their Taxes, and actually discharged some of 'em ; he would have made many other Regulations, but all signified little, he consumed by a slow Fire, and visibly wasted away every Moment ; so that he was forced on the 8th of *May* to take his Bed at *Bois de Vincennes*, when the Queen-Mother laboured to have the Regency, and so effectually managed her Business, that the Parliament and Magistrates of *Paris* sent their Deputies to intreat her to accept of it. In the mean while, Nature struggled with the King, so as that Blood issued out of every Pore and Channel of his Body ; and at last he died on the 13th of the said Month, when he had lived 25 Years, wanting 31 Days, and reigned 13 and a half within five Days. He was of a goodly Stature, only stooped a little, and carried his Head somewhat awry ; he had a piercing look, was high-nosed, pale and

K. Charles  
his Death.

His Cha-  
racter.

vid, black Hair; somewhat long-necked, round  
d, his whole Body well shaped, only his Legs  
of the biggest. He valued himself upon his Dis-  
tation, and Skill in Physiognomies : His Courage  
great, Spirit lively and clear sighted, penetrative  
tril ; his Memory ready, he had an incredible Acti-  
and a happy and energetic Expression. He had  
d the base Custom of Swearing, and to taunt  
rove the Great Ones : He was by custom made  
ve with Hunting, Musick and Poetry ; and his  
rnors endeavoured to allure him to Wine and  
ten. He made Poems that were well enough for  
times ; and he composed a Book of Hunting or  
ry, which he dictated to *Villeroy*. To pass over  
uxury, Impiety, and magical Abominations that  
ished in his Reign, Disorders, Treacheries, Poi-  
gs and Assassinations were so common, that it be-  
a sport to take away a Man's Life ; nay, this  
e himself authorized the foulest Act, I mean the  
ian Massacre, that ever was perpetrated in any  
or Country, and will remain an Eternal Mark of  
ay upon his Reign and Memory.

ie wantonness of the Female Sex was now also  
n to a great height. But to dwell no more upon  
things ; *Charles* left no Children by his Queen,  
abeth of *Austria* ; but he had a natural Son by  
y *Touchet*, born in 1572 that bore his own Name,

went with so serene a Countenance and Tranquillity of Mind, as deserved much Commendation.

This done, the Queen would willingly have destroyed the *Hugonots* in the Kingdom; but not daring to attack them towards *Poitou* or *Guyenne*, she concluded a Truce with them for *July* and *Aug.* and during that time they had leave to hold a General Assembly of the Provinces of *Guyenne*, *Dauphine* and *Languedoc*, at *Milland*, to consult of some Expedients for the treating of a General Peace. *Gramont*, who had been sent to *Boarn* to reduce it to the Popish Religion, was surprized there by the young Baron of *Arcois* in the boldest manner that can be imagined; for at the Instigation of his blind and aged Father, he entered the Castle with some resolute Fellows, and when he saw his Opportunity, fell on, and quickly dispersed the amazed Crowd, and carried *Gramont* off Prisoner. The Prince Dauphin met with but indifferent Success in *Dauphine*; and two Manifestos coming out at this time, one from *Danville*, who resolved, to defend himself against the Queen, to fall in with the *Hugonots*; and another from *Conde* at *Heidelberg*, where he was getting some Troops for their Support; they were mightily encouraged, and at *Milland* chose him for their General. On the other hand, *Montpesier* had like to have overwhelmed the *Rochellars*; for having taken, besides many other small Places, *Fontenay*, it surprized them to a high degree: But in other Provinces they made a better Defence; they surprized *Castres*, bravely defended *Clairac* and *Monflanquin*, and increased in Courage, as the Divisions of *Cosse* and *La Vallerie* did weaken the Romanists, between whom the Queen had shared the Government.

In the mean time, the King of *Poland* having set all things in order, secretly stole away in the Night between the 18th and 19th of *June*, at which the *Poles* were outrageous. He was magnificently entertained at *Vienna* by the Emperor, who advised him to let Peace enter with him into his Dominions, whereby the horrid Ideas of the Massacres that had been perpetrated, would be obliterated: He was conducted to the frontiers of *Friuli*, by the Emperor's Sons *Rodolph* and *Ernst*, he not caring to go by the way of the *Electors*

*Palace*: &c

K. Henry  
All steals  
away from  
Poland.

ine, and bear the reproaching Sights of the other  
 estant Princes. The *Venetians* entertained him  
 all the Respect and Grandeur imaginable; he  
 nine Days in their City, and was accompanied  
 ; where by the Dukes of *Savoy*, *Ferrara* and *Man-*  
 who came thither to honour him; the Senate de-  
 ed his Charge, he went to see their Method of Bal-  
 ng; he was placed above the Duke, and perfor-  
 all Acts of Sovereignty: Then he saw the Arse-  
 but the Ladies with more Pleasure, of whom  
 was so prodigal of her Favours to him, that he re-  
 ed of it as long as he lived. From hence he went  
 he way of *Ferrara* and *Mantua* to *Turin*; where  
 ad the same Advice given him by his Aunt the  
 ches *Margaret*, as the Emperor had done; and  
 ville was received into his Favour: But the Queen  
 her quickly broke his Measures, and he had been  
 d at *Turin*, had not the Dutches sent him away  
 nes to *Nice*, from whence he was carried by Sea  
*anguedoc*. However the Duke and the Dutches  
 socarels and influence the King, that he promised *Arrives in*  
 ve them up *Pignerol*, *Savigliani* and *Perugia*; after *France*.  
 ch the Duke furnished him with 4000 Foot, and  
 5 Horse to attend him to *Lyons*, for fear of the  
 onots of *Dauphine*, and accompanied him thither  
 erson.









